

# 當代 中文 課程

A Course in  
Contemporary  
Chinese

Textbook 課本

4

國立臺灣師範大學國語教學中心 策劃  
Mandarin Training Center National Taiwan Normal University

主編 / 鄧守信 編寫教師 / 丁國雲、胡睦苓、陳淑美



# 當代 中文 課程

A Course in  
Contemporary  
Chinese

Textbook 課本

4

國立臺灣師範大學國語教學中心 策劃  
Mandarin Training Center National Taiwan Normal University

主編 / 鄧守信 編寫教師 / 丁國雲、胡睦苓、陳淑美

# 序

## Foreword

臺灣師範大學國語教學中心成立於1956年，是臺灣歷史最悠久、規模最完備、教學最有成效的華語文教學機構。每年培育三千名以上的外籍學生，學生來自世界一百二十餘國，至今累計人數已達五萬餘人，在國際間享譽盛名。

本中心自1967年開始編製教材，迄今共計編寫五十餘本教材，在華語教學界具有舉足輕重之地位。而現今使用之主教材已有十五年之久，不少學生及教師認為現行教材內容需要更新，應新編配合時代需求的新教材。因此，本中心因應外在環境變遷、教學法及教學媒體的創新與進步，籌畫編寫《當代中文課程》6冊，以符合海內外華語教學的需求，並強化臺灣華語文教學教材之品牌。

為了讓理論與實務結合，並落實發揚華語文教學的精神與理念，本中心邀請了華語教學界的大師——鄧守信教授擔任主編，率領18位極富教學經驗的第一線老師進行內容編寫，並由張莉萍副研究員、張黛琪老師及教材研發組成員蔡如珮、張雯雯擔任執行編輯，進行了這項《當代中文課程》的編寫計畫。

這是本中心歷經數十年深厚教學經驗後再次開發的全新主教材，更為了確保品質，特別慎重；我們很榮幸地邀請到美國的Claudia Ross教授、白建華教授及陳雅芬教授，擔任顧問，也邀請了臺灣的葉德明教授、美國的姚道中教授及大陸的劉珣教授，擔任審查委員，並由本校英語系李櫻教授和畢永峨教授分別協助生詞和語法的翻譯。此教材在本中心及臺灣其他語言中心，進行了一年多的試用；經過顧問的悉心指導、審查委員的仔細批閱，並參考了老師及學生提出的寶貴意見，再由編寫老師做了多次修改，才將版本定稿。對於所有在編寫過程中，努力不懈的編輯團隊、給予指教的教授、配合試用的老師及學生，我們都要致上最高的謝意。

在此也特別感謝聯經出版事業股份有限公司，願意投注最大的心力，以專業的製作出版能力，協助我們將這套教材以最佳品質問世。

我們希望，《當代中文課程》不只提供學生們一套實用有效的教材，亦讓老師得到愉快充實的教學經驗。歡迎老師在使用後，給予我們更多的指教與建議，讓我們不斷進步，也才能為海內外的華語教學，做更多更好的貢獻。

國立臺灣師範大學國語教學中心主任 陳浩然

2015年6月

---

The Mandarin Training Center (MTC) at National Taiwan Normal University (NTNU) was established in 1956, and is the oldest, most comprehensive, and most pedagogically effective educational institute of its kind in Taiwan. Every year over 3,000 international students are trained at MTC, and to the present day over 50,000 students representing more than 120 countries have walked through its doors, solidifying international renown.

MTC started producing teaching material in 1967, and has since completed over 50 textbooks, making it a frontrunner in the field of teaching Chinese as a second language. As the core books have been in circulation for 15 years already, many students and teachers agree that updates are in order, and that new materials should be made to meet the modern demand. Changes in the social landscape, improved teaching methods, and innovations in educational media are what prompted the production of MTC's six-volume series, *A Course in Contemporary Chinese*. The project responds to Chinese teaching needs both at home and abroad, and bolsters Taiwan's brand of teaching material for Chinese as a second language.

With the goal of integrating theory and practice, and carrying forward the spirit of teaching Chinese as a second language, MTC petitioned one of the field's most esteemed professors, Shou-Hsin Teng, to serve as chief editor. *A Course in Contemporary Chinese* has been compiled and edited under his leadership, together with the help of 18 seasoned Chinese teachers and the following four executive editors: Associate Research Fellow Liping Chang, Tai-chi Chang, and Ru-pei Cai and Wen-wen Chang of the MTC teaching material development division.

MTC is presenting this brand new core material after half a century's worth of educational experience, and we have taken extra care to ensure it is of uncompromised quality. We were delighted to have American professors Claudia Ross, Jianhua Bai, and Yea-fen Chen act as consultants, Professor Teh-Ming Yeh from Taiwan, Professor Tao-chung Yao from the U.S., and Professor Xun Liu from China on the review committee, and professors Ying Cherry Li and Yung-O Biq of NTNU's English department help with the respective translation of vocabulary and grammar points. The material was first trialed at MTC and other language centers around Taiwan for a year. The current version underwent numerous drafts, and materialized under the careful guidance of the consultants, a sedulous reading from the review committee, and feedback from teachers and students. As for the editorial process, we owe the greatest thanks to the indefatigable editorial team, the professors and their invaluable input, and the teachers and students who were willing to trial the book.

An additional and special thanks is due to Linking Publishing Company, who put forth utmost effort and professionalism in publishing this set of teaching material, allowing us to deliver a publication of superior quality.

It is our hope that *A Course in Contemporary Chinese* is not merely a practical set of teaching materials for students, but also enriching for teachers and the entire teaching experience. We welcome comments from instructors who have put the books into practice so that we can continue improving the material. Only then can we keep furthering our contribution to the field of teaching Chinese as a second language, both in Taiwan and abroad.

**Hao Jan Chen**

Director of the Mandarin Training Center  
National Taiwan Normal University  
June, 2015

Finally, after more than two years, volume one of our six-volume project is seeing the light of day. The language used in *A Course in Contemporary Chinese* is up to date, and though there persists a deep 'generation gap' between it and my own brand of Chinese, this is as it should be. In addition to myself, our project team has consisted of 18 veteran MTC teachers and the entire staff of the MTC Section of Instructional Materials, plus the MTC Deputy Director.

The field of L2 Chinese in Taiwan seems to have adopted the world-famous 'one child policy'. The complete set of currently used textbooks was born a generation ago, and until now has been without predecessor. We are happy to fill this vacancy, and with the title 'number two', yet we also aspire to have it be number two in name alone. After a generation, we present a slightly disciplined contemporary language as observed in Taiwan, we employ Hanyu Pinyin without having to justify it cautiously and timidly, we are proud to present a brand-new system of Chinese parts of speech that will hopefully eliminate many instances of error, we have devised two kinds of exercises in our series, one basically structural and the other entirely task-based, each serving its own intended function, and finally we have included in each lesson a special aspect of Chinese culture. Moreover, all this is done in full color, the first time ever in the field of L2 Chinese in Taiwan. The settings for our current series is in Taipei, Taiwan, with events taking place near the National Taiwan Normal University. The six volumes progress from basic colloquial to semi-formal and finally to authentic conversations or narratives. The glossary in vocabulary and grammar is in basically semi-literal English, not free translation, as we wish to guide the readers/learners along the Chinese 'ways of thinking', but rest assured that no pidgin English has been used.

I am a functional, not structural, linguist, and users of our new textbooks will find our approaches and explanations more down to earth. Both teachers and learners will find that the content resonates with their own experiences and feelings. Rote learning plays but a tiny part of our learning experiences. In a functional frame, the role of the speaker often seen as prominent. This is natural, as numerous adverbs in Chinese, as they are traditionally referred to, do not in fact modify verb phrases at all. They relate to the speaker.

We, the field of Chinese as a second language, know a lot about how to teach, especially when it comes to Chinese characters. Most L2 Chinese teachers world-wide are ethnically Chinese, and teach characters just as they were taught in childhood. Truth is, we know next to nothing how adult students/learners actually learn characters, and other elements of the Chinese language. While we have nothing new in this series of textbooks that contributes to the teaching of Chinese characters, I tried to tightly integrate teaching and learning through our presentation of vocabulary items and grammatical structures. Underneath such methodologies is my personal conviction, and at times both instructors' and learners' patience is requested. I welcome communication with all users of our new textbooks, whether instructors or students/learners.

**Shou-hsin Teng**



## About the Series

### Series Introduction

This six-volume series is a comprehensive learning material that focuses on spoken language in the first three volumes and written language in the latter three volumes. Volume One aims to strengthen daily conversation and applications; Volume Two contains short essays as supplementary readings; Volume Three introduces beginning-level written language and discourse, in addition to extended dialogues. Volume Four uses discourse to solidify the learner's written language and ability in reading authentic materials; Volumes Five and Six are arranged in topics such as society, technology, economics, politics, culture, and environment to help the learner expand their language utilizations in different domains.

Each volume includes a textbook, a student workbook, and a teacher's manual. In addition, Volume One and Two include a practice book for characters.

### Level of Students

*A Course in Contemporary Chinese* 《當代中文課程》 is suitable for learners of Chinese in Taiwan, as well as for high school or college level Chinese language courses overseas. Volumes One to Six cover levels A1 to C1 in the CEFR, or Novice to Superior levels in ACTFL Guidelines.

### Overview

- The series adopts communicative language teaching and task-based learning to boost the learner's Chinese ability.
- Each lesson has learning objectives and self-evaluation to give the learner a clear record of tasks completed.
- Lessons are authentic daily situations to help the learner learn in natural contexts.
- Lexical items and syntactic structures are presented and explained in functional, not structural, perspectives.
- Syntactic, i.e. grammatical, explanation includes functions, structures, pragmatics, and drills to guide the learner to proper usage.
- Classroom activities have specific learning objectives, activities, or tasks to help fortify learning while having fun.
- The "Bits of Chinese Culture" section of the lesson has authentic photographs to give the learner a deeper look at local Taiwanese culture.
- Online access provides supplementary materials for teachers & students.

# 目次

## Contents

序	Foreword	II
主編的話	From the Editor's Desk	IV
系列規畫	About the Series	V
漢語介紹	An Introduction to the Chinese Language	VIII
各課重點	Highlights of Lessons	XVIII
詞類表	Parts of Speech in Chinese	XXIV
課堂用語	Classroom Phrases	XXV
人物介紹	Introduction to Characters	XXVI

### 第一課

Lesson 1

十七歲還是二十五歲？	1
17 or 25-Years Old?	

### 第二課

Lesson 2

眼睛、耳朵的饗宴	25
A Feast for the Eyes and Ears	

### 第三課

Lesson 3

雲端科技	49
Cloud Technology	

### 第四課

Lesson 4

床該擺哪裡？	75
Where Should the Bed Go?	

### 第五課

Lesson 5

有夢最美	99
Pursuing Your Dreams	

### 第六課

Lesson 6

天搖地動	125
Shaking Heavens and Trembling Earth	

# Contents

<b>第七課</b> Lesson 7	大學生的事 College Student Matters	149
<b>第八課</b> Lesson 8	他們的選擇 Their Choice	173
<b>第九課</b> Lesson 9	再談台灣故事 More on the Story of Taiwan	199
<b>第十課</b> Lesson 10	應徵 Applying for a Job	225
<b>第十一課</b> Lesson 11	文化、種族的大熔爐 The Big Cultural and Ethnic Melting Pot	249
<b>第十二課</b> Lesson 12	期待美好的未來 Looking Forward to a Beautiful Future	273
<b>附錄 Appendix</b>		
	課文英譯 Texts in English	301
	生詞索引 I. Vocabulary Index (Chinese-English)	318
	生詞索引 II. Vocabulary Index (English-Chinese)	332



China is a multi-ethnic society, and when people in general study Chinese, ‘Chinese’ usually refers to the Beijing variety of the language as spoken by the Han people in China, also known as Mandarin Chinese or simply Mandarin. It is the official language of China, known mostly domestically as the Putonghua, the lingua franca, or Hanyu, the Han language. In Taiwan, Guoyu refers to the national/official language, and Huayu to either Mandarin Chinese as spoken by Chinese descendants residing overseas, or to Mandarin when taught to non-Chinese learners. The following pages present an outline of the features and properties of Chinese. For further details, readers are advised to consult various and rich on-line resources.

## Language Kinship

Languages in the world are grouped together on the basis of language affiliation, called language-family. Chinese, or rather Hanyu, is a member of the Sino-Tibetan family, which covers most of China today, plus parts of Southeast Asia. Therefore, Tibetan, Burmese, and Thai are genetically related to Hanyu.

Hanyu is spoken in about 75% of the present Chinese territory, by about 75% of the total Chinese population, and it covers 7 major dialects, including the better known Cantonese, Hokkienese, Hakka and Shanghainese.

Historically, Chinese has interacted highly actively with neighboring but unaffiliated languages, such as Japanese, Korean and Vietnamese. The interactions took place in such areas as vocabulary items, phonological structures, a few grammatical features and most importantly the writing script.

## Typological Features of Chinese

Languages in the world are also grouped together on the basis of language characteristics, called language typology. Chinese has the following typological traits, which highlight the dissimilarities between Chinese and English.

**A. Chinese is a non-tense language.** Tense is a grammatical device such that the verb changes according to the time of the event in relation to the time of utterance. Thus ‘He talks nonsense’ refers to his habit, while ‘He talked nonsense’ refers to a time in the past when he behaved that way, but he does not necessarily do that all the time. ‘Talked’ then is a verb in the past tense. Chinese does not operate with this device but marks the time of events with time expressions such as ‘today’ or ‘tomorrow’ in the sentence. The verb remains the same regardless of time of happening. This type of language is labeled as an atensal language, while English and most European languages are tensal languages. Knowing this particular trait can help European learners of Chinese avoid mistakes to do with verbs in Chinese. Thus, in responding to ‘What did you do in China last year?’ Chinese is ‘I teach English (last year)’; and to ‘What are you doing now in Japan?’ Chinese is again ‘I teach English (now)’.

**B. Nouns in Chinese are not directly countable.** Nouns in English are either countable, e.g., 2 candies, or non-countable, e.g., \*2 salts, while all nouns in Chinese are non-countable. When they are to be counted, a

measure, or called classifier, must be used between a noun and a number, e.g., 2-piece-candy. Thus, Chinese is a classifier language. Only non-countable nouns in English are used with measures, e.g., a drop of water.

Therefore it is imperative to learn nouns in Chinese together with their associated measures/classifiers. There are only about 30 high-frequency measures/classifiers in Chinese to be mastered at the initial stage of learning.

**C. Chinese is a Topic-Prominent language.** Sentences in Chinese quite often begin with somebody or something that is being talked about, rather than the subject of the verb in the sentence. This item is called a topic in linguistics. Most Asian languages employ topic, while most European languages employ subject. The following bad English sentences, sequenced below per frequency of usage, illustrate the topic structures in Chinese.

\*Senator Kennedy, people in Europe also respected.

\*Seafood, Taiwanese people love lobsters best.

\*President Obama, he attended Harvard University.

Because of this feature, Chinese people tend to speak 'broken' English, whereas English speakers tend to sound 'complete', if bland and alien, when they talk in Chinese. Through practice and through keen observations of what motivates the use of a topic in Chinese, this feature of Chinese can be acquired eventually.

**D. Chinese tends to drop things in the sentence.** The 'broken' tendencies mentioned above also include not using nouns in a sentence where English counterparts are 'complete'. This tendency is called dropping, as illustrated below through bad English sentences.

Are you coming tomorrow? ----- \*Come!

What did you buy? ----- \*Buy some jeans.

\*This bicycle, who rides? ----- \*My old professor rides.

The 1st example drops everything except the verb, the 2nd drops the subject, and the 3rd drops the object. Dropping happens when what is dropped is easily recoverable or identifiable from the contexts or circumstances. Not doing this, Europeans are often commented upon that their sentences in Chinese are too often inundated with unwanted pronouns!!

## Phonological Characteristics of Chinese

Phonology refers to the system of sound, the pronunciation, of a language. To untrained ears, Chinese language sounds unfamiliar, sort of alien in a way. This is due to the fact that Chinese sound system contains some elements that are not part of the sound systems of European languages, though commonly found on the Asian continent. These features will be explained below.

On the whole, the Chinese sound system is not really very complicated. It has 7 vowels, 5 of which are found in English (i, e, a, o, u), plus 2 which are not (-e, ü); and it has 21 consonants, 15 of which are quite common, plus 6 which are less common (zh, ch, sh, r, z, c). And Chinese has a fairly simple syllable shape, i.e., consonant + vowel plus possible nasals (n or ng). What is most striking to English speakers is that every syllable in Chinese has a ‘tone’, as will be detailed directly below. But, a word on the sound representation, the pinyin system, first.

**A. Hanyu Pinyin.** Hanyu Pinyin is a variety of Romanization systems that attempt to represent the sound of Chinese through the use of Roman letters (abc...). Since the end of the 19th century, there have been about half a dozen Chinese Romanization systems, including the Wade-Giles, Guoyu Luomazi, Yale, Hanyu Pinyin, Lin Yutang, and Zhuyin Fuhao Di’ershi, not to mention the German system, the French system etc. Thanks to the consensus of media worldwide, and through the support of the UN, Hanyu Pinyin has become the standard worldwide. Taiwan is probably the only place in the world that does not support nor employ Hanyu Pinyin. Instead, it uses non-Roman symbols to represent the sound, called Zhuyin Fuhao, alias BoPoMoFo (cf. the symbols employed in this volume). Officially, that is. Hanyu Pinyin represents the Chinese sound as follows.

b, p, m, f    d, t, n, l    g, k, h    j, q, x    zh, ch, sh, r    z, c, s  
a, o, -e, e    ai, ei, ao, ou    an, en, ang, eng    er (-r), i, u, ü

**B. Chinese is a tonal language.** A tone refers to the voice pitch contour. Pitch contours are used in many languages, including English, but for different functions in different languages. English uses them to indicate the speaker’s viewpoints, e.g., ‘well’ in different contours may indicate impatience, surprise, doubt etc. Chinese, on the other hand, uses contours to refer to different meanings, words. Pitch contours with different linguistic functions are not transferable from one language to another. Therefore, it would be futile trying to learn Chinese tones by looking for or identifying their contour counterparts in English.

Mandarin Chinese has 4 distinct tones, the fewest among all Han dialects, i.e., level, rising, dipping and falling, marked — /∨\, and it has only one tone-change rule, i.e., ∨∨ → /∨, though the conditions for this change are fairly complicated. In addition to the four tones, Mandarin also has one neutral(ized) tone, i.e., •, pronounced short/unstressed, which is derived, historically if not synchronically, from the 4 tones; hence the term neutralized. Again, the conditions and environments for the neutralization are highly complex and cannot be explored in this space.

**C. Syllable final -r effect (vowel retroflexivisation).** The northern variety of Hanyu, esp. in Beijing, is known for its richness in the -r effect at the end of a syllable. For example, ‘flower’ is ‘huā’ in southern China but ‘huār’ in Beijing. Given the prominence of the city Beijing, this sound feature tends to be defined as standard nationwide; but that -r effect is rarely attempted in the south. There do not seem to be rigorous rules governing what can and what cannot take the -r effect. It is thus advised that learners of Chinese resort to rote learning in this case, as probably even native speakers of northern Chinese do.

**D. Syllables in Chinese do not ‘connect’.** ‘Connect’ here refers to the merging of the tail of a syllable with the head of a subsequent syllable, e.g., English pronounces ‘at’ + ‘all’ as ‘at+tall’, ‘did’ + ‘you’ as ‘did+dyou’ and ‘that’ + ‘is’ as ‘that+th’is’. On the other hand, syllables in Chinese are isolated from each other and do not connect in this way. Fortunately, this is not a serious problem for English language learners, as the syllable structures in Chinese are rather limited, and there are not many candidates for this merging. We noted above that Chinese syllables take the form of CV plus possible ‘n’ and ‘ng’. CV does not give rise to connecting, not even

in English; so be extra cautious when a syllable ends with ‘n’ or ‘g’ and a subsequent syllable begins with a V, e.g., MǐnÀo ‘Fujian Province and Macao’. Nobody would understand ‘min+nao’!!

**E. Retroflexive consonants.** ‘Retroflexive’ refers to consonants that are pronounced with the tip of the tongue curled up (-flexive) backwards (retro-). There are altogether 4 such consonants, i.e., zh, ch, sh, and r. The pronunciation of these consonants reveals the geographical origin of native Chinese speakers. Southerners do not have them, merging them with z, c, and s, as is commonly observed in Taiwan. Curling up of the tongue comes in various degrees. Local Beijing dialect is well known for its prominent curling. Imagine curling up the tongue at the beginning of a syllable and curling it up again for the -r effect!! Try ‘zhèr-over here’, ‘zhuōr-table’ and ‘shuǐr-water’.

## On Chinese Grammar

‘Grammar’ refers to the ways and rules of how words are organized into a string that is a sentence in a language. Given the fact that all languages have sentences, and at the same time non-sentences, all languages including Chinese have grammar. In this section, the most salient and important features and issues of Chinese grammar will be presented, but a summary of basic structures, as referenced against English, is given first.

### A. Similarities in Chinese and English.

	English	Chinese
SVO	They sell coffee.	Tāmen mài kāfēi.
AuxV+Verb	You may sit down!	Nǐ kěyǐ zuòxià o!
Adj+Noun	sour grapes	suān pútáo
Prep+its Noun	at home	zài jiā
Num+Meas+Noun	a piece of cake	yí kuài dàngāo
Demons+Noun	those students	nàxiē xuéshēng

### B. Dissimilar structures.

	English	Chinese
RelClause: Noun	the book that you bought	nǐ mǎi de shū
VPhrase: PrepPhrase	to eat at home	zài jiā chīfàn
Verb: Adverbial	Eat slowly!	Mànmǎr chī!

Set: Subset	6th Sept, 1967	1967 nián 9 yuè 6 hào
	Taipei, Taiwan	Táiwān Táiběi
	3 of my friends...	wǒ de péngyǒu, yǒu sān ge...

**C. Modifier precedes modified (MPM).** This is one of the most important grammatical principles in Chinese. We see it operating actively in the charts given above, so that adjectives come before nouns they modify, relative clauses also come before the nouns they modify, possessives come before nouns (tāde diànnǎo ‘his computer’), auxiliary verbs come before verbs, adverbial phrases before verbs, prepositional phrases come before verbs etc. This principle operates almost without exceptions in Chinese, while in English modifiers sometimes precede and some other times follow the modified.

**D. Principle of Temporal Sequence (PTS).** Components of a sentence in Chinese are lined up in accordance with the sequence of time. This principle operates especially when there is a series of verbs contained within a sentence, or when there is a sentential conjunction. First compare the sequence of ‘units’ of an event in English and that in its Chinese counterpart.

Event: David /went to New York/ by train /from Boston/ to see his sister.

English: 1            2            3            4            5

Chinese: 1            4            2            3            5

Now in real life, David got on a train, the train departed from Boston, it arrived in New York, and finally he visited his sister. This sequence of units is ‘natural’ time, and the Chinese sentence ‘Dàwèi zuò huǒchē cóng Bōshìdùn dào Nǚyuē qù kàn tā de jiějie’ follows it, but not English. In other words, Chinese complies strictly with PTS.

When sentences are conjoined, English has various possibilities in organizing the conjunction. First, the scenario. H1N1 hits China badly (event-1), and as a result, many schools were closed (event-2). Now, English has the following possible ways of conjoining to express this, e.g.,

Many schools were closed, because/since H1N1 hit China badly. (E2+E1)

H1N1 hit China badly, so many schools were closed. (E1+E2)

As H1N1 hit China badly, many schools were closed. (E1+E2)

Whereas the only way of expressing the same in Chinese is E1+E2 when both conjunctions are used (yīnwèi... suǒyǐ...), i.e.,

Zhōngguó yīnwèi H1N1 gǎnrǎn yánzhòng (E1), suǒyǐ xǔduō xuéxiào zhànshí guānbì (E2).

PTS then helps explain why ‘cause’ is always placed before ‘consequence’ in Chinese.

PTS is also seen operating in the so-called verb-complement constructions in Chinese, e.g., shā-sǐ ‘kill+dead’, chī-bǎo ‘eat+full’, dǎ-kū ‘hit+cry’ etc. The verb represents an action that must have happened first before its consequence.

There is an interesting group of adjectives in Chinese, namely ‘zǎo-early’, ‘wǎn-late’, ‘kuài-fast’, ‘màn-slow’, ‘duō-plenty’, and ‘shǎo-few’, which can be placed either before (as adverbials) or after (as complements) of their associated verbs, e.g.,

Nǐ míngtiān zǎo diǎr lái! (Come earlier tomorrow!)

Wǒ lái zǎo le. Jìnbùqù. (I arrived too early. I could not get in.)

When ‘zǎo’ is placed before the verb ‘lái’, the time of arrival is intended, planned, but when it is placed after, the time of arrival is not pre-planned, maybe accidental. The difference complies with PTS. The same difference holds in the case of the other adjectives in the group, e.g.,

Qǐng nǐ duō mǎi liǎngge! (Please get two extra!)

Wǒ mǎiduō le. Zāotà le! (I bought two too many. Going to be wasted!)

‘Duō’ in the first sentence is going to be pre-planned, a pre-event state, while in the second, it’s a post-event report. Pre-event and post-event states then are naturally taken care of by PTS. Our last set in the group is more complicated. ‘Kuài’ and ‘màn’ can refer to amount of time in addition to manner of action, as illustrated below.

Nǐ kuài diǎr zǒu; yào chí dào le! (Hurry up and go! You’ll be late (e.g., for work)!)

Qǐng nǐ zǒu kuài yìdiǎr! (Please walk faster!)

‘Kuài’ in the first can be glossed as ‘quick, hurry up’ (in as little time as possible after the utterance), while that in the second refers to manner of walking. Similarly, ‘màn yìdiǎr zǒu-don’t leave yet’ and ‘zǒu màn yìdiǎr-walk more slowly’.

We have seen in this section the very important role in Chinese grammar played by variations in word-order. European languages exhibit rich resources in changing the forms of verbs, adjectives and nouns, and Chinese, like other Asian languages, takes great advantage of word-order.

**E. Where to find subjects in existential sentences.** Existential sentences refer to sentences in which the verbs express appearing (e.g., coming), disappearing (e.g., going) and presence (e.g., written (on the wall)). The existential verbs are all intransitive, and thus they are all associated with a subject, without any objects naturally. This type of sentences deserves a mention in this introduction, as they exhibit a unique structure in Chinese. When their subjects are in definite reference (something that can be referred to, e.g., pronouns and nouns with definite article in English) the subject appears at the front of the sentence, i.e., before the existential verb, but when their subjects are in indefinite reference (nothing in particular), the subject appears after the verb. Compare the following pair of sentences in Chinese against their counterparts in English.

Kèrén dōu lái le. Chīfàn ba! (All the guests we invited have arrived. Let’s serve the dinner.)

Duìbùqǐ! Láiwǎn le. Jiǎlǐ lái le yí ge kèrén. (Sorry for being late! I had an (unexpected) guest.)

More examples of post-verbal subjects are given below.

Zhè cì táifēng sǐ le bù shǎo rén. (Quite a few people died during the typhoon this time.)

Zuótiān wǎnshàng xià le duōjiǔ de yǔ? (How long did it rain last night?)

Zuótiān wǎnshàng pǎo le jǐ ge fàn rén? (How many inmates got away last night?)

Chēzi lǐ zuòle duōshǎo rén a? (How many people were in the car?)

Exactly when to place the existential subject after the verb will remain a challenge for learners of Chinese for quite a significant period of time. Again, observe and deduce!! Memorising sentence by sentence would not help!!

The existential subjects presented above are simple enough, e.g., people, a guest, rain and inmates. But when the subject is complex, further complications emerge!! A portion of the complex subject stays in front of the verb, and the remaining goes to the back of the verb, e.g.,

Míngtiān nǐmen qù jǐge rén? (How many of you will be going tomorrow?)

Wǒ zuìjìn diào le bù shǎo tóufǎ. (I lost=fell quite a lot of hair recently.)

Qùnián dìzhèn, tā sǐ le sān ge gēge. (He lost=died 3 brothers during the earthquake last year.)

In linguistics, we say that existential sentences in Chinese have a lot of semantic and information structures involved.

**F. A tripartite system of verb classifications in Chinese.** English has a clear division between verbs and adjectives, but the boundary in Chinese is quite blurred, which quite seriously misleads English-speaking learners of Chinese. The error in \*Wǒ jīntiān shì máng. ‘I am busy today.’ is a daily observation in Chinese 101! Why is it a common mistake for beginning learners? What do our textbooks and/or teachers do about it, so that the error is discouraged, if not suppressed? Nothing, much! What has not been realized in our profession is that Chinese verb classification is more strongly semantic, rather than more strongly syntactic as in English.

Verbs in Chinese have 3 sub-classes, namely Action Verbs, State Verbs and Process Verbs. Action Verbs are time-sensitive activities (beginning and ending, frozen with a snap-shot, prolonged), are will-controlled (consent or refuse), and usually take human subjects, e.g., ‘chī-eat’, ‘mǎi-buy’ and ‘xué-learn’. State Verbs are non-time-sensitive physical or mental states, inclusive of the all-famous adjectives as a further sub-class, e.g., ‘ài-love’, ‘xīwàng-hope’ and ‘liàng-bright’. Process Verbs refer to instantaneous change from one state to another, ‘sǐ-die’, ‘pò-break, burst’ and ‘wán-finish’.

The new system of parts of speech in Chinese as adopted in this series is built on this very foundation of this tripartite verb classification. Knowing this new system will be immensely helpful in learning quite a few syntactic structures in Chinese that are nicely related to the 3 classes of verbs, as will be illustrated with negation in Chinese in the section below.

The table below presents some of the most important properties of these 3 classes of verbs, as reflected through syntactic behaviour.

	Action Verbs	State Verbs	Process Verbs
Hěn- modification	✗	✓	✗
Le- completive	✓	✗	✓
Zài- progressive	✓	✗	✗
Reduplication	✓ (tentative)	✓ (intensification)	✗
Bù- negation	✓	✓	✗
Méi- negation	✓	✗	✓

Here are more examples of 3 classes of verbs.

Action Verbs: mǎi 'buy', zuò 'sit', xué 'learn; imitate', kàn 'look'

State Verbs: xǐhuān 'like', zhīdào 'know', néng 'can', guì 'expensive'

Process Verbs: wànglè 'forget', chén 'sink', bìyè 'graduate', xǐng 'wake up'

**G. Negation.** Negation in Chinese is by means of placing a negative adverb immediately in front of a verb. (Remember that adjectives in Chinese are a type of State verbs!) When an action verb is negated with 'bu', the meaning can be either 'intend not to, refuse to' or 'not in a habit of', e.g.,

Nǐ bù mǎi piào; wǒ jiù bú ràng nǐ jìnqù! (If you don't buy a ticket, I won't let you in!)

Tā zuótiān zhěng tiān bù jiē diànhuà. (He did not want to answer the phone all day yesterday.)

Dèng lǎoshī bù hē jiǔ. (Mr. Teng does not drink.)

'Bù' has the meaning above but is independent of temporal reference. The first sentence above refers to the present moment or a minute later after the utterance, and the second to the past. A habit again is panchronic. But when an action verb is negated with 'méi(yǒu)', its time reference must be in the past, meaning 'something did not come to pass', e.g.,

Tā méi lái shàngbān. (He did not come to work.)

Tā méi dài qián lái. (He did not bring any money.)

A state verb can only be negated with 'bù', referring to the non-existence of that state, whether in the past, at present, or in the future, e.g.,

Tā bù zhīdào zhèjiàn shì. (He did not/does not know this.)

Tā bù xiǎng gēn nǐ qù. (He did not/does not want to go with you.)

Niǔyuē zuìjìn bú rè. (New York was/is/will not be hot.)

A process verb can only be negated with 'méi', referring to the non-happening of a change from one state to another, usually in the past, e.g.,

Yīfú méi pò; nǐ jiù rēng le? (You threw away perfectly good clothes?)

Niǎo hái méi sǐ; nǐ jiù fàng le ba! (The bird is still alive. Why don't you let it free?)

Tā méi bìyè yǐqián, hái děi dǎgōng. (He has to work odd jobs before graduating.)

As can be gathered from the above, negation of verbs in Chinese follows neat patterns, but this is so only after we work with the new system of verb classifications as presented in this series. Here's one more interesting fact about negation in Chinese before closing this section. When some action verbs refer to some activities that result in something stable, e.g., when you put on clothes, you want the clothes to stay on you, the negation of those verbs can be usually translated in the present tense in English, e.g.,

Tā zěnméi méi chuān yīfú? (How come he is naked?)

Wǒ jīntiān méi dài qián. (I have no money with me today.)



**H. A new system of Parts of Speech in Chinese.** In the system of parts of speech adopted in this series, there are at the highest level a total of 8 parts of speech, as given below. This system includes the following major properties. First and foremost, it is errors-driven and can address some of the most prevailing errors exhibited by learners of Chinese. This characteristic dictates the depth of sub-categories in a system of grammatical categories. Secondly, it employs the concept of ‘default’. This property greatly simplifies the over-all framework of the new system, so that it reduces the number of categories used, simplifies the labeling of categories, and takes advantage of the learners’ contribution in terms of positive transfer. And lastly, it incorporates both semantic as well as syntactic concepts, so that it bypasses the traditionally problematic category of adjectives by establishing three major semantic types of verbs, viz. action, state and process.

Adv	Adverb (dōu ‘all’, dàgài ‘probably’)
Conj	Conjunction (gēn ‘and’, kěshì ‘but’)
Det	Determiner (zhè ‘this’, nà ‘that’)
M	Measure (ge, tiáo; xià, cì)
N	Noun (wǒ ‘I’, yǒngqì ‘courage’)
Ptc	Particle (ma ‘question particle’, le ‘completive verbal particle’)
Prep	Preposition (cóng ‘from’, duìyú ‘regarding’)
V	Action Verb, transitive (mǎi ‘buy’, chī ‘eat’)
Vi	Action Verb, intransitive (kū ‘cry’, zuò ‘sit’)
Vaux	Auxiliary Verb (néng ‘can’, xiǎng ‘would like to’)
V-sep	Separable Verb (jiéhūn ‘get married’, shēngqì ‘get angry’)
Vs	State Verb, intransitive (hǎo ‘good’, guì ‘expensive’)
Vst	State Verb, transitive (xǐhuān ‘like’, zhīdào ‘know’)
Vs-attr	State Verb, attributive (zhǔyào ‘primary’, xiùzhēn ‘mini-’)
Vs-pred	State Verb, predicative (gòu ‘enough’, duō ‘plenty’)
Vp	Process Verb, intransitive (sǐ ‘die’, wán ‘finish’)
Vpt	Process Verb, transitive (pò (dòng) ‘lit. break (hole)’, liè (fèng) ‘lit. crack (a crack)’) )

**Notes:**

**Default values:** When no marking appears under a category, a default reading takes place, which has been built into the system by observing the commonest patterns of the highest frequency. A default value can be loosely understood as the most likely candidate. A default system results in using fewer symbols, which makes it easy on the eyes, reducing the amount of processing. Our default readings are as follows.

**Default transitivity.** When a verb is not marked, i.e., V, it’s an action verb. An unmarked action verb, furthermore, is transitive. A state verb is marked as Vs, but if it’s not further marked, it’s intransitive. The same holds for process verbs, i.e., Vp is by default intransitive.

**Default position of adjectives.** Typical adjectives occur as predicates, e.g., ‘This is *great!*’ Therefore, unmarked Vs are predicative, and adjectives that cannot be predicates will be marked for this feature, e.g. zhǔyào ‘primary’ is an adjective but it cannot be a predicate, i.e., \*Zhètiáo lù hěn zhǔyào. ‘\*This road is very primary.’ Therefore it is marked Vs-attr, meaning it can only be used attributively, i.e., zhǔyào dàolù ‘primary road’. On the other hand, ‘gòu’ ‘enough’ in Chinese can only be used predicatively, not attributively, e.g. ‘Shíjiān gòu’ ‘\*?Time is

enough.’, but not \*gòu shíjiān ‘enough time’. Therefore gòu is marked Vs-pred. Employing this new system of parts of speech guarantees good grammar!

**Default wordhood.** In English, words cannot be torn apart and be used separately, e.g. \*mis- not –understand. Likewise in Chinese, e.g. \*xǐbùhuān ‘do not like’. However, there is a large group of words in Chinese that are exceptions to this probably universal rule and can be separated. They are called ‘separable words’, marked -sep in our new system of parts of speech. For example, shēngqì ‘angry’ is a word, but it is fine to say *shēng tā qì* ‘angry at him’. Jiéhūn ‘get married’ is a word but it’s fine to say *jiéguòhūn* ‘been married before’ or *jiéguò sān cì hūn* ‘been married 3 times before’. There are at least a couple of hundred separable words in modern Chinese. Even native speakers have to learn that certain words can be separated. Thus, memorizing them is the only way to deal with them by learners, and our new system of parts of speech helps them along nicely. Go over the vocabulary lists in this series and look for the marking –sep.

Now, what motivates this severing of words? Ask Chinese gods, not your teachers! We only know a little about the syntactic circumstances under which they get separated. First and foremost, separable words are in most cases intransitive verbs, whether action, state or process. When these verbs are further associated with targets (nouns, conceptual objects), frequency (number of times), duration (for how long), occurrence (done, done away with) etc., separation takes place and these associated elements are inserted in between. More examples are given below.

Wǒ jǐnnián yǐjīng kǎoguò 20 cì shì le!! (I’ve taken 20 exams to date this year!)

Wǒ dào guò qiàn le; tā hái shēngqì! (I apologized, but he’s still mad!)

Fàng sān tiān jià; dàjiā dōu zǒu le. (There will be a break of 3 days, and everyone has left.)

## Final Words

This is a very brief introduction to the modern Mandarin Chinese language, which is the standard world-wide. This introduction can only highlight the most salient properties of the language. Many other features of the language have been left out by design. For instance, nothing has been said about the patterns of word-formations in Chinese, and no presentation has been made of the unique written script of the language. Readers are advised to search on-line for resources relating to particular aspects of the language. For reading, please consult a highly readable best-seller in this regard, viz. Li, Charles and Sandra Thompson. 1982. Mandarin Chinese: a reference grammar. UC Los Angeles Press. (Authorised reprinting by Crane publishing Company, Taipei, Taiwan, still available as of October 2009).

# 各課 重點

## Highlights of Lessons

Lessons	Topic & Themes	Learning Objectives
<p>① 十七歲還是二十五歲？</p>	網路	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能討論現實跟虛擬的不同。</li> <li>2. 能討論各地有哪些不同的網路陷阱。</li> <li>3. 能討論網路的功能。</li> <li>4. 能討論紓解壓力的方式。</li> </ol>
<p>② 眼睛、耳朵的饗宴</p>	藝術活動	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能和同學討論藝術活動的種類。</li> <li>2. 能討論參加活動應該注意的事。</li> <li>3. 能介紹自己國家的人民比較常參加的活動。</li> <li>4. 能介紹自己喜歡的藝術活動。</li> </ol>
<p>③ 雲端科技</p>	科技	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能介紹科技所帶來的改變。</li> <li>2. 能談談自己使用雲端科技的經驗。</li> <li>3. 能說明自己如何利用科技。</li> <li>4. 能和他人討論科技正面和負面的影響。</li> </ol>
<p>④ 床該擺哪裡？</p>	風水	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能說明家中的布置。</li> <li>2. 能簡單說明風水是什麼。</li> <li>3. 能討論迷信，並說出自己的想法。</li> <li>4. 能討論風水與迷信的關係和不同。</li> </ol>

Grammar	Bits of Chinese Culture
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>與其 A...不如 B... <i>B rather than A</i></li> <li>就 <i>on the contrary</i></li> <li>A Summary of the Various Usages of 就</li> <li>別說 A, 就是 B 也... <i>never mind A, even B is the case...</i></li> <li>簡直 <i>to put it simply and plainly, it seems as if</i></li> <li>不至於 <i>but the situation would not be so bad as to...</i></li> <li>往往 <i>usually, tend to</i></li> <li>Do Something Just for Fun V 著玩</li> </ol>	Where Do Children Go After School?
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Verb Complement 成 <i>successful(ly)</i></li> <li>萬一 <i>supposing, in the event of something negative</i></li> <li>以為 <i>to have wrongly thought that...</i></li> <li>Adverb 可</li> <li>免得 <i>lest, so as to avoid</i></li> <li>曾經 <i>experience in the past, V'ed before</i></li> <li>Enumeration Particle 等 <i>etc...</i></li> <li>Marking a Verb with the Particle 所</li> </ol>	Drinks in Taiwan: Shaken, Not Stirred
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>何必 <i>why must</i></li> <li>不見得 <i>not necessarily</i></li> <li>嘛 <i>isn't it obvious that</i></li> <li>Verb Particle 慣</li> <li>Verb Complement 動 <i>capable of causing movement</i></li> <li>無形中 <i>without knowing it, and before you know it</i></li> <li>此外 <i>in addition, furthermore</i></li> <li>總而言之 <i>in short</i></li> </ol>	Burning Incense and Online Worship
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>總算 <i>finally, speaking roughly (in the ballpark)</i></li> <li>還不就是 <i>nothing more than</i></li> <li>Outright Denial with 才</li> <li>A Summary of the Various Usages of 才</li> <li>所謂 (的) A 是指 B <i>so called A refers to B</i></li> <li>一口氣 <i>lit. in one breath</i></li> <li>光 A 就... <i>just A alone...</i></li> <li>Expressing Displeasure or Annoyance with 都</li> </ol>	A Few Feng Shui Dos and Don'ts

Lessons	Topic & Themes	Learning Objectives
<p>5 有夢最美</p>	<p>經濟情況</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能談一談現代年輕人升學就業的情況。</li> <li>2. 能對想做的事提出解釋及說明原因。</li> <li>3. 能表達出所觀察到的社會轉變。</li> <li>4. 能和朋友討論未來的計畫。</li> </ol>
<p>6 天搖地動</p>	<p>地震</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能談談自己國家發生過的災害。</li> <li>2. 能說明災害發生的原因和災害發生的地區。</li> <li>3. 能和其他人談論未來可能發生的災害。</li> <li>4. 能說明如何在災難發生時逃生。</li> </ol>
<p>7 大學生的事</p>	<p>大學生活</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能討論大學的生活規劃。</li> <li>2. 能討論感情的事。</li> <li>3. 能討論大學社團的活動。</li> <li>4. 能討論大學生對未來的事業規劃。</li> </ol>
<p>8 他們的選擇</p>	<p>社會現象</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能談論自己國家目前家庭結構的狀況。</li> <li>2. 能討論傳統觀念與現在觀念的不同。</li> <li>3. 能和朋友討論少子化、老化的問題。</li> <li>4. 能說出自己國家對生育所推行的政策。</li> </ol>

### Grammar

### Bits of Chinese Culture

1. Rhetorical Question with 哪裡
2. 畢竟 *after all*
3. 的確 *indeed*
4. 話說回來 *however; on the other hand*
5. NP 之所以 S<sub>2</sub> 是因為 S<sub>1</sub> *S<sub>2</sub> is due to S<sub>1</sub>*
6. 根本 *not...at all*
7. 更別說...了 *let alone, never mind*
8. 恨不得 *one really wishes one could...*

1. Office Antics: Group Buying Food
2. Beauty Queen Marketing

1. 怎麼這麼 *why so...?*
2. Intensifying Adverb 多 *how*
3. The Various Functions of 多
4. 白 *in vain, for nothing*
5. 總是 *always*
6. The Various Meanings of the Verb Complement 下來
7. 當...的時候 *when, while, at the time of*
8. 反而 *on the contrary*

Taiwan's Funeral Customs

1. 還 *to my surprise*
2. Alternating Events with 一下...一下...
3. Various Fractions with A 分之 B
4. 一連 *without interruption, in rapid succession*
5. To Have a Full Dosage of an Activity V 個夠
6. 有助於 *be conducive to*
7. 於是... *thus, consequently*
8. 向 *to, toward*

1. Referring to Classmates
2. Swarming

1. 反正 *at any rate, anyway*
2. 不只 *not merely, exceeding*
3. 難免 *inevitably, it is only natural that*
4. 倒是 *on the other hand*
5. 這下子 *that being the case, as a consequence*
6. Verb Complement 來 *personable*
7. 何況 *let alone, no need to mention*
8. 否則 *otherwise*

1. Ghost Weddings: After Death Do Us Not Part
2. Outdoor Feasts

Lessons	Topic & Themes	Learning Objectives
<p>9 再談台灣故事</p>	<p>歷史</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能介紹自己國家的歷史。</li> <li>2. 能說出歷史上發生的事件及有名的地方。</li> <li>3. 能談論歷史事件的影響及改變。</li> <li>4. 能說一個完整的故事。</li> </ol>
<p>10 應徵</p>	<p>就業</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能說明自己的學歷。</li> <li>2. 能談論找工作的經驗。</li> <li>3. 能說明自己的工作經歷。</li> <li>4. 能介紹自己國家就業的情況。</li> </ol>
<p>11 文化、種族的大熔爐</p>	<p>社會結構的改變</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 了解台灣社會族群和語言文化的多元化。</li> <li>2. 能討論自己國家移民的問題。</li> <li>3. 能談談自己國家對不同文化的認同情形。</li> <li>4. 能介紹自己國家人口和生產力的轉變。</li> </ol>
<p>12 期待美好的未來</p>	<p>政治</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. 能說明自己國家的問題及政治與個人的關係。</li> <li>2. 能對政治提出自己的看法。</li> <li>3. 能談論選舉與政治相關的問題。</li> <li>4. 能表達自己的意見並說服他人。</li> </ol>

## Grammar

## Bits of Chinese Culture

1. 把 A 當做 B *to treat, take A as B*
2. 在...下 *under the..., due to the...*
3. The Various Functions of 該
4. 自從...以後 *ever since...*
5. Summary of the Various Usages of 幾
6. 不禁 *uncontrollably, cannot help but...*
7. 仍然 *still the same, same as before*
8. 究竟 *I wonder*

Vestiges of Colonization in Taiwan

1. Summary of the Various Functions of 著
2. The Various Meanings of 中
3. 似乎 *it seems that, it gives somebody the impression that*
4. Classical Chinese Preposition 以
5. 是...的料 *to be gifted in...*
6. Summary of 下去
7. 自 *from (formal)*

What are Young Entrepreneurs up to?

1. 偏偏 *contrary to expectation, against the speaker's wish, annoyingly*
2. 照 *persist*
3. 難得 *rarely*
4. 在...之餘 *while not otherwise engaged in..., apart from...*
5. 難以 *to find it difficult to...*
6. 漸漸 *gradually, slowly*
7. 可見 *It can thus be concluded that...*
8. 對於...而言 *as far as... is concerned*

1. Afternoon Napping
2. Sitting a Month Out / Postpartum Care Centers

1. 無所謂 *does not matter*
2. 誰知道 *who would have thought that...?*
3. 小自...大至... *everything from A to Z*
4. 竟然 *to the speaker's great surprise*
5. 照理說 *normally*
6. 以 A 為 B *to take A as B*
7. 無論...都... *regardless of what...*
8. 明明 *It should be obvious to everyone that...*
9. Causation with 使得

For a Better Future: Election Culture in Taiwan



# 詞類表

## Parts of Speech in Chinese

### List of Parts of Speech in Chinese

Symbols	Parts of speech	八大詞類	Examples
N	noun	名詞	水、五、昨天、學校、他、幾
V	verb	動詞	吃、告訴、容易、快樂、知道、破
Adv	adverb	副詞	很、不、常、到處、也、就、難道
Conj	conjunction	連詞	和、跟、而且、雖然、因為
Prep	preposition	介詞	從、對、向、跟、在、給
M	measure	量詞	個、張、碗、次、頓、公尺
Ptc	particle	助詞	的、得、啊、嗎、完、掉、把、喂
Det	determiner	限定詞	這、那、某、每、哪

### Verb Classification

Symbols	Classification	動詞分類	Examples
V	transitive action verbs	及物動作動詞	買、做、說
Vi	intransitive action verbs	不及物動作動詞	跑、坐、睡、笑
V-sep	intransitive action verbs, separable	不及物動作離合詞	唱歌、上網、打架
Vs	intransitive state verbs	不及物狀態動詞	冷、高、漂亮
Vst	transitive state verbs	及物狀態動詞	關心、喜歡、同意
Vs-attr	intransitive state verbs, attributive only	唯定不及物狀態動詞	野生、公共、新興
Vs-pred	intransitive state verbs, predicative only	唯謂不及物狀態動詞	夠、多、少
Vs-sep	intransitive state verbs, separable	不及物狀態離合詞	放心、幽默、生氣
Vaux	auxiliary verbs	助動詞	會、能、可以
Vp	intransitive process verbs	不及物變化動詞	破、感冒、壞、死
Vpt	transitive process verbs	及物變化動詞	忘記、變成、丟
Vp-sep	intransitive process verbs, separable	不及物變化離合詞	結婚、生病、畢業

### Default Values of the Symbols

Symbols	Default values
V	action, transitive
Vs	state, intransitive
Vp	process, intransitive
V-sep	separable, intransitive

# 課堂 用語

## Classroom Phrases

- 1 上課了。  
Shàngkè le.  
Let's begin the class.
- 2 請打開書。  
Qǐng dǎkāi shū.  
Open your book.
- 3 請看第五頁。  
Qǐng kàn dì wǔ yè.  
Please see page 5.
- 4 我說，你們聽。  
Wǒ shuō, nǐmen tīng.  
I'll speak, you listen.
- 5 請跟我說。  
Qǐng gēn wǒ shuō.  
Please repeat after me.
- 6 請再說 / 念一次。  
Qǐng zài shuō/niàn yí cì.  
Please say it again.
- 7 請回答。  
Qǐng huídá.  
Please answer my question.
- 8 請問，這個字怎麼念 / 寫？  
Qǐngwèn, zhè ge zì zěnmě niàn/xiě?  
How do you pronounce/spell this word?
- 9 對了！  
Dùi le!  
Right! Correct!
- 10 不對。  
Bú duì.  
Wrong. Incorrect.
- 11 請念對話。  
Qǐng niàn duìhuà.  
Read the dialogue, please.
- 12 請看黑板。  
Qǐng kàn hēibǎn.  
Look at the board, please.
- 13 懂不懂？  
Dǒng bù dǒng?  
Do you understand?
- 14 懂了！  
Dǒng le!  
Yes, I/we understand.
- 15 有沒有問題？  
Yǒu méi yǒu wèntí?  
Any question?
- 16 很好！  
Hěn hǎo!  
Very good!
- 17 下課。  
Xiàkè.  
The class is over.



# 人物介紹

## Introduction to Characters

小玲



*Xiǎolíng*

Taiwanese.  
Female. Age 17.

She is a high school student.

李雲真



*Lǐ Yúnyzhēn*

Taiwanese.  
Female.

She is pursuing a PhD degree in Sociology. She is a friend of Bai Ruyu and Ma Antong. She and Lu Ya are studying in the same PhD program.

魯亞



*Lǔ Yǎ*

Turkish.  
Male.

He is pursuing a PhD degree in Sociology, and is studying in the same program as Li Yunzhen.

李文麗



*Lǐ Wénlì*

Taiwanese.  
Female. Age 30.

She and Gao Laien are co-workers.

高來恩



*Gāo Láitēn*

Swiss.  
Male. Age 30.

He is working in the same company as Li Wenli.

何建明



*Hé Jiànmíng*

Taiwanese.  
Male. Age 23.

He is in the last year of his undergraduate study, and is the older brother of Yuzhen.

何玉珍



*Hé Yùzhēn*

Taiwanese.  
Female. Age 20.

She is a sophomore at college and is the younger sister of Jianming.

張太太



*Zhāng tàitai*

Vietnamese American.  
Female. Age 45.

She is an office worker. After she married a Taiwanese, she moved to Taiwan.

LESSON

1

第一課

# 十七歲還是二十五歲？

17 or 25-Years Old?

---

學習目標

主題：網路

- 能討論現實跟虛擬的不同。
- 能討論各地有哪些不同的網路陷阱。
- 能討論網路的功能。
- 能討論紓解壓力的方式。



LESSON  
1

# 十七歲還是二十五歲？

## 17 or 25-Years Old?

### 對話 Dialogue



(高中生小玲和也在念高中的阿建第一次在網路聊天室裡碰到，阿建找小玲聊天)

阿 建：小玲，第一次看到你。你是學生還是上班族？

小 玲：我是上班族，剛下班回到家。

阿 建：剛到家？這麼晚？真辛苦！

小 玲：不晚啊，現在才八點半而已。平常我都九點多才下班，有時候甚至工作到十點多。而且我自己一個人住，與其回到冷清的家，不如留在辦公室，還有同事陪我吃飯。

阿 建：你幾歲？單身嗎？沒跟家人住在一起嗎？

小 玲：二十五歲，單身。家在台南，大學畢業後來台北工作，自己在外租房子。你呢？

- 阿 建：我也單身，三十二歲。
- 小 玲：在哪裡高就？
- 阿 建：我在建設公司上班，是業務經理。部門裡有二十幾個人。
- 小 玲：你才三十二歲就已經是業務經理了，真厲害！你的工作能力一定很強。
- 阿 建：還可以。妳在哪裡工作呢？
- 小 玲：我在一家室內設計公司工作，畢業才兩年，經驗還不夠，所以工作常常做不完，得常加班。
- 阿 建：妳的興趣是什麼？有空的時候做些什麼？
- 小 玲：看書、看電影、吃美食。
- 阿 建：妳愛看哪類電影？
- 小 玲：我最愛看恐怖片。
- 阿 建：恐怖片！妳敢看恐怖片！我以為女生都只喜歡看浪漫的愛情片。好多女生都因為覺得恐怖片太可怕而被嚇哭了。
- 小 玲：並不是所有的女生都喜歡看愛情片，我就不喜歡，愛情片無聊死了！剛開始看恐怖片的時候，我也怕得不得了，但是看著看著就上癮了。現在覺得很刺激呢！
- 阿 建：別說女生，就是男生也有很多不敢看恐怖片的。
- 小 玲：不敢看恐怖片的男生簡直不是男生！膽子比我還小！
- 阿 建：好啦！好啦！別這麼激動，下次我們一起去找部恐怖片看吧！
- 小 玲：好啊！可是有的恐怖片是限制級的，我不能去電影院看。
- 阿 建：為什麼？妳不是二十五歲嗎？
- 小 玲：呃……

## 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

(高中生小玲和也在念高中的阿建第一次在網路聊天室里碰到，阿建找小玲聊天)

阿 建：小玲，第一次看到你。你是学生还是上班族？

小 玲：我是上班族，刚下班回到家。

阿 建：刚到家？这么晚？真辛苦！

小 玲：不晚啊，现在才八点半而已。平常我都九点多才下班，有时候甚至工作到十点多。而且我自己一个人住，与其回到冷清的家，不如留在办公室，还有同事陪我吃饭。

阿 建：你几岁？单身吗？没跟家人住在一起吗？

小 玲：二十五岁，单身。家在台南，大学毕业后来台北工作，自己在外租房子。你呢？

阿 建：我也单身，三十二岁。

小 玲：在哪里高就？

阿 建：我在建设公司上班，是业务经理。部门里有二十几个人。

小 玲：你才三十二岁就已经是业务经理了，真厉害！你的工作能力一定很强。

阿 建：还可以。你在哪里工作呢？

小 玲：我在一家室内设计公司工作，毕业才两年，经验还不够，所以工作常常做不完，得常加班。

阿 建：你的兴趣是什么？有空的时候做些什么？

小 玲：看书、看电影、吃美食。

阿 建：你爱看哪类电影？

小 玲：我最爱看恐怖片。

阿 建：恐怖片！你敢看恐怖片！我以为女生都只喜欢看浪漫的爱情片。好多女生都因为觉得恐怖片太可怕而被吓哭了。

小 玲：并不是所有的女生都喜欢看爱情片，我就不喜欢，爱情片无聊死了！刚开始看恐怖片的时候，我也怕得不得了，但是看着看着就上瘾了。现在觉得很刺激呢！

阿 建：别说女生，就是男生也有很多不敢看恐怖片的。

小 玲：不敢看恐怖片的男生简直不是男生！胆子比我还小！

阿 建：好啦！好啦！别这么激动，下次我们一起去找部恐怖片看吧！

小 玲：好啊！可是有的恐怖片是限制级的，我不能去电影院看。

阿 建：为什么？你不是二十五岁吗？

小 玲：呃……

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



01-02

## People in the Dialogue

1	小玲	Xiǎolíng	ㄒㄧㄠˇ ㄌㄩㄥˊ	Xiaoling, female
2	阿建	Ājiàn	ㄚ ㄐㄧㄢˋ	Ajian, male

## Vocabulary

3	聊天室	liáotiānshì	ㄌㄧㄠˊ ㄊㄧㄢ ㄕㄨㄛˋ	(N)	chatroom (室 -shì, room)
4	上班族	shàngbānzú	ㄕㄨㄛˋ ㄅㄢ ㄗㄨˊ	(N)	(office) workers (族 -zú, group)
5	與其	yǔqí	ㄩˇ ㄑㄧˊ	(Conj)	rather than...
6	冷清	lěngqīng	ㄌㄥˇ ㄑㄩㄥ	(Vs)	deserted, empty
7	高就	gāojiù	ㄍㄠ ㄐㄩˋ	(Vi)	to work (honorific)
8	部門	bùmén	ㄅㄨˋ ㄇㄣˊ	(N)	department
9	厲害	lihài	ㄌㄧˊ ㄏㄞˋ	(Vs)	impressive, good, awesome
10	加班	jiābān	ㄐㄧㄞ ㄅㄢ	(V-sep)	to work overtime
11	類	lèi	ㄌㄟˋ	(M)	kind, type
12	恐怖片	kǒngbùpiàn	ㄎㄨㄥˇ ㄅㄨˋ ㄆㄧㄢˋ	(N)	horror movie (恐怖 kǒngbù, scary; 片 -piàn, film)
13	愛情片	àiqíngpiàn	ㄞˋ ㄑㄩㄥˊ ㄆㄧㄢˋ	(N)	love story or romance movie (愛情 àiqíng, love)
14	嚇	xià	ㄒㄧㄚˋ	(Vp)	to be scared
15	哭	kū	ㄎㄨ	(V)	to cry
16	上癮	shàngyǐn	ㄕㄨㄛˋ ㄩㄣˇ	(Vp)	to get hooked on, addicted
17	刺激	cìjī	ㄘㄧˋ ㄐㄧ	(Vs)	stimulating
18	簡直	jiǎnzhí	ㄐㄧㄢˇ ㄓㄧˊ	(Adv)	simply, really
19	膽子	dǎnzi	ㄉㄢˇ ㄗㄩ	(N)	guts, courage
20	部	bù	ㄅㄨˋ	(M)	measure word for movies



21	限制級	xiànzhìjí	限 級	(N)	restricted (viewing for movies) (限制 xiànzhì, restricted; 級 -jí, level)
22	電影院	diànyǐngyuàn	電 影 院	(N)	cinema, movie theater
23	呃	è	呃	(Ptc)	uh, interjection indicating embarrassment

### Phrases

24	建設公司	jiànshè gōngsī	建 設 公 司		construction company
25	業務經理	yèwù jīnglǐ	業 務 經 理		business manager
26	室內設計	shìnèi shèjì	室 內 設 計		interior design

## 短文 Reading



01-03

### 冷清的家，溫暖的網路

十七歲的小玲是家裡的獨生女，目前在一所明星高中就讀。爸爸從事新聞媒體方面的工作，早出晚歸；媽媽的工作不至於那麼忙，但也常需要加班。因此，小玲放學後回到冷清的家，晚餐都是自己解決。雖然這樣，小玲並不寂寞，因為有許多網友



陪伴她。每天小玲一打開電腦，進入聊天室，就有許多網友在線上聊著今天發生的大小事。有人聊著感情的問題，有人抱怨老闆太小氣……。網友們看見小玲上線了，都會熱情地跟她打招呼。在她心情不好時，大家往往會給她加油打氣、安慰她。在小玲心裡，這個聊天室裡住著很多沒見過面的兄弟姐妹。雖然她在學校裡也有好朋友，但在網路上好像更能放心大膽地聊。

另外，玩線上遊戲也是小玲紓解壓力的方法，讀書讀累了，就

玩一下，不但可以轉換心情，有的跟歷史有關的遊戲還可以讓小玲對歷史更了解呢。

對小玲來說，網路的虛擬關係比現實生活中的關係簡單多了。在網路世界裡，所有的事情都可以得到安慰和支持，不會有心理負擔，即使做錯了，也不會有人責備；在現實生活中，家人的期待、學校裡的競爭都讓她喘不過氣來。躲進網路世界裡，比較自在。

雖然小玲常常跟網友聊天，但是小玲只是聊著玩的。她知道網路交友有時候很危險，所以色情、暴力網站她都不會點進去；她也知道懂得保護自己，才不會掉進這種網路陷阱裡。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

冷清的家，温暖的网路

十七岁的小玲是家里的独生女，目前在一所明星高中就读。爸爸从事新闻媒体方面的工作，早出晚归；妈妈的工作不至于那么忙，但也常需要加班。因此，小玲放学后回到冷清的家，晚餐都是自己解决。虽然这样，小玲并不寂寞，因为有许多网友陪伴她。每天小玲一打开电脑，进入聊天室，就有许多网友在线上聊着今天发生的大小事。有人聊着感情的问题，有人抱怨老板太小气……。网友们看见小玲上线了，都会热情地跟她打招呼。在她心情不好时，大家往往会给她加油打气、安慰她。在小玲心里，这个聊天室里住着很多没见过面的兄弟姐妹。虽然她在学校里也有好朋友，但在网路上好像更能放心大胆地聊。

另外，玩线上游戏也是小玲纾解压力的方法，读书读累了，就玩一下，不但可以转换心情，有的跟历史有关的游戏还可以让小玲对历史更了解呢。

对小玲来说，网络的虚拟关系比现实生活中的关系简单多了。在网路世界里，所有的事情都可以得到安慰和支持，不会有心理负担，即使做错了，也不会有人责备；在现实生活中，家人的期待、学校里的竞争都让她喘不过气来。躲进网路世界里，比较自在。

虽然小玲常常跟网友聊天，但是小玲只是聊着玩的。她知道网路交友有时候很危險，所以色情、暴力网站她都不会点进去；她也知道懂得保护自己，才不会掉进这种网路陷阱里。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



### Vocabulary

1	溫暖	wēnnuǎn	× ㄨㄥ ㄨㄢˇ	(Vs)	warm
2	目前	mùqián	ㄇㄨˋ ㄑㄧㄢˊ	(Adv)	currently
3	所	suǒ	ㄙㄨㄛˇ	(M)	measure word for schools
4	就讀	jiùdú	ㄐㄨㄟˋ ㄉㄨˊ	(Vi)	to be enrolled as a student
5	不至於	búzhìyú	ㄅㄨˋ ㄓㄧˋ ㄩˊ	(Adv)	not so, not to that degree, not so much that
6	但	dàn	ㄉㄢˋ	(Conj)	but, however (formal)
7	放學	fàngxué	ㄈㄤˋ ㄒㄨㄟˊ	(Vp)	after school, when school lets out
8	後	hòu	ㄏㄡˋ	(N)	afterwards (formal)
9	解決	jiějué	ㄐㄨㄟˋ ㄐㄨㄟˊ	(V)	to take care
10	寂寞	jímò	ㄐㄧˊ ㄇㄛˋ	(Vs)	lonely
11	網友	wǎngyǒu	ㄨㄥˋ ㄩˇ	(N)	online friends
12	陪伴	péibàn	ㄆㄟˊ ㄅㄢˋ	(V)	to keep somebody company
13	電腦	diànnǎo	ㄉㄧㄢˋ ㄢㄠˇ	(N)	computer
14	進入	jìnrù	ㄐㄧˋ ㄖㄨˋ	(V)	to enter
15	線上	xiànshàng	ㄒㄩㄢˋ ㄕㄨㄤˋ	(N)	online
16	感情	gǎnqíng	ㄍㄢˇ ㄑㄩㄥˊ	(N)	emotions, feelings, love
17	小氣	xiǎoqì	ㄒㄩㄢˋ ㄑㄧˋ	(Vs)	to be stingy
18	時	shí	ㄕˊ	(N)	when (formal)
19	往往	wǎngwǎng	ㄨㄥˋ ㄨㄥˋ	(Adv)	oftentimes, generally
20	打氣	dǎqì	ㄉㄚˇ ㄑㄧˋ	(Vi)	to cheer on/up
21	安慰	ānwèi	ㄞ ㄨㄟˋ	(V)	to comfort
22	心裡	xīnlǐ	ㄒㄩㄢˋ ㄌㄧˇ	(N)	in (one's) mind
23	大膽	dàdǎn	ㄉㄚˋ ㄉㄢˇ	(Vs)	to be bold, courageous
24	紓解	shūjiě	ㄕㄨ ㄐㄟˇ	(V)	to relieve

25	轉換	zhuǎnhuàn	轉換	(V)	to change, transform
26	虛擬	xūnǐ	虛擬	(Vs-attr)	virtual
27	現實	xiànrshí	現實	(Vs)	actual, real
28	心理	xīnlǐ	心理	(N)	psychological, mental
29	即使	jíshǐ	即使	(Conj)	even if, even though
30	責備	zébei	責備	(V)	to reproach, get on somebody's case
31	期待	qídài	期待	(N)	expectations
32	喘氣	chuǎnqì	喘氣	(V-sep)	to gasp, pant
33	自在	zìzài	自在	(Vs)	to be at ease, relaxed
34	交友	jiāoyǒu	交友	(Vi)	to make friends (with)
35	暴力	bàolì	暴力	(N)	violence
36	點	diǎn	點	(V)	to click (on)
37	懂得	dǒngde	懂得	(Vst)	to know how to
38	陷阱	xiànjǐng	陷阱	(N)	trap, snare

### Phrases

39	明星高中	míngxīng gāozhōng	明星高中		distinguished, exclusive high school
40	早出晚歸	zǎochū wǎnguī	早出晚歸		to leave home early and get home late
41	打開	dǎkāi	打開		to turn on, to power on
42	喘不過氣	chuǎnbúguò qì	喘不過氣		to be under great pressure, (lit.) unable to breathe
43	躲進	duǒjìn	躲進		to hide oneself in
44	掉進	diào jìn	掉進		to fall into

## 文法 Grammar

### I. 與其 A...不如 B... *B rather than A* 01-05



**Function:** 與其 states an action recommended against (A). The preference is given to B, after 不如 B would be superior to A. This is a formal pattern.

- 1 恐怖片那麼恐怖，與其看恐怖片不如看愛情片。
- 2 逛街那麼無聊，與其上街買東西，不如上網買。
- 3 百貨公司的東西那麼貴，與其去那裡買，不如去夜市買。
- 4 有人認為養孩子太貴太麻煩，與其養孩子，不如養隻寵物。
- 5 球賽現場人那麼多，與其去現場看，不如在家上網看。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences, using 與其...不如... the structure given above.

- 1 漫畫書不便宜，與其買，不如\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 不少父母因為擔心孩子以後生活會有問題，所以很早就幫他們存錢。其實與其給孩子錢，不如\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 下班以後，她不馬上回家，因為她覺得與其回到冷清的家，不如\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 紅色比較適合你，與其買白的，不如\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 天氣那麼熱，\_\_\_\_\_。

II. 就 *on the contrary*  01-06 英譯 p.18

**Function:** With the adverb 就, the speaker presents an exception to a rule being talked about. This 就 is pronounced with a high stress.

- ① A: 女生都不敢看恐怖片。  
B: 並不是所有的女生都不敢看恐怖片，我就很喜歡看。
- ② A: 你的工作那麼忙，大概每天都要加班吧？  
B: 也不一定，今天就沒加班。
- ③ A: 小林家是不是每個人都瘦瘦的？  
B: 不是，大兒子就胖胖的。
- ④ A: 看漫畫書對功課一點幫助都沒有。  
B: 誰說的！我看的漫畫書就可以讓我了解歷史。
- ⑤ A: 所有的限制級電影都是色情片。  
B: 不一定吧。我們上星期看的那部就不是。

**練習 Exercise**

Use this 就 to complete the following sentences.

- ① A: 喜歡玩線上遊戲的人，都不愛運動。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A: 誰不羨慕成績好、又長得好看的人。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A: 吃素的人大概都很瘦。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ A: 現在沒有人不用智慧型手機了吧？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ A: 我覺得我們學校的老師都很嚴。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

### III. A Summary of the Various Usages of 就 01-07



#### 1. Consequential

- (1) 要是那時候我有空，就跟你們一起去。(B1, L9)
- (2) 要是成績不到 80 分，拿不到獎學金，就得回國了。(B3, L1)
- (3) 玩線上遊戲也是小玲紓解壓力的方法，讀書讀累了，就玩一下。(B4, L1)

#### 2. Sooner than expected

- (1) 這裡很方便，附近有超市和捷運站，走路五分鐘就到了。(B1, L11)
- (2) 日本人從小就開始學寫漢字。(B2, L3)
- (3) 有人剛買的新手機就常常自動關機，修理了幾次都修不好。(B3, L2)

#### 3. Sequential

- (1) 明天我一下課，就去你們學校找你。(B1, L13)
- (2) 很多人每天早上才起床，就急著上網。(B2, L13)
- (3) 她覺得何雅婷好不容易才考上這麼好的科系，怎麼可以說放棄就放棄？(B3, L1)

#### 4. Imminent

- (1) 我們就要畢業了。(B2, L14)
- (2) 我下個星期就要回國了。
- (3) 快一點，我們五分鐘以後就要出門了。

#### 5. Focus marker (said with heavy stress)

- (1) 怡君：喂，安同嗎？  
安同：是，我就是。怡君，好久不見。(B1, L13)
- (2) 美玲，他就是新娘的哥哥。(B2, L5)
- (3) 新年又叫春節，就是春天的開始。(B3, L3)

## 6. Merely, only

- (1) 因為我們就放十天的假，所以一月五號回來。
- (2) 我在台灣就住了半年，所以中文還不夠好。
- (3) 昨天去逛街，我就買了一件外套而已。

## 7. Exception (in this lesson pronounced emphatically)

- (1) 並不是所有的女生都喜歡愛情片，我就不喜歡。(B4, L1)
- (2) 不是所有的公司都需要常加班，我們公司就不常加班。
- (3) 準備考試不一定要到圖書館，我就常在速食店念書。

**練習 Exercise**

Determine which usage of “就” is employed in each of the following six sentences.

- ① 膽子不夠大，就不要看恐怖片。
- ② 誰說念明星學校一定能考上好大學？我朋友就沒考上。
- ③ 我下個星期就要搬家了。
- ④ 明天請你回到家就打電話給我。
- ⑤ 你才幾歲就要結婚？你瘋了嗎？
- ⑥ 我早餐就吃一個麵包，很快就餓了。

IV. 別說 A，就是 B 也… *never mind A, even B is the case...*

**Function:** With this structure the speaker first presents a less serious case (A), and then (s)he states a much more serious instance, which (s)he finds unbelievable.

- ① 他很愛乾淨，別說客廳，就是床底下也打掃得乾乾淨淨的。
- ② 美美那麼愛五月天，別說在台灣，就是在日本舉辦演唱會，她也一定會去看。



- ③ 他肚子不舒服，別說油膩的菜，醫生說就是白飯也不能吃。
- ④ 我們設計部門工作太多，忙得要命，別說平常，就是週末也有很多同事來加班。
- ⑤ A：我知道你哥很小氣，聽說他都不請你吃東西。  
B：別說請我吃東西，就是把衣服借給我穿也不願意。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences, using the structure above.

- ① 我對運動一點興趣都沒有，別說打球，就是\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 我已經沒錢了，別說牛肉麵，\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A：這個問題好難喔，小孩子都不懂。  
B：別說小孩子，就是\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ A：小李是不是非常重視身體健康？聽說他炸的東西都不吃。  
B：\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ A：美美膽子真的那麼小嗎？連自己一個人去旅行都不敢。  
B：\_\_\_\_\_。

### V. 簡直 *to put it simply and plainly, it seems as if* 01-09



**Function:** With this adverb, the speaker draws an untrue and hypothetical parallel, a hyperbole, a way of exaggeration.

- ① 昨天看的那個房子髒得要命，簡直不能住。我決定不租。
- ② 他很愛狗，簡直把狗當自己的孩子。
- ③ 在這麼大的地方，沒有車簡直就像沒有腳。
- ④ 大明為了考試，最近每天熬夜看書，簡直快累死了。
- ⑤ 他又帥，個性又好，簡直就是我理想的男朋友！

## 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences, by exaggerating as much as you can.

- 1 他動作那麼慢，簡直像\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 你家這麼大，而且這麼漂亮，簡直像\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 這個鳳梨這麼酸，我簡直\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 今天風雨這麼大，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 我吃得太飽了，\_\_\_\_\_。

VI. 不至於 *but the situation would not be so bad as to...*

**Function:** The adverb 不至於 negates the worst possible scenario under the given circumstances not to the extent of.... The word can even stand alone in response to someone else's statement.

- 1 路上車子雖然很多，但還不至於塞車。
- 2 他條件那麼好，不至於找不到工作吧？
- 3 他個性是不太好，可是不至於害別人。
- 4 雖然我不太喜歡做飯，但還不至於每天都在外面吃。
- 5 我們兩個的意見是有一點不同，但我還不至於生他的氣。
- 6 A：小華膽子很小，他是不是晚上不敢一個人在家？  
B：不至於吧！

## 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 不至於 sentences.

- 1 我是沒什麼錢，可是不至於\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 我很愛我的狗，但不至於\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 她雖然最近身體沒有以前好了，但還不至於\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 雖然我迷那個樂團，但也不至於\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 \_\_\_\_\_，不過還不至於放棄我的理想。

## VII. 往往 *usually, tend to* 01-11



**Function:** The adverb 往往 refers to the common and routine occurrence of something.

- ① 我緊張的時候，往往會說不出話來。
- ② 跟能力比自己好的人一起工作往往會有壓力。
- ③ 對別人說出「對不起」往往是最難的。
- ④ 每年的新年，我父母往往會帶我們回老家跟平常不常見面的親戚拜年。
- ⑤ 有一句話說，快樂的時候如果不小心一點，往往就會有倒楣的事發生。

**Usage:** 往往 vs. 常常

1. 往往 and 常常 are often used interchangeably, e.g.,  
我跟朋友聊天，往往 / 常常聊到很晚。
2. 常常 denotes high frequency, and can be used referring to past, present, or future events, whereas 往往 cannot be used in reference to future events, e.g., 我到了美國以後會常常 (\*往往) 給你打電話。
3. 常常 refers to high frequency, while 往往 to a habitual routine.
4. 往往 is contingent upon context, a condition must be established before it can be used, e.g.,  
小玲常常去看恐怖片。  
\*小玲往往去看恐怖片。  
小玲不開心的時候，往往去看恐怖片。
5. Negation can be placed either in front or behind 常常, i.e., one can say either 不常常 (more commonly 不是常常...) or 常常不; however, 往往 can only be negated in front, e.g., one cannot say \*不往往.

## 練習 Exercise

Please complete the 往往 portions of the sentences below.

- 1 我看恐怖片以後往往會\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 年紀大了往往有\_\_\_\_\_的情形。
- 3 父母早出晚歸往往會讓孩子\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 \_\_\_\_\_的人往往最需要陪伴。
- 5 大城市往往有\_\_\_\_\_的問題。

VIII. Do Something Just for Fun V 著玩  01-12

**Function:** This pattern presents a casual undertaking of something, not for any serious purposes.

- 1 有的事說著玩就好，不要太認真。
- 2 我上線聊天只是聊著玩的，不會約網友出來玩的。
- 3 叔叔說他這次出來選舉是認真的，不是選著玩的。
- 4 A：你家裡有很多台灣歷史的書，你對台灣歷史有興趣嗎？  
B：也不是特別有興趣，就看著玩。
- 5 A：妳書法寫得那麼好，簡直可以去比賽了。  
B：我只是寫著玩的，沒辦法參加比賽啦。

## 練習 Exercise

Please use V 著玩 in response to inquiries.

- 1 A：你學太極拳學得好認真，每天都去上課，你想當太極拳老師嗎？  
B：沒有啦！\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A：你怎麼每天都去逛百貨公司，有那麼多東西要買嗎？  
B：\_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 A: 你最近一直在做蛋糕，是不是想開蛋糕店？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 你家種了這麼多辣椒，你家人都很喜歡吃辣的嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 王先生年紀那麼大了還參加日文能力的考試，他想移民到日本去嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

### 語法例句英譯

### Grammar Examples in English

#### I. 與其 A...不如 B...

##### *B rather than A*

##### Function:

- 1 Horror movies are really scary; why not watch a romance movie instead.
- 2 Window-shopping is rather boring. Shopping online is better than going out to buy stuff.
- 3 It's expensive shopping in department stores. A good alternative is going to the night market.
- 4 Some people say that raising kids is really expensive, a hassle too, and that opting for a pet is better.
- 5 Going out to watch the game means dealing with crowds, and it's better to watch it online than live.

#### II. 就 *on the contrary*

##### Function:

- 1 A: Girls don't like horror flicks.  
B: Not all girls. I for one love them!
- 2 A: With such a busy work schedule you must have to put in a lot of overtime.  
B: It depends. Today I didn't.

- 3 A: Is everyone in Xiao Lin's family so skinny?  
B: No, their oldest boy certainly isn't.
- 4 A: Reading comics is of no help whatsoever to schoolwork.  
B: Are you kidding? The comics I read help me understand history!
- 5 A: All restricted movies have pornographic content.  
B: Not necessarily. That movie we watched last week wasn't.

#### III. A Summary of the Various Usages of 就

##### 1. Consequential

- (1) If I'm free, I'll go with you.
- (2) If my marks are below 80 I can't get a scholarship, which means I'd go back home.
- (3) Online games are a stress-reliever for Xiao Ling. She plays when she tires of studying.

##### 2. Sooner than expected

- (1) It is conveniently located. Nearby, there are a supermarket and an MRT station. Walk five minutes and you're there.

- (2) Japanese start learning how to write Kanji in grade school.
- (3) Some people's cell phones go on the blink despite being brand new, staying broken even after being sent in to get fixed multiple times.

## 3. Sequential

- (1) I'll head over to your school after my class lets out tomorrow.
- (2) Lots of people go online first thing after they wake up.
- (3) The Chinese New Year, also known as the spring Festival, is the beginning of spring.

## 4. Imminent

- (1) We're graduating so soon.
- (2) I'm going back home next week.
- (3) Hurry up. I'm leaving in five minutes.

## 5. Focus marker (said with heavy stress)

- (1) Yijun: Hello? Is this Antong?  
Antong: Yes, this is he. Yijun, long time no see.
- (2) Meiling, this is the bride's older brother.
- (3) The Chinese New Year, also known as the Spring Festival, is the beginning of spring.

## 6. Merely, only

- (1) We only get ten days off, so we'll be back January 5th.
- (2) I've only lived in Taiwan for half a year, so my Chinese is not yet up to snuff.
- (3) I went shopping yesterday, and all I bought was a coat.

## 7. Exceptional

- (1) Not all girls like romance movies; take me for example.
- (2) Not all companies require you to work overtime often; our company for one seldom does.

- (3) You don't have to go to the library to study for a test. I for one go to a fast food joint.

#### IV. 別說 A，就是 B 也... *never mind A, even B is the case...*

##### Function:

- ① He is a clean freak. He keeps it spick and span under his bed, never mind the living room.
- ② MeiMei loves Mayday so much she would go to their concert even if it were in Japan, never mind Taiwan.
- ③ He is having stomach pains. The doctor told him to stay away from plain rice, never mind greasy food.
- ④ Workload in our design department is very heavy and everyone is swamped. Many colleagues have to come in on the weekend, never mind weekdays.
- ⑤ A: I know your brother is really stingy. I hear he never treats.  
B: Never mind paying for a meal, he doesn't even let me borrow his clothes.

#### V. 簡直 *to put it simply and plainly, it seems as if*

##### Function:

- ① The house we looked at yesterday was so terribly filthy and is simply unlivable. I have decided not to rent it.
- ② He loves his dogs. It's as if they are his children.
- ③ In a place this vast, not having a car is like not having legs.
- ④ Daming has been burning the midnight oil every day preparing for exams, and he's completely exhausted.
- ⑤ He's handsome and a gentleman. The man of my dreams!

## VI. 不至於 *but the situation would not be so bad as to...*

### Function:

- 1 There are lots of cars on the road, but it's not congested yet.
- 2 He's certainly qualified. It's not so bad that he won't be able to find a job, right?
- 3 He's a little volatile, but not so much so that he'd hurt anyone.
- 4 I don't particularly like cooking, but it's not to the point that I eat out every day.
- 5 We may have conflicting viewpoints, but not to the point that I am upset at him over it.
- 6 A: Xiao-hua is a bit gutless. Do you think he's scared to be home alone at night?  
B: He's not that scared!

## VII. 往往 *usually, tend to*

### Function:

- 1 Whenever I get nervous, I tend to have trouble speaking.
- 2 It's usually stressful working with people who are more capable than you.
- 3 Saying sorry tends to be the hardest part.
- 4 Whenever the New Year comes around, my parents usually take me back to our hometown to celebrate with relatives.
- 5 As the saying goes, if you're not careful, extreme joy can beget sorrow.

## VIII. Do Something Just for Fun

### V 著玩

### Function:

- 1 Some things are best spoken of in jest, not to be taken seriously.
- 2 I chat online just for fun, but I never make arrangements to meet.
- 3 My uncle is not kidding around. He said this time he is really running for office.
- 4 A: There are many books on Taiwan history in your house. Does Taiwan's history interest you?"  
B: Not particularly. I'm just reading for the fun of it.
- 5 A: Your calligraphy is amazing. You should enter a contest.  
B: I just do it for fun. I'm not competition material.

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 今天我是主持人 (host) — 綜合問題討論

目標：能當主持人，對議題提出問題並討論，而且能整理大家的意見。

任務：請學生先回家準備好回答，由一位或兩位學生當主持人，主持人負責提問、綜合整理出大家的意見，並請同學互相問問題和討論。

#### 議題參考

- 1 有人說網路讓生活越來越方便，也有人說網路讓人際關係越來越遠。你說呢？
- 2 在網路聊天室聊天的時候，為什麼有人不說真話？
- 3 你是花很多時間上網的人嗎？你大部分上網做什麼？如果有一天一整天網路都完全上不了，你想你會怎麼樣？

### II. 網路廣告

目標：能看懂網路廣告，並對網路上的服務，提出自己的看法。

任務：以下是網路公司的兩種收費服務，請先說說這兩個廣告的目的是什麼。再跟同學討論，如果你是父母，你會不會付費買這兩種服務？為什麼？由學生說出意見。



### III. 父母應不應該讓孩子們玩線上遊戲

目標：能了解他人的想法，並學會提出自己的看法。

任務：全班分成兩組，選好正反方，討論後進行辯論。

正方：父母應該讓孩子們玩線上遊戲

反方：父母不應該讓孩子們玩線上遊戲



## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Where Do Children Go After School?



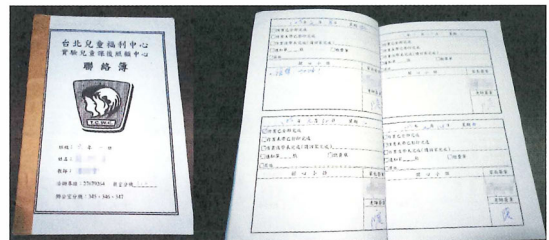
▲ “An Qin Ban” day cares provide transportation for children after school. 《聯合報》莊芳銘／攝影



▲ Many students in Taiwan stay at day care centers until 7 or 8 o'clock in the evening. 《聯合報》曾學仁／攝影

It is very common for Taiwanese women to continue working after marriage, which places great importance on the issue of after-school childcare. In response to this need, parents –often only coming home from work later in the evening– send children to day care centers or pre-schools before they are school-aged (less than 6 years old), where they are taken care of until 7 or 8 o'clock p.m., or even later. But what are parents to do once children are school-aged? No worries, in Taiwan there is a certain kind of cram school called “An Qin Ban (安親班)”, which is a specific day care center for elementary students to go after school lets out. These day cares provide transportation for children and have teachers that supervise the students as they do their homework. Sometimes teachers even check homework and sign off in the communication notebooks in lieu of parents.

Demand for this type of day care center was born out of parents’ busy lifestyles. These institutions allow hard-working parents to take a break when they come home after a long day. Parents are also relieved of pushing their kids to do homework, which benefits parent-child relationships. Some say, however, that An Qin Ban takes away from parent-child interaction, and gives parents an excuse to ignore their children’s homework. As a result, some parents encourage bad habits by letting their kids play computer or watch TV.



▲ The day care centers have communication notebooks to keep parents in the loop.



## Self-Assessment Checklist

我能討論現實跟虛擬的不同。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%



我能討論各地有哪些不同的網路陷阱。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%




我能討論網路的功能。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%



我能討論紓解壓力的方式。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%





*note*



LESSON

2

第二課

## 眼睛、耳朵的饗宴

A Feast for the Eyes and Ears

---

### 學習目標

主題：藝術活動

- 能和同學討論藝術活動的種類。
- 能討論參加活動應該注意的事。
- 能介紹自己國家的人民比較常參加的活動。
- 能介紹自己喜歡的藝術活動。



LESSON  
2

# 眼睛、耳朵的饗宴

## A Feast for the Eyes and Ears

對話 Dialogue

02-01



**李雲真**：快一點，打扮好了沒有？遲到的話，音樂廳就不讓我們進去，表演恐怕就看不成了。

**白如玉**：好了，好了，馬上好。妳不認為我們應該穿得正式一點嗎？萬一別人都穿得很正式怎麼辦？

**李雲真**：我想只要穿得整齊就可以了。我第一次去看表演的時候，以為要穿非常正式的服裝，沒想到平常的穿著就可以了。

**白如玉**：這是我第一次去，可不能丟臉。

**李雲真**：聽我朋友說，有一次他穿了短褲和涼鞋，就被擋在門外了。我同意妳的看法，去看表演時，穿著整齊對演出者也算是一種尊重。

白如玉：每個國家的文化都不太一樣，在我的國家，欣賞藝術表演也算是一種社交活動。

李雲真：怎麼說呢？

白如玉：我們邊走邊說吧，免得遲到就得等中場休息時間才能進去了。準時也是一種禮貌。

（在路上）

李雲真：對了，妳剛說的社交活動是什麼意思？

白如玉：因為我們沒有夜市，KTV也很少，一般人下班後，晚上能去的地方不多，欣賞藝術活動可以跟朋友或同事聯絡感情。

李雲真：說到聯絡感情，後天我和建國要去看電影，一起去吧？

白如玉：妳說的是英文系的林建國嗎？

李雲真：就是他，你們很熟嗎？

白如玉：唉！別提了，上次我們好幾個人一起去看電影，他又擤鼻涕，又不停地咳嗽，還忘了關手機。

李雲真：哇！怎麼那麼沒有水準，感冒的話就應該在家休息，看電影時手機應該關機。

白如玉：到了！到了！還好還有15分鐘才開始。我先去買一本表演手冊。

李雲真：我去一下洗手間，等一下裡面見。

（進場後）

白如玉：妳的手機關了嗎？

李雲真：謝謝妳提醒我，要不然等一下手機響了就糟了。

白如玉：噓，表演開始了。

課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

- 李云真 : 快一点, 打扮好了没有? 迟到的话, 音乐厅就不让我们进去, 表演恐怕就看不成了。
- 白如玉 : 好了, 好了, 马上好。你不认为我们应该穿得正式一点吗? 万一别人都穿得很正式怎么办?
- 李云真 : 我想只要穿得整齐就可以了。我第一次去看表演的时候, 以为要穿非常正式的服装, 没想到平常的穿著就可以了。
- 白如玉 : 这是我第一次去, 可不能丢脸。
- 李云真 : 听我朋友说, 有一次他穿了短裤和凉鞋, 就被挡在门外了。我同意你的看法, 去看表演时, 穿着整齐对演出者也算是一种尊重。
- 白如玉 : 每个国家的文化都不太一样, 在我的国家, 欣赏艺术表演也算是一种社交活动。
- 李云真 : 怎么说呢?
- 白如玉 : 我们边走边说吧, 免得迟到就得等中场休息时间才能进去了。准时也是一种礼貌。

(在路上)

- 李云真 : 对了, 你刚说的社交活动是什么意思?
- 白如玉 : 因为我们没有夜市, KTV 也很少, 一般人下班后, 晚上能去的地方不多, 欣赏艺术活动可以跟朋友或同事联络感情。
- 李云真 : 说到联络感情, 后天我和建国要去看电影, 一起去吧?
- 白如玉 : 你说的是英文系的林建国吗?
- 李云真 : 就是他, 你们很熟吗?
- 白如玉 : 唉! 别提了, 上次我们好几个人一起去看电影, 他又擤鼻涕, 又不停地咳嗽, 还忘了关手机。
- 李云真 : 哇! 怎么那么没有水准, 感冒的话就应该在家休息, 看电影时手机应该关机。
- 白如玉 : 到了! 到了! 还好还有 15 分钟才开始。我先去买一本表演手册。
- 李云真 : 我去一下洗手间, 等一下里面见。

(进场后)

- 白如玉 : 你的手机关了吗?
- 李云真 : 谢谢你提醒我, 要不然等一下手机响了就糟了。
- 白如玉 : 嘘, 表演开始了。

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



02-02

## People in the Dialogue

1	李雲真	Lǐ Yúnrzhēn	カ、ヨ、ウ	Li Yunzhen, female
---	-----	-------------	-------	--------------------

## Vocabulary

2	眼睛	yǎnjīng	一、目	(N)	eye
3	耳朵	ěrduo	ル、タ	(N)	ear
4	饗宴	xiǎngyàn	一、光	(N)	feast
5	打扮	dǎbàn	カ、ウ	(V)	to put on makeup
6	音樂廳	yīnyuètīng	一、目、タ	(N)	music hall, concert hall (廳 -tīng, hall)
7	表演	biǎoyǎn	カ、一	(N/V)	performance; to perform
8	整齊	zhěngqí	一、レ	(Vs)	neat
9	穿著	chuānzhuó	イ、タ	(N)	attire
10	丟臉	diūliǎn	カ、カ	(Vs-sep)	to lose face, to be embarrassed
11	短褲	duǎnkù	カ、タ	(N)	shorts
12	涼鞋	liángxié	カ、一	(N)	sandals
13	擋	dǎng	カ	(V)	to block
14	演出者	yǎnchūzhě	一、イ、タ	(N)	performer (演出 yǎnchū, to perform; 者 -zhě, person)
15	尊重	zūnzhòng	一、タ	(Vst)	to respect
16	社交	shèjiāo	一、タ	(N)	socialization
17	免得	miǎnde	一、カ	(Conj)	lest, so as not to, to avoid
18	中場	zhōngchǎng	一、イ	(N)	intermission, halftime
19	準時	zhǔnshí	一、一	(Vs)	to be punctual, on time
20	禮貌	lǐmào	カ、一	(N)	courtesy
21	或	huò	一、タ	(Conj)	or (formal)
22	熟	shóu	一	(Vs)	to be familiar with, to be close to somebody
23	提	tí	一	(V)	to bring up, mention



24	咳嗽	késòu	咳 嗽	(Vi)	to cough
25	關	guān	關	(V)	to close, shut off
26	哇	wa	哇	(Ptc)	yikes, oh no
27	水準	shuǐzhǔn	水 準	(N)	class, cultural standard
28	手冊	shǒucè	手 冊	(N)	programme, manual
29	洗手間	xǐshǒujiān	洗 手 間	(N)	restroom (間 -jiān, part of 房間, room)
30	提醒	tíxǐng	提 醒	(V)	to remind
31	響	xiǎng	響	(Vp)	to sound
32	糟	zāo	糟	(Vs)	awful
33	噓	xū	噓	(Ptc)	Shh, to hush

### Phrases

34	看不成	kànbùchéng	看 不 成		to miss out
35	聯絡感情	liánluò gǎnqíng	聯 絡 感 情		to get to know each other better to strengthen ties with each other
36	擤鼻涕	xǐng bíti	擤 鼻 涕		to blow one's nose

## 短文 Reading



02-03

### 享受藝術的生活

今天是白如玉來台灣以後，第一次到「國家戲劇院」看表演，她覺得非常興奮。她跟李雲真約好了，晚上要一起欣賞一場現代舞的表演。在美國時，白如玉曾經看過一次現代舞的表演。她覺得現代舞很難懂，但是很有意思。另外，李雲真還特別強調，今天晚上表演的團



體——「雲門舞集」在台灣幾乎無人不知、無人不曉，千萬別錯過了這個難得的好機會。

「國家音樂廳」在「國家戲劇院」對面，在那裡可以欣賞到各種音樂。白如玉小時候學過鋼琴和小提琴，特別喜歡古典音樂，她打算下次要請李雲真一起來聽音樂。白如玉的父親是畫家，她受到父親的影響也非常喜歡畫畫。除了音樂、舞蹈和繪畫以外，她對文學、建築和電影等藝術都非常有興趣。記得剛來台灣時，她常去參觀寺廟，她認為寺廟最能表現出傳統建築之美。她還聽她的同學高橋健太提過，台南有不少古蹟，其中最值得欣賞的就是台南的寺廟了。百聞不如一見，下次一定要去看看。

由於白如玉的中文進步了不少，除了參觀寺廟以外，她還常去看中文電影。上個週末她看了一部台灣電影，劇情非常特別。她想，導演所要表達的意思是現代人孤單寂寞的感覺吧。男、女主角都是台灣目前最紅的明星，他們的演技不但好，男主角還得了今年金馬影展的最佳男主角獎。

白如玉有時逛街經過台北 101 大樓附近的商業廣場，或週末去淡水老街附近，都看到不少街頭藝術的演出。在我們的生活中仔細留意的話，處處都是藝術，捷運站或公園裡也有不少裝置藝術可以欣賞。如果說食物能填飽我們的肚子，滿足我們的口腹之慾的話，那麼藝術就是眼睛和耳朵最豐盛的饗宴了。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

#### 享受艺术的生活

今天是白如玉来台湾以后，第一次到「国家戏剧院」看表演，她觉得非常兴奋。她跟李云真约好了，晚上要一起欣赏一场现代舞的表演。在美国时，白如玉曾经看过一次现代舞的表演。她觉得现代舞很难懂，但是很有意思。另外，李云真还特别强调，今天晚上表演的团体——「云门舞集」在台湾几乎无人不知、无人不晓，千万别错过了这个难得的好机会。

「国家音乐厅」在「国家戏剧院」对面，在那里可以欣赏到各种音乐。白如玉小时候学过钢琴和小提琴，特别喜欢古典音乐，她打算下次要请李云真一起来听音乐。白如玉的父亲是画家，她受到父亲的影响也非常喜欢画画。除了音乐、舞蹈和绘画以外，她对文学、建筑和电影等艺术都非常有兴趣。记得刚来台湾时，她常去参观寺庙，她认为寺庙最能表现出传统建筑之美。她还听她的同学高桥健太提过，台南有不少古迹，其中最值得欣赏的就是台南的寺庙了。百闻不如一见，下次一定要去看看。

由于白如玉的中文进步了不少，除了参观寺庙以外，她还常去看中文电影。上个周末她看了一部台湾电影，剧情非常特别。她想，导演所要表达的意思是现代人孤单寂寞的感觉吧。男、女主角都是台湾目前最红的明星，他们的演技不但好，男主角还得了今年金马影展的最佳男主角奖。

白如玉有时逛街经过台北 101 大楼附近的商业广场，或周末去淡水老街附近，都看到不少街头艺术的演出。在我们的生活中仔细留意的话，处处都是艺术，捷运站或公园里也有不少装置艺术可以欣赏。如果说食物能填饱我们的肚子，满足我们的口腹之欲的话，那么艺术就是眼睛和耳朵最丰盛的飨宴了。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



### Vocabulary

1	場	chǎng	ㄔㄨㄥˋ	(M)	measure word for performances
2	強調	qiángdiào	ㄑㄩㄥˊ ㄉㄧㄠˋ	(V)	to stress
3	團體	tuántǐ	ㄊㄨㄢˊ ㄊㄧˇ	(N)	group
4	千萬	qiānwàn	ㄑㄩㄢ ㄨㄢˋ	(Adv)	by all means
5	鋼琴	gāngqín	ㄍㄨㄥ ㄑㄧㄣˊ	(N)	piano
6	小提琴	xiǎotíqín	ㄒㄩㄥˋ ㄊㄧˊ ㄑㄧㄣˊ	(N)	violin
7	古典	gǔdiǎn	ㄍㄨˇ ㄉㄧㄢˇ	(Vs)	classical
8	畫家	huàjiā	ㄏㄨㄚˋ ㄐㄧㄚ	(N)	painter
9	畫	huà	ㄏㄨㄚˋ	(V/N)	to paint; painting
10	舞蹈	wǔdào	ㄨˇ ㄉㄠˋ	(N)	dance

11	文學	wénxué	文 學	(N)	literature
12	繪畫	huìhuà	繪 畫	(N)	(act of) painting, drawing
13	等	děng	等	(Ptc)	etc., and so forth
14	寺廟	sìmiào	寺 廟	(N)	temple
15	表現	biǎoxiàn	表 現	(V/N)	to manifest, express; manifestation, expression of (from classical Chinese, roughly equivalent to the modern Chinese 的)
16	之	zhī	之	(Ptc)	
17	劇情	jùqíng	劇 情	(N)	story, plot, storyline
18	導演	dǎoyǎn	導 演	(N)	director (movies)
19	所	suǒ	所	(Ptc)	a verbal marker (marking what comes after as a verb)
20	紅	hóng	紅	(Vs)	popular (of an actress or singer)
21	明星	míngxīng	明 星	(N)	movie stars
22	演技	yǎnjì	演 技	(N)	acting skills
23	得	dé	得	(Vpt)	to get, obtain, receive
24	獎	jiǎng	獎	(N)	award
25	廣場	guǎngchǎng	廣 場	(N)	plaza
26	或	huò	或	(Conj)	or
27	仔細	zǐxì	仔 細	(Adv)	carefully, attentively
28	留意	liúyì	留 意	(Vst)	to pay attention to, take note of
29	處處	chùchù	處 處	(Adv)	everywhere
30	滿足	mǎnzú	滿 足	(Vst)	to satisfy
31	豐盛	fēngshèng	豐 盛	(Vs)	sumptuous, abundant

### Names

32	國家戲劇院	Guójiā Xìjùyuàn	國 家 戲 劇 院		National Theater
----	-------	--------------------	-----------	--	------------------

33	雲門舞集	Yúnmén Wǔjí	ㄩㄣˊ ㄇㄣˊ ㄨˇ ㄐㄧˊ	Cloud Gate Dance Theatre
34	國家音樂廳	Guójiā Yīnyuètīng	ㄍㄨㄛˊ ㄐㄩㄚˊ ㄩㄢˊ ㄩㄝˋ ㄊㄩㄥˊ	National Concert Hall
35	金馬影展	Jīnmǎ Yǐngzhǎn	ㄐㄩㄣˊ ㄇǎ ㄩㄥˊ ㄓǎn	Golden Horse Film Festival

### Phrases

36	現代舞	xiàndài wǔ	ㄒㄩㄢˋ ㄉㄞˋ ㄨˇ	modern dance
37	無人不知	wúrén bùzhī	ㄨˊ ㄣˊ ㄅㄨˋ ㄓㄧ	known to all
	無人不曉	wúrén bùxiǎo	ㄨˊ ㄣˊ ㄅㄨˋ ㄒㄩㄞˇ	
38	百聞不如	bǎiwén bùrú	ㄅㄞˇ ㄨㄣˊ ㄅㄨˋ ㄣˊ	seeing it once is better than hearing about it a hundred times
	一見	yíjiàn	ㄧˋ ㄐㄩㄢˋ	
39	老街	lǎojiē	ㄌㄞˇ ㄐㄩㄝˊ	old street
40	街頭藝術	jiētóu yìshù	ㄐㄩㄝˊ ㄊㄡˊ ㄩˋ ㄕㄨˋ	street art
41	裝置藝術	zhuāngzhì yìshù	ㄓㄨㄤ ㄓㄧˋ ㄩˋ ㄕㄨˋ	installation art
42	填飽	tiánbǎo	ㄊㄧㄢˊ ㄅㄞˇ	to fill one's belly
43	口腹之慾	kǒufù zhīyù	ㄎㄨˇ ㄈㄨˋ ㄓㄧ ㄩˋ	the desire of one's palate

## 文法 Grammar

### I. Verb Complement 成 *successful(ly)* 02-05

 英譯 p.43

**Function:** 成 is a resultative complement referring to the successfulness of an undertaking, able to succeed at the verb.

- ① 要是你再不努力讀書的話，就念不成醫學系了。
- ② 如果訂購不成的話，就只好換一個網站訂購了。
- ③ 他又參加了民意代表選舉，可惜這一次他沒連任成。
- ④ 上個月那場演唱會因為颱風而改時間了。等了一個 month，今天我終於看成了。
- ⑤ 高美玲當得成當不成助教，得由系主任來決定。

**Usage:**

1. 成 can be used in both the actual mode and the potential mode.
2. The 成 presented in Book 3 Lesson 2 is not a verb complement, but a second verb requiring an object, translatable as “into”. E.g.,
  - (1) 我看不懂西班牙文。你能不能幫我把這段話翻譯成中文？(B3, L2)
  - (2) 鳳梨酥是一種用鳳梨做成內餡的甜點。
  - (3) 台北市已經發展成一個很現代的大城市了。

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following sentences by using one of the verbs listed in the box and the verb complement 成.

開 / 換 / 參觀 / 去 / 轉

- 1 他很生氣，因為那支有問題的手機\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 何雅婷這學期打算轉系，你認為她\_\_\_\_\_嗎？
- 3 剛剛聽了新聞，這次的颱風好像不小，如果飛機不飛的話，我們就\_\_\_\_\_了。
- 4 由於台南孔廟目前正在修理，暫時不讓觀光客進入，所以這次我們\_\_\_\_\_了。
- 5 怎麼大家都遲到了，這個會還\_\_\_\_\_嗎？

## II. 萬一 *supposing, in the event of something negative* 02-06

 英譯 p.43

**Function:** This adverb literally means a “one in 10 thousand” likelihood. It refers to something unlikely but possible nonetheless.

- 1 他請我幫他買一本演出手冊，萬一沒買到，那怎麼辦呢？
- 2 萬一業務經理知道是我們弄錯的，那就糟了，可能不會再信任我們了。
- 3 你別太早去，萬一她還沒打扮好，就得在外面等了。

- 4 多練習幾次吧，萬一我們表演得很糟，就太丟臉了。
- 5 帶本漫畫去吧，萬一得等很久，就可以看漫畫殺時間。

**Usage:** 萬一 denotes the supposition of an undesirable event, and can also be used in conjunction with other conditional clauses. E.g.,

1. 就算萬一發生什麼事，也不要緊張。
2. 要是萬一錢不夠的話，你可以去找張先生。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences by referring to hypothetically likely events.

- 1 我已經跟他聯絡好了，但是萬一\_\_\_\_\_就糟了。
- 2 雖然準時是一種禮貌，但是萬一\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 別穿喇叭褲去上班，萬一\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 我們坐前面一點吧，萬一被擋到\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 為了滿足他的口腹之慾，我們決定去網路介紹的那家餐廳吃飯，但要是萬一\_\_\_\_\_。

### III. 以為 *to have wrongly thought that...* 02-07

 英譯 p.43

**Function:** The verb 以為, especially when used colloquially conversations, confesses to a mistaken assumption on the part of the speaker or the subject.

- 1 我以為那會是一場美食的饗宴，結果，菜沒什麼特色不說，材料還不新鮮，真是讓人失望。
- 2 我原來以為你們不熟，沒想到他居然提到了你們小時候常一起玩的事。
- 3 我們本來以為他會遲到，沒想到他今天很準時。
- 4 我們都以為這家知名餐廳的服務生一定都很有禮貌，沒想到也有這麼糟的。
- 5 我們以為這些番茄都是基因改造的，現在才知道這些都是有機番茄。

**Usage:**

1. In formal speech, 以為 and 認為 are used interchangeably freely.
2. 以為 is often used together with 其實 which presents the truth, e.g.,
  - (1) 我以為他還單身，其實他已經結婚了。
  - (2) 他以為我還住在淡水，其實我早就搬到台中了。

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following dialogues using 以為.

- 1 A: 紅毛城最早不是荷蘭人建的嗎?  
B: 我也以為\_\_\_\_\_，沒想到\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 你這個週末不是要去參加反核遊行嗎？怎麼有空來我家玩？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 我聽說這個團體在台灣，無人不知、無人不曉。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 我不想去，我看不懂現代舞，一定會覺得很無聊。  
B: 不會的，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 我們六點在國家戲劇院門口見面，千萬別遲到喔！  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

**IV. Adverb 可**  02-08

**Function:** 可, an adverb, has two functions.

1. It expresses the speaker's refutation of what people in general expect or assume.
  - (1) 你可是男生，怎麼膽子比我還小！
  - (2) 我可跟她們不一樣，覺得恐怖片一點也不可怕。
  - (3) 那位畫家得獎以後，他的畫可貴了。我們怎麼買得起！
  - (4) 台灣的大學生可很少人化了妝去上課的。



2. The speaker gives a suggestion, a mild warning or a reminder.

- (1) 最近食品安全出了不少問題，買東西可要小心啊！
- (2) 開慢一點，你可別因為要趕時間而出車禍。
- (3) 噓，小聲一點，這件事很重要，你可不能告訴別人。
- (4) 你可要表現得好一點，可別再出問題了。

**Usage:** 可 is often used in imperative sentences and is followed by words like 要, 得, 不能, and 別, as illustrated above.

### 練習 Exercise

Please comment on (A) sentences by using 可.

- ① A: 沒想到吧? 昨天我在網路上認識了一個業務經理。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A: 我平常不看愛情片, 但聽說這部愛情片非常特別。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A: 核能電廠是一個專業的問題, 應該由專家來討論和決定。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ A: 你不知道嗎? 這條老街上有很多知名的裝置藝術。  
B: 我每天忙死了, \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ A: 那些民意代表都只關心自己的利益, 我一點也不想去投票。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

### V. 免得 *lest, so as to avoid* 02-09

 英譯 p.43

**Function:** Advice is offered to avoid the occurrence of something undesirable. If what comes before 免得 is properly carried out, what comes after 免得 can be avoided.

- ① 你又咳嗽又發燒, 快去看醫生吧, 免得感冒越來越嚴重。

- ② 你有空的話去幫一下忙，免得他一個人忙不過來。
- ③ 我們最好注意一下食材的產地，免得買到有問題的食品。
- ④ 我建議你多去參加一些社交活動，免得你一個人在家無聊。
- ⑤ 好好準備吧，免得口頭報告時太緊張而忘了要說什麼。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences by stating what might possibly happen.

- ① 你別隨便答應跟網友見面，免得\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 父母親不要每天都加班，早出晚歸，免得\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 你們要參加婚禮的話，最好穿得整齊一點，免得\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 等一下在老闆的面前你要表現出很有自信的樣子，免得\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 那家店不大，而且廣場附近有很多商店，我們得仔細地找，免得\_\_\_\_\_。

## VI. 曾經 *experience in the past, V'ed before* 02-10



**Function:** 曾經 is an adverb that refers to experiences in the past, to have previously.

- ① 你曾經看過那位導演的電影嗎？
- ② 媽媽以前曾經抱怨過爸爸每天都早出晚歸。
- ③ 我曾經在一家室內設計公司工作。
- ④ 他的演技很好，曾經得過兩次金馬影展的最佳男主角獎。
- ⑤ 你曾經在淡水老街看過街頭藝術的演出嗎？

### Usage:

1. 過 is an experiential aspect, which can be used with 曾經. 過 always appears after the main verb, e.g.,  
他曾經當過英文老師。
2. 曾經 can only be used in an affirmative sentence.  
You can't say \*我沒有曾經工作。  
\*他曾經沒去過西班牙。
3. 曾經 is used in formal speech, e.g.,  
我記得你曾經跟我說過你的計畫。

### 練習 Exercise

Please use 曾經 in completing the following dialogues.

- 1 A: 為什麼你的手機換成月租型的了?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。(預付卡)
- 2 A: 聽說他常不尊重別人, 常跟人發生糾紛。  
B: 是啊, \_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 你們在哪裡吃過擔仔麵?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 你看過哪些得過獎的電影?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 你怎麼點漢堡?! 你不再吃素了嗎?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

## VII. Enumeration Particle 等 etc... 02-11

 英譯 p.44

**Function:** Used in enumeration, 等 may refer to a closed listing or an open-ended listing, depending on the contexts.

- 1 我去過美國、法國等兩個國家。(closed)

- 2 我和男朋友的興趣很不一樣，他對文學、繪畫、舞蹈等都沒有興趣。(open)
- 3 我問過很多人，他們吃素大部分是因為宗教，也有不少是怕胖、為了健康等原因。(open)
- 4 端午節的風俗很多，像戴香包、喝雄黃酒、在門上掛一些植物等。(open)
- 5 我們家要修理的地方很多，像客廳的窗戶、洗手間的門等。(open)

**Usage:**

1. The total number of listed items can be reiterated following the enumeration particle, e.g.,  
 這個大學熱門的科系有國際關係系、會計系、中文系、英文系等四個科系。  
 There are four best programs in this university, International relations, Accounting, Chinese and English. (closed listing, only four)
2. The enumeration particle may be reduplicated, e.g.,  
 生活中有很多事都離不開電腦，比方說：買東西、查資料等等。

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following sentences by using the particle 等.

- 1 今天張老師準備的菜很豐盛，有各國美食，像\_\_\_\_\_。  
 \_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 我在台灣時參觀過不少寺廟，像\_\_\_\_\_。  
 \_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 我們國家跟台灣很不一樣，尤其是\_\_\_\_\_方面。
- 4 現在我們國家最紅的明星有\_\_\_\_\_。  
 \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 這件外套妳穿起來很漂亮，\_\_\_\_\_。  
 \_\_\_\_\_都非常適合妳。

## VIII. Marking a Verb with the Particle 所 02-12

 英譯 p.44

**Function:** The particle 所 marks the verb of a relative clause, which modifies a noun.

- 1 你上次所提的那個海邊溫泉就是綠島的溫泉吧？
- 2 這本書所介紹的方法，我早就學過了。
- 3 政府為了發展觀光所舉辦的活動，吸引了許多人參加。
- 4 他們所關心的價格問題，其實我們覺得並不重要。
- 5 我們已經把王先生所訂購的產品寄出了。

**Usage:** The usage of 所 is more formal, and its use is completely optional.

### 練習 Exercise

Respond to the questions below by using the pattern 所 V 的 N.

- 1 A: 你剛剛說的網路虛擬關係是什麼意思？  
B: 我\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 在你的國家，大家認為什麼系是熱門科系？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 你說的那一些故事跟原住民的歷史有關係嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 她一定很懂流行，她買的外套可都是當季款式呢！  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 你說你參加了上週末的遊行，是什麼樣的遊行？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

## 語法例句英譯

## Grammar Examples in English

## I. Verb Complement 成

*successful(ly)***Function:**

- ① If you don't start taking your studies seriously, you'll never get into med school.
- ② If you can't complete the order, you'll have to try from a different website.
- ③ He ran in the representative elections again, but unfortunately was not reappointed.
- ④ The concert scheduled for last month was postponed due to a typhoon. I went to see it today, finally.
- ⑤ Whether or not Gao Meiling will become an teaching assistant is up to the director of department.

II. 萬一 *supposing, in the event of something negative***Function:**

- ① He's asked me to buy a programme for him. What should I do if I can't get my hands on one?
- ② If the sales manager found out it was our mistake then we're finished. He'll never trust us again.
- ③ Don't go too early. If she's not ready you'll have to wait outside.
- ④ Let's go over it a few more times. It would be really mortifying if our performance turned out atrocious.
- ⑤ Bring a comic book with you to kill some time in the event that we have to wait a while.

III. 以為 *to have wrongly thought that ...***Function:**

- ① Here I thought it was going to be a lavish feast, but not only was the food unremarkable, it wasn't even fresh. What a disappointment.

- ② And here I thought you didn't know each other very well, but then he mentioned that you often played together as kids.
- ③ We thought he'd be late for sure; we never dreamed that today he'd be right on time.
- ④ We all expected that the servers at this well-known restaurant would be very courteous. In reality ours was far from it.
- ⑤ We had been under the impression that these were GMO tomatoes, but just found out that they are organic tomatoes.

## IV. Adverb 可

**Function:**

1. (1) But you're a guy; where are your guts?
- (2) I'm not at all like those girls. I don't think horror movies are the least bit frightening.
- (3) After that artist won an award, his paintings just got so expensive. How could we ever afford one!
- (4) In Taiwan there are so few students who wear make-up to class.
2. (1) There have been quite a few food safety issues of late. Beware what you buy!
- (2) Drive slower. It's not worth rushing at the expense of an accident.
- (3) Hey, not so loud. This is very important, and you can't let anyone else know.
- (4) You've got to do a better job. Don't let it happen again.

V. 免得 *lest, so as to avoid***Function:**

- ① You've got a cough and also you have a fever. You'd better go to a doctor right away, so that your cold will not get worse.

- 2 Give him a hand if you have a spare minute; otherwise, he won't be able to handle it all by himself.
- 3 We should keep an eye on where our food is produced so as to avoid buying anything suspect.
- 4 You should go to more social functions, lest you grow bored at home.
- 5 Be well prepared so that during your oral presentation, you might avoid forgetting what to say because of nervousness.

## VI. 曾經 *experience in the past, V'ed before*

### Function:

- 1 Have you ever seen any films done by that director?
- 2 Mom has complained about Dad having to leave so early and come home so late.
- 3 I have worked at an interior design company before.
- 4 He's a brilliant actor, and he's won two best male actor awards at the Taipei Golden Horse Film Festival.
- 5 Have you ever seen the street artists performing on Danshui Old Street?

## VII. Enumeration Particle 等 *etc...*

### Function:

- 1 I have been to the US and the France. (only two)
- 2 My boyfriend and I have dissimilar interests. He's not into things like literature, painting, and dance. ('things like' implies that further examples could be given.)
- 3 I have asked many people why they are vegetarian, and for most, it is because of religion. Others say they don't want to put on weight, or just want to eat healthier.

- 4 There are lots of Dragon Boat Festival customs, including wearing spice sachets, drinking realgar wine, and hanging certain plants on doors.
- 5 There's a lot that needs fixing in our house, the living room window and bathroom door, just to name two.

## VIII. Marking a Verb with the Particle 所

### Function:

- 1 That seaside hot spring you mentioned last time, is it the one on Green Island?
- 2 I have long since learned the methods outlined in this book.
- 3 The government, in order to promote their sponsored tourism activity, has encouraged many people to participate.
- 4 The issue of price that they are concerned with is actually not so important to us.
- 5 We have already mailed out the products Mr. Wang ordered.

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 請介紹一種貴國有特色的藝術表演

目標：學習怎麼介紹和讓別人了解及對你所介紹的藝術有興趣。

任務：請準備好一段影片來介紹這種藝術表演，請用中文來介紹這種藝術的特色是什麼。

### II. 調查受歡迎的活動

目標：能訪問同學並且說明同學喜歡的原因。

任務：學生先兩人一組，完成後再找別的同学兩人一組，問問你的同學喜歡哪一種活動？在表格中寫上同學的名字，並且在喜歡的活動中打「✓」，並且要說出為什麼喜歡？

活動	名字	內容	吸引你的原因	喜歡自己去還是跟朋友去，為什麼？
看電影				
逛街				
看舞蹈表演				
聽演唱會				
聽音樂會				
參觀寺廟、古蹟				
看街頭表演				
其他（回答者可能有別的喜歡的活動，請填於此處）				



### III. 設計活動海報

目標：能和同學一起想出新的想法，一起合作完成目標。

任務：經過訪談後（活動二），從上面的活動中找出一位和你興趣一樣或興趣接近的同學一起設計一張海報，然後請別組同學來參加這個活動。海報設計得越有吸引力，想參加的人會越多，加油。

**週末逛西門町**

時間：9月18日 星期六 下午2點

集合地點：西門捷運站6號出口

由對西門町非常了解的同學帶大家去一些西門町必訪之地。

例如：西門紅樓、台北市電影主題公園、萬年商業大樓 等地。

這是一個難得的機會，別錯過了喔！

**全程免費!!!**



## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Drinks in Taiwan: Shaken, Not Stirred

Taiwan's unique culture of "hand-shaken drinks" started long ago in the "iced tea" teahouses that served an earlier variation of the take-out drinks common today (servers in these teahouses would use a cocktail shaker to manually mix tea and ice, producing a cool and frothy drink). Now there are a whole host of these tea-based drinks that can be found in Taiwan, with flavors ranging from the traditional to the more innovative, and almost anything you can think of in between. There are teas of all kinds that cater to consumer's taste buds, with older flavors constantly being replaced by new ones. The Taiwanese have very cleverly transformed tea –traditionally an interest of the elderly– into a multifaceted drink. They have imported cultural bits from all over, mixed and matched in ways that continue to surprise, and ultimately forged a rich and diverse tea culture. Teas from Taiwan have also been marketed the world over, the best example being "Pearl Milk Tea", which has been a success on the international stage.

Hand-shaken drinks have also become popular because they accord nicely with the Taiwanese way of life –everything from the way teashops are set up and the customized drinks, to the packaging and the way they are consumed. Unlike the Japanese, who are particular about ceremony, and the English, who luxuriate over breakfast tea, Taiwanese tea culture is a thing of whim. No leftover tea leaves, no time wasted on steeping, and no restrictions. You can just take it on the go, wherever and whenever that may be. It is flexible and free and there's no right or wrong way to do it, just the way Taiwanese people like it!



▲ Hand-shaken drinks are popular in Taiwan.

▲ Customers can determine how much ice or sweetening they want in their drink.



## Self-Assessment Checklist

我能和同學討論藝術活動的種類。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能討論參加活動應該注意的事。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能介紹自己國家的人民比較常參加的活動。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能介紹自己喜歡的藝術活動。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

LESSON

# 3

第三課

## 雲端科技

Cloud Technology

---

### 學習目標

主題：科技

- 能介紹科技所帶來的改變。
- 能談談自己使用雲端科技的經驗。
- 能說明自己如何利用科技。
- 能和其他人討論科技正面和負面的影響。



LESSON  
3

# 雲端科技

## Cloud Technology

對話 Dialogue

03-01



（電話中，李文麗想改變外婆的購物習慣）

- 外 婆：喂，文麗，這個週末妳有空嗎？我們去逛百貨公司，買幾件新衣吧！
- 李 文 麗：外婆，週末我有事，網路商店就有很多流行女裝，何必去百貨公司呢？
- 外 婆：在網路商店買東西，很麻煩吧？
- 李 文 麗：網路購物很簡單，現在是宅經濟時代，不會網路購物就落伍了。
- 外 婆：什麼叫「宅經濟」啊？我沒聽過！
- 李 文 麗：外婆，「宅」是指在家裡，「宅經濟」是指在家逛虛擬商店買東西，也就是線上購物。
- 外 婆：在家上網買東西會不會比較貴啊？

- 李文麗：網路商店沒有店面，不需要請店員，可以省很多錢，當然比較便宜。
- 外婆：比較便宜的話，那就應該在網路上買才划算，可是我的身材不好，模特兒穿起來好看，我穿，不見得好看。
- 李文麗：外婆，網路商店裡的款式多得不得了。一定有合適的。
- 外婆：會不會買到仿冒品或是有瑕疵的東西呢？聽說網路上有的圖片跟實際的商品落差很大，我怎麼能相信賣家提供的圖片和資訊呢？
- 李文麗：要是對商品有疑問的話，可以直接上網問賣家，如果不相信那家網路商店，就不要買他們的東西嘛！
- 外婆：我這麼老了才開始用電腦，現在還用不慣，我平常只上網瀏覽，從來沒上網買過東西，我怕買了會後悔。
- 李文麗：外婆，不滿意可以退換。網路購物很方便，不必出門，不管白天還是深夜，任何時間都可以買。
- 外婆：網路購物真的那麼好嗎？上網用信用卡買東西有沒有風險？會不會被駭客盜用？
- 李文麗：是有風險啊！不過只要選擇經過認證的安全網站，就不會有問題了。
- 外婆：嗯，那我去網路上看看有沒有我喜歡的。
- 李文麗：雲端科技進步了，利用網路購物的人越來越多，現在有很多銀髮族也上網買東西。上次我們去逛百貨公司，花了好多時間，妳累得走不動了。妳不記得了嗎？

外 婆：是啊！人老了，體力不如從前了，以後就上網買東西好了！噢，還有，在網路商店買東西會不會收不到呢？

李 文 麗：通常有宅配和超商取貨兩種方式。要是怕收不到，就選擇超商取貨再付款的方式。外婆，妳先試試看吧！有問題再問我。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

(电话中，李文丽想改变外婆的购物习惯)

外 婆：喂，文丽，这个周末妳有空吗？我们去逛百货公司，买几件新衣吧！

李 文 丽：外婆，周末我有事，网路商店就有很多流行女装，何必去百货公司呢？

外 婆：在网路商店买东西，很麻烦吧？

李 文 丽：网路购物很简单，现在是宅经济时代，不会网路购物就落伍了。

外 婆：什么叫「宅经济」啊？我没听过！

李 文 丽：外婆，「宅」是指在家里，「宅经济」是指在家逛虚拟商店买东西，也就是线上购物。

外 婆：在家上网买东西会不会比较贵啊？

李 文 丽：网路商店没有店面，不需要请店员，可以省很多钱，当然比较便宜。

外 婆：比较便宜的话，那就应该在网路上买才划算，可是我的身材不好，模特儿穿起来好看，我穿，不见得好看。

李 文 丽：外婆，网路商店里的款式多得不得了。一定有合适的。

外 婆：会不会买到仿冒品或是有瑕疵的东西呢？听说网路上有的图片跟实际的商品落差很大，我怎么能相信卖家提供的图片和资讯呢？

李 文 丽：要是对商品有疑问的话，可以直接上网问卖家，如果不相信那家网路商店，就不要买他们的东西嘛！

外 婆：我这么老了才开始用电脑，现在还用不惯，我平常只上网浏览，从来没上网买过东西，我怕买了会后悔。

李 文 丽：外婆，不满意可以退换。网路购物很方便，不必出门，不管白天还是深夜，任何时间都可以买。

外 婆：网路购物真的那么好吗？上网用信用卡买东西有没有风险？会不会被骇客盗用？

李 文 丽：是有风险啊！不过只要选择经过认证的安全网站，就不会有问题了。

外 婆：嗯，那我去网路上看看有没有我喜欢的。

李 文 丽：云端科技进步了，利用网路购物的人越来越多，现在有很多银发族也上网买东西。上次我们去逛百货公司，花了好多时间，妳累得走不动了。妳不记得了吗？

外 婆：是啊！人老了，体力不如从前了，以后就上网买东西好了！噢，还有，在网路商店买东西会不会收不到呢？

李 文 丽：通常有宅配和超商取货两种方式。要是怕收不到，就选择超商取货再付款的方式。外婆，妳先试试看吧！有问题再问我。

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



### People in the Dialogue

1	李文麗	Lǐ Wénlì	李 文 麗	Li Wenli, female
---	-----	----------	-------	------------------

### Vocabulary

2	外婆	wàipó	外 婆	(N)	grandma
3	女裝	nǚzhuāng	女 裝	(N)	women's apparel
4	何必	hébi	何 必	(Adv)	Why bother..., Why must?
5	指	zhǐ	指	(Vst)	to mean, to indicate
6	划算	huásuàn	划 算	(Vs)	cost effective, a good deal
7	身材	shēncái	身 材	(N)	figure, build, body (shape)
8	模特兒	móter	模 特 兒	(N)	model
9	不見得	bújiàndé	不 見 得	(Adv)	not necessarily



10	仿冒品	fǎngmàopǐn	ニ、 モ、 ク、 ズ、 ル	(N)	knock-off, counterfeit product (仿冒 fǎngmào, counterfeit; 品 -pǐn, product)
11	瑕疵	xiácī	ト、 チ	(N)	defect
12	圖片	túpiàn	エ、 ズ、 マ	(N)	picture
13	落差	luòchā	カ、 セ、 イ、 ヤ	(N)	difference
14	提供	tígōng	チ、 ク、 ル	(V)	to offer
15	資訊	zīxùn	ア、 ト、 リ	(N)	information
16	疑問	yíwèn	一、 ス、 ル	(N)	question, doubt
17	嘛	ma	マ	(Ptc)	sentence particle, 'it is obvious that'
18	慣	guàn	ク、 ク、 ル	(Ptc)	to get used to, accustomed to etc...
19	瀏覽	liú覽	カ、 ズ、 カ、 チ	(V)	to browse, surf (the internet)
20	後悔	hòuhuǐ	ア、 ス、 ル	(Vs)	to regret, feel sorrowful about
21	深夜	shēnyè	ナ、 ニ、 セ	(N)	late at night, in the wee hours
22	任何	rènhé	ナ、 ニ、 セ	(Det)	any
23	駭客	hàikè	ア、 カ、 チ	(N)	hacker
24	盜用	dào yòng	カ、 ズ、 ム、 ル	(V)	to hack, use illegitimately
25	認證	rènzhèng	ナ、 ニ、 セ、 ル	(V/N)	to certify; certification
26	銀髮族	yínfǎzú	ニ、 シ、 ヤ、 ブ、 シ	(N)	senior citizens, seniors (銀 yín, silver; 髮 -fǎ, hair)
27	從前	cóngqián	チ、 ク、 ル	(N)	in the past, before, formerly
28	通常	tōngcháng	オ、 ト、 ク、 ル	(Adv)	generally, as a rule
29	取貨	qǔhuò	ク、 ク、 ル	(V-sep)	to pick up goods
30	付款	fùkuǎn	カ、 ス、 ル	(V-sep)	to make payment

### Phrases

31	雲端科技	yúnduān kējì	ニ、 カ、 ズ、 カ、 チ	cloud/internet technology
----	------	--------------	---------------------------	---------------------------

32	宅經濟	zháijīngjì	ㄓㄞˊ ㄐㄩㄥˋ ㄓㄩˋ	online economy
33	用不慣	yòngbúguàn	ㄩㄥˋ ㄅㄨˋ ㄍㄨㄢˋ	not used/accustomed to using, not comfortable with
34	退換	tùi huàn	ㄊㄨㄟˋ ㄏㄨㄢˋ	to return, to exchange for something else
35	信用卡	xìnyòng kǎ	ㄒㄩˋ ㄩㄥˋ ㄎㄚˇ	credit card

## 短文 Reading

03-03

## 雲端科技改變人類的生活

由於雲端科技的進步，無形中縮短了人們的距離。現代人用電子郵件取代紙筆寫信，也比較少看報紙、電視，直接在網路上看新聞、影集。越來越多人選擇網路購物、玩線上遊戲。任何人都可以把資料存在雲端上，也可以透過網路取得資訊。

例如民眾開車上高速公路前，只要上網查詢路況，就可以避開塞車的路段。若要搭火車，可以利用網路訂票，等公車的時候也可以查詢公車到站時間。除了交通，雲端科技也運用在醫療、教育、商業等方面，像電子病歷、遠距教學、電子發票等等，都是很實際的例子。

雲端科技讓我們的生活更加便利，原本以為它可以幫人們節省很多時間，沒想到它卻讓有些人更忙碌了。網路上的資訊又新又有趣，確實容易讓人上癮，特別是對那些不能控制自己的人。像小玲的表弟只想玩線上遊戲，沒興趣念書，功課退步了很多，每天上網玩到半夜，早上起不來，上課常常遲到。父母勸他，他不但不聽，還大吵大鬧，父母只好帶他去看醫生。



醫生說，過度使用網路會影響生活與健康。對生理、心理都不好。生理上，有的人因為長時間一直盯著螢幕看，眼睛容易疲倦，視力會變差。心理上，如果不能上網，就會覺得焦慮不安。即使知道不應該一直上網，也改不了。醫生建議家長多陪伴孩子，讓他減少上網的時間。此外，要鼓勵他多參加戶外活動，這樣他的生活才會正常。

總而言之，雲端科技給人類帶來正面的影響，同時也帶來了負面的影響。我們在享受雲端科技的便利時，要控制自己，不要沉迷在網路世界裡。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

#### 云端科技改变人类的生活

由于云端科技的进步，无形中缩短了人们的距离。现代人用电子邮件取代纸笔写信，也比较少看报纸、电视，直接在网路上看新闻、影集。越来越多人选择网路购物、玩线上游戏。任何人都可以把资料存在云端上，也可以透过网路取得资讯。

例如民众开车上高速公路前，只要上网查询路况，就可以避开塞车的路段。若要搭火车，可以利用网路订票，等公车的时候也可以查询公车到站时间。除了交通，云端科技也运用在医疗、教育、商业等方面，像电子病历、远距教学、电子发票等等，都是很实际的例子。

云端科技让我们的生活更加便利，原本以为它可以帮人们节省很多时间，没想到它却让有些人更忙碌了。网路上的资讯又新又有趣，确实容易让人上瘾，特别是对那些不能控制自己的人。像小玲的表弟只想玩线上游戏，没兴趣念书，功课退步了很多，每天上网玩到半夜，早上起不来，上课常常迟到。父母劝他，他不但不听，还大吵大闹，父母只好带他去看医生。

医生说，过度使用网路会影响生活与健康。对生理、心理都不好。生理上，有的人因为长时间一直盯着萤幕看，眼睛容易疲倦，视力会变差。心理上，如果不能上网，就会觉得焦虑不安。即使知道不应该一直上网，也改不了。医生建议家长多陪伴孩子，让他减少上网的时间。此外，要鼓励他多参加户外活动，这样他的生活才会正常。

总而言之，云端科技给人类带来正面的影响，同时也带来了负面的影响。我们在享受云端科技的便利时，要控制自己，不要沉迷在网路世界里。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



03-04

## Vocabulary

1	縮短	suōduǎn	短縮	(Vpt)	to shorten
2	人們	rénmen	人們	(N)	people in general
3	距離	jùlí	距離	(N)	distance
4	取代	qǔdài	取代	(V)	to replace
5	信	xìn	信	(N)	letter, mail
6	影集	yǐngjí	影集	(N)	(TV) series
7	取得	qǔdé	取得	(V)	to obtain, access
8	例如	lìrú	例如	(Vst)	for example
9	民眾	mínzhòng	民眾	(N)	the public, people in general
10	高速公路	gāosù gōnglù	高速公路	(N)	highway, freeway
11	前	qián	前	(N)	before (formal)
12	查詢	cháxún	查詢	(V)	to look up, check
13	路況	lùkuàng	路況	(N)	road situation, traffic situation
14	避開	bìkāi	避開	(V)	to avoid
15	路段	lùduàn	路段	(N)	section of road
16	若	ruò	若	(Conj)	if, supposing
17	運用	yùnyòng	運用	(V)	to use, employ
18	病歷	bìnglì	病歷	(N)	medical records
19	例子	lizi	例子	(N)	example
20	更加	gèngjiā	更加	(Adv)	even more
21	原本	yuánběn	原本	(Adv)	originally
22	忙碌	mánglù	忙碌	(Vs)	busy
23	確實	quèshí	確實	(Adv)	indeed
24	控制	kòngzhì	控制	(V)	to control

25	表弟	biǎodi	ㄅㄧㄠˇ ㄉㄧ	(N)	cousin (younger male cousin from one's mother's side as well as from one's father's sisters)
26	退步	tuìbù	ㄊㄨㄟˋ ㄅㄨˋ	(Vp)	to regress, get worse, fall behind
27	過度	guòdù	ㄍㄨㄛˋ ㄉㄨˋ	(Adv)	overly, excessively
28	與	yǔ	ㄩˇ	(Conj)	and (formal)
29	生理	shēnglǐ	ㄕㄨㄥ ㄌㄧˇ	(N)	physical health
30	盯	dīng	ㄉㄩㄥ	(V)	to stare
31	螢幕	yíngmù	ㄩㄥˊ ㄇㄨˋ	(N)	screen, monitor
32	疲倦	píjuàn	ㄆㄧˊ ㄐㄨㄢˋ	(Vs)	tired, fatigued
33	視力	shìlì	ㄕㄨˋ ㄌㄧˋ	(N)	vision, eyesight
34	家長	jiāzhǎng	ㄐㄧㄚ ㄓㄨㄥˇ	(N)	parent
35	此外	cǐwài	ㄘㄧˇ ㄨㄞˋ	(Conj)	in addition
36	戶外	hùwài	ㄏㄨˋ ㄨㄞˋ	(N)	outdoor
37	人類	rénlèi	ㄖㄣˊ ㄌㄟˋ	(N)	mankind, humans
38	正面	zhèngmiàn	ㄓㄥˋ ㄇㄧㄢˋ	(Vs)	positive
39	同時	tóngshí	ㄊㄨㄥˊ ㄕㄧˊ	(Adv)	at the same time
40	負面	fùmiàn	ㄈㄨˋ ㄇㄧㄢˋ	(Vs)	negative
41	沉迷	chénmí	ㄔㄣˊ ㄇㄧˊ	(Vs)	to be obsessed with, wallow in

### Phrases

42	無形中	wúxíng zhōng	ㄨˊ ㄒㄩㄥˊ ㄓㄨㄥ		imperceptibly
43	遠距教學	yuǎnjù jiāoxué	ㄩㄢˇ ㄐㄨˋ ㄐㄩㄝˊ ㄒㄩㄝˊ		distance learning
44	大吵大鬧	dàchǎo dànao	ㄉㄚˋ ㄔㄠˇ ㄉㄚˋ ㄋㄠˋ		to kick up a row, make a scene, scream bloody murder
45	焦慮不安	jiāolù bù'ān	ㄐㄧㄠ ㄌㄨˋ ㄅㄨˋ ㄢ		to be anxious
46	總而言之	zǒng'ér yánzhī	ㄗㄨㄥˋ ㄦˊ ㄩㄢˊ ㄓㄧ		in conclusion, to sum up, in short

## 文法 Grammar

I. 何必 *why must*  03-05 英譯 p.68

**Function:** The adverb 何必 indicates that the speaker finds no justification for the subject's course of action.

- ① 東西丟了可以買新的，你何必那麼難過？
- ② 外面天氣那麼好應該出去走走，何必在家看電視？
- ③ 春天天氣已經不冷了，何必穿那麼多？
- ④ 他何必去打工？他的爸爸給他那麼多錢。
- ⑤ 何必買新的？舊的電腦還可以用啊！

**Usage:** Adding 呢 to the end of the above sentences softens the tone less abrupt, e.g., 只是小感冒，何必看醫生呢？

## 練習 Exercise

Complete the following conversations by using the adverb 何必.

- ① A: 你還是要繼續吃藥。  
B: 我覺得我的病已經好了，\_\_\_\_\_？
- ② A: 美真的同學都結婚了，她也應該結束單身生活了吧？  
B: 美真經濟獨立，可以把自己的生活安排得很好，  
\_\_\_\_\_？
- ③ A: 你去美國以後要常常寫信回家。  
B: 打電話比較方便，\_\_\_\_\_？
- ④ A: 我們坐計程車去餐廳吃飯吧！  
B: \_\_\_\_\_？餐廳離這裡很近，走路去就可以。
- ⑤ A: 你今天把事情做完再睡覺。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_？還有很多時間，明天做也可以。

## II. 不見得 *not necessarily* 03-06

 英譯 p.68

**Function:** 不見得 means “It does not necessarily follow that...”.

- ① 現在工作不好找，就算念理想的大學，也不見得找得到好工作。
- ② 學歷高的人不見得都可以當經理。
- ③ 離開家鄉的人不見得都能在節日回家團聚。
- ④ 好吃的東西不見得對身體好。
- ⑤ 有的茶店老闆開茶店不見得是為了賺錢。

### Usage:

1. 不見得 has no affirmative form, i.e., \*見得.
2. Can combine with negative sentences, e.g.,  
今天不見得不會下雪。
3. 不見得 can refute a previous claim or viewpoint, e.g.,  
一天學五十個詞不見得能提高英文能力。
4. 不見得 is used colloquially, and it can stand alone or in the middle of a sentence. Keep in mind that 不見得 is not always synonymous with 不一定. Both can be used to express disagreement, but when expressing uncertainty that is viewpoint neutral 不見得 cannot be used. E.g.,  
A: 他明天一定來。 B: 他明天不見得會來。/  
他明天不一定會來。  
A: 他明天來不來? B: 不一定來。/\*不見得會來。  
A: 我想小玲會在台灣上大學。 B: 不見得。/ 不一定。  
A: 小玲打算在台灣上大學嗎? B: 不一定。/\*不見得。  
  
A: 颱風來的時候一定會放假。 B: 不見得。/ 不一定。  
A: 颱風來的時候會不會放假? B: 不一定。/\*不見得。

5. 不見得 is an adverb and precedes other adverbs such as 都, 也 and 還 etc.

- (1) 老師的說明，學生不見得都懂。
- (2) 你欣賞的藝術表演，別人不見得也欣賞。
- (3) 運動員過了四十歲以後，不見得還能參加比賽。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following dialogues with disagreements using 不見得.

① A：李先生是形象最好的候選人，可能他的得票率最高。

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

② A：趁百貨公司週年慶的時候買東西可以省錢。

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

③ A：用功的學生一定可以得到獎學金。

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

④ A：會說英文的人一定會教英文！

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

⑤ A：那個明星真漂亮，她一定會紅。

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

### III. 嘛 *isn't it obvious that* 03-07

 英譯 p.68

**Function:** 嘛 is a sentence-final particle that affirms what should be obvious, either to the speaker or from the context.

- ① 我願意幫你忙，因為我們是好朋友嘛！
- ② 王先生是為了做生意，才不得不喝酒嘛！
- ③ 他的叔叔出來競選，是想為大家做事嘛！
- ④ 看表演的時候穿著整齊，是為了尊重演出者嘛！
- ⑤ 哥哥常常打籃球，是因為他對籃球有興趣嘛！



## 練習 Exercise

Respond to (A)'s below by using the particle 嘛.

- ① A: 我來台灣三個月了，還看不懂台灣電影。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_ !
- ② A: 這麼晚了，李先生怎麼還沒來？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_ !
- ③ A: 你的手機已經用了很多年了，為什麼不買新手機？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_ !
- ④ A: 她的日本話說得真好。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_ !
- ⑤ A: 為什麼我考試考得不好？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_ !

## IV. Verb Particle 慣 03-08

 英譯 p.68

**Function:** The verb particle 慣 can be used in various ways and meanings. V 慣 and V 得慣 refer to routine activities that one is used to and feels comfortable with. They are used with plain, neutral statements. e.g.,

- ① 我從小吃慣了媽媽做的菜，所以吃不慣阿姨做的菜。
- ② 他在台灣很多年了，已經用慣了筷子了。
- ③ 爺爺不喝咖啡，他只喝得慣綠茶。
- ④ 何先生每天騎腳踏車上班，他騎慣了，所以不覺得累。
- ⑤ 他聽慣了古典音樂，聽不慣流行音樂。

On the other hand, V 不慣, often carries negative overtones, e.g.,

- ① 林先生愛喝烏龍茶，他喝不慣冰紅茶。
- ② 奶奶喜歡住在鄉下老家，她住不慣大城市。
- ③ 那種款式的衣服太短了，媽媽說她年紀大了穿不慣。

- ④ 有些民意代表只關心自己或是政黨的利益，人民真看不慣。
- ⑤ 王教授一直在大學教書，他教不慣小學生。

**Usage:** 用不慣 is quite neutral.

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences by using V 慣, V 得慣, or V 不慣.

- ① 這種工作很辛苦，他\_\_\_\_\_嗎？
- ② 那種音樂是我喜歡聽的，我\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 我平常不吃辣，你做的菜太辣，我\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 那個年輕人對老先生不太客氣，車上的人都\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 歐洲人平常不用筷子吃飯，他們\_\_\_\_\_筷子。

## V. Verb Complement 動 *capable of causing movement*

03-09

英譯 p.69

**Function:** When the verb 動 ‘to move’ is used as a verb complement, the construction refers to the (in)ability of moving something.

- ① 這個小冰箱，妳一個人搬得動嗎？
- ② 我們應該趁年輕的時候常去旅行，等老了就玩不動了。
- ③ 那輛汽車壞了，開不動了。
- ④ 王小姐只是小感冒，明天的現代舞蹈表演她還跳得動吧！
- ⑤ 爸爸要帶小妹妹去參觀寺廟，我想路那麼遠，小妹妹恐怕會走不動。

**Usage:**

1. 動 is used as a complement to verbs of movements, so that it doesn't make sense to combine, e.g., 'to laugh' and 'to move', i.e., \*笑得動.
2. 動 complement can only be used in potential, not actual, forms, e.g.,
  - (1) 我拿得動這些書
  - (2) 小孩拿不動那些東西

- (3) \*我拿動這些書  
(4) \*小孩沒拿動那些東西

3. 走不動 'unable to make self move' vs. 走不了 (liǎo) 'unable to depart'

- (1) 他已經走路走了一天了，現在他走不動了。  
(can't walk any more, too tired)  
(2) 大颱風來了，我看，你今天走不了了。  
(can't leave, strong winds)

3-1. There is semantic overlap between the two, both denote the capability of achieving an action and are thus often interchangeable, e.g.,

這個小冰箱，妳一個人搬得動嗎？

(Can you make it move?)

這個小冰箱，妳一個人搬得了嗎？

(Can you perform the act of moving it?)

3-2. For objects/actions that are not movement specific, only V 得 / 不了 can be used.

這些飲料，我喝不了了。

\*這些飲料，我喝不動了。

這麼多書，你讀得了嗎？

\*這麼多書，你讀得動嗎？

3-3. When emphasizing capability over specific movement, only V 得 / 不了 can be used.

他中午吃太飽了，現在已經吃不了了。（\*吃不動）

爺爺年紀大了，已經吃不動肉了。

(meaning chewing, movement of the mouth)

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences by using V 得動 or V 不動.

- ① 桌子那麼大，我一個人怎麼\_\_\_\_\_？  
② 他已經跑了很久了，他\_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 打籃球的時候，阿建受傷了，他恐怕\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 李太太買那麼多菜，她怎麼\_\_\_\_\_？
- 5 奶奶\_\_\_\_\_了，我們休息一下吧！

## VI. 無形中 *without knowing it, and before you know it* 03-10



**Function:** The literary phrase 無形中 is an idiom refers to the automatic emergence of something without being conscious or aware of it. It acts like an adverb.

- 1 文麗常看媽媽做菜，無形中對做菜也有了興趣。
- 2 表弟每天上網玩遊戲玩到半夜，無形中身體越來越不健康了。
- 3 他常看中文書，他的中文能力無形中也提高了。
- 4 我喜歡看台灣電視新聞，無形中更了解台灣了。
- 5 何先生在日本很多年了，無形中日文越來越流利了。

**Usage:** 無形中 does not combine with actual physical activities, e.g.,

\*他一邊看電視一邊吃晚飯，無形中把桌上的菜都吃光了。

### 練習 Exercise

Complete the following sentences by using the phrase 無形中.

- 1 我們常在一起念書，在一起玩，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 學校的考試很多，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 孩子天天玩線上遊戲，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 有的父母讓孩子從小就學英文，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 爺爺退休以後常常去爬山，\_\_\_\_\_。

VII. 此外 *in addition, furthermore* 03-11



**Function:** The conjunction 此外 is used to introduce additional information to an already complete idea, thereby drawing attention to said information.

- ① 按照公司的規定要先給顧客看合約。此外，也應該把重要的事情跟顧客說清楚。
- ② 對藝術有興趣的人可以在「國家戲劇院」欣賞現代舞的表演。此外，也可以去「國家音樂廳」欣賞到各種各樣的音樂。
- ③ 吳寶春當兵的時候，利用時間看電視認字。此外，他為了看懂日文烘焙書，還去學日文。
- ④ 李教授的頭腦清楚、口才好，在學術界有很高的地位。此外，也常上電視對許多政治改革的議題提出看法。
- ⑤ 想轉系的學生得上網填表辦轉系的手續，申請上學期的成績單。此外，還要請教授寫推薦信。

**Usage:**

1. 此外 is formal.
2. It can be used in the expanded form, 除此之外.
3. 此外 is often followed by 也 or 還. See examples above.

**練習 Exercise**

Complete the following by supplying additional information following 此外.

- ① 觀光客到台北都喜歡去參觀故宮博物院，到貓空喝茶、上陽明山泡溫泉。此外，\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 叔叔利用假日帶著孩子到農村去接近自然。此外，\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 那一家有名的中式早餐店賣燒餅、油條和豆漿。此外，\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 聽音樂可以轉換心情。此外，\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 大多數的家長都規定孩子不可以進入色情、暴力網站。此外，\_\_\_\_\_。

VIII. 總而言之 *in short*  03-12

**Function:** 總而言之 relates a subsequent statement to previous statements and usually concludes an utterance. It is a formal expression.

- ① 爺爺已經八十歲了還能打球、游泳、慢跑。總而言之，他很健康。
- ② 外套打八折、鞋子打七折、背包打九折。總而言之，趁百貨公司週年慶的時候買東西，可以省不少錢。
- ③ 奶奶住不慣你家，也住不慣我家、也住不慣表哥家。總而言之，只有她自己的家，她才住得慣。
- ④ 他不關心國家、不關心朋友、也不關心家人。總而言之，他只關心自己。
- ⑤ 小王很奇怪，他不愛吃橘子、不愛吃鳳梨，也不愛吃芒果。總而言之，他不喜歡吃水果。

**Usage:** A speaker uses 總而言之 to form a conclusion regarding the statements he/she has just finished making. 總而言之 may be followed by 都 to emphasize conclusion. The abbreviated form, 總之, is often used, e.g.,

1. 夜市的水煎包、炸雞排、牛肉麵都好吃。總之，我愛台灣美食。
2. 我的家人有的喜歡吃鹹的、有的喜歡吃甜的、有的喜歡吃辣的。總之，我們喜歡吃的都不一樣。
3. 媽媽勸他，他不聽，爸爸勸他也沒有用。總之，誰的話他都不聽。

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following statement by drawing final conclusions.

- ① 他頭腦好、學歷高、能力強。總而言之，\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 大學畢業以後，有的學生要念研究所、有的學生要找工作、有的學生要去外國念書。總而言之，\_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 有的人買電視、有的人買冰箱、有的人買汽車。總而言之，  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 我不喜歡打籃球、不喜歡打棒球、不喜歡打網球。總而言之，  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 麵包貴了、青菜貴了、水果也貴了。總而言之，  
\_\_\_\_\_。

### 語法例句英譯

### Grammar Examples in English

#### I. 何必 *why must*

##### Function:

- 1 You can buy a replacement for what you lost. Why must you be so upset?
- 2 We should go out and enjoy the beautiful weather. Why sit at home and watch TV?
- 3 It's spring already, and it's warm outside. Must you wear so much?
- 4 Does he really have to work part-time? His dad gives him plenty of money.
- 5 Why buy a new one? The old computer still works!

#### II. 不見得 *not necessarily*

##### Function:

- 1 Jobs are hard to find right now, even graduates of top schools aren't guaranteed a good job.
- 2 Being highly educated doesn't necessarily mean one will be a manager.
- 3 Those who move away from home aren't necessarily able to come home for the holidays.
- 4 Tasty food isn't necessarily healthy food.
- 5 Tea house owners don't necessarily open up shops just to make a profit.

#### III. 嘛 *isn't it obvious that*

- 1 Of course I'm willing to help, because we are good friends!
- 2 Mr. Wang only drinks because doing business requires it!
- 3 His uncle is campaigning, because he has the public's interest in mind of course!
- 4 You should look presentable when going to a performance. It shows respect to the performers!
- 5 My older brother often plays basketball. It's just what he loves to do!

#### IV. Verb Particle 慣

##### Function:

- 1 I've had mom's cooking since I was little, so I haven't been able to get used to that of my auntie.
- 2 He's been in Taiwan many years, so he's already used to chopsticks.
- 3 Grandpa doesn't take coffee. He is only accustomed to drinking green tea.
- 4 Mr. He rides his bike to work every day. He's gotten used to it, so it doesn't make him tired.
- 5 He's used to listening to classical music, and not pop music.

## V 不慣

- ① Mr. Lin loves Oolong tea, but he hasn't acquired a liking for iced black tea.
- ② Grandma likes living at her home in the country. She is unaccustomed to live in the big city.
- ③ That style of clothing is too short. Mom's not suited to it in her age.
- ④ Some public representatives are only concerned with personal or party benefit. The people can't stand it.
- ⑤ Professor Wang has always taught at university. He wouldn't know what to do with elementary school students.

V. Verb Complement 動 *capable of causing movement*

## Function:

- ① Are you able to move this small fridge by yourself?
- ② We really should go traveling abroad while we are young because we won't be capable to once we're too old.
- ③ That car broke down and is not drivable.
- ④ Ms. Wang only has a slight cold. I'm guessing she will still be able to perform in the modern dance show tomorrow!
- ⑤ Dad wants to take the little girl to see a temple but I don't think she'll be able to walk that far down the road.

VI. 無形中 *without knowing it, and before you know it*

## Function:

- ① Wenli always watches her mom preparing food, and subconsciously she too gained an interest.
- ② My cousin plays online games late into the night every day. He hasn't realized it, but his health has gradually deteriorated.
- ③ After reading so many books, his Chinese naturally improved, although he didn't realize it at the time.
- ④ I like watching the news on TV in Taiwan, and without noticing, I've come to slowly understand Taiwan as a result.

- ⑤ Mr. He has been in Japan for many years now, and, unbeknownst to him, his Japanese has become quite fluent.

VII. 此外 *in addition, furthermore*

## Function:

- ① It's company policy which states that you first show the client the contract. In addition, the important points should be articulated.
- ② Those interested in the arts can watch a modern dance performance at the National Performing Arts Center; in addition, they can enjoy all types of music at the National Theatre and Concert Hall.
- ③ During Wu Baochun's military service, he spent time watching TV to learn characters. In addition, he started studying Japanese in order to understand Japanese books on baking.
- ④ Professor Li is very logical, eloquent, and well renowned in academia; in addition, he can often be seen on TV advising on political reformation.
- ⑤ Students wanting to change their majors have to go online, fill in the appropriate forms, and submit their most recent transcript. In addition, they need a professor's recommendation letter.

VIII. 總而言之 *in short*

## Function:

- ① Grandpa is already 80 years old and he still plays ball, swims, and jogs. To put it simply, he's in great health.
- ② Jackets are 20% off, shoes 30% off, and backpacks 10% off. In short, you could save a lot of money by taking advantage of the department store anniversary sale.
- ③ Grandma doesn't like staying at your place, our cousin's, or mine. In short, she only feels at home if it's her own.
- ④ He doesn't care about his country, friends, or family. In a word, all he cares about is himself.
- ⑤ Xiao Wang is strange; he doesn't like to eat oranges, pineapples, or mangos. In short, he doesn't like fruit altogether.



## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 雲端科技上網的便利性

目標：能說明訪問結果和原因。

任務：學生分組調查，下課後訪問別班同學（可設定一組至少訪問十五人，設定訪問對象的年齡層，一組是25歲以下，一組25～40，一組40以上，人數少的班可分兩組，30歲以下跟30歲以上）。訪問者在表上打✓，哪些是學生常用的？哪些是學生不常用的？「5」為最常用，「1」為最不常用，「0」為不用，調查完以後，再用口頭報告，說明利用這些網路的原因。

利用雲端科技上網做什麼	0	1	2	3	4	5	原因
網路購物							
看新聞							
看影集							
線上遊戲							
查詢資料							
查字典							
遠距教學							
電子郵件							
網路訂位							
網路掛號							
Skype							
社群網站 (Facebook 等)							
其他 ( )							
綜合結論：							

## II. 網路或其他科技帶來的正面和負面的影響

目標：能有和他人討論的能力，能說明網路或其他科技帶來的影響。

任務：請學生先分組討論，說一說人們利用網路或其他科技的好處和壞處，有什麼正面和負面的影響，並說明原因，然後派一代表綜合整理出小組的意見跟全班報告。

## III. 我會上中文網站

目標：能看得懂中文網站，並利用網站。

任務：請學生實際進入中文網站看看。先簡單說說各網站的功能，網站裡有什麼規定；再請學生選擇進入一個網站，報告他們如何了解網站上的規定並完成任務。

上網完成任務建議：

- ① 上網買 / 賣東西（郵購、比價）
- ② 到花蓮三天兩夜（訂車票、訂旅館）
- ③ 去綠島旅遊（訂船票、訂民宿）
- ④ 上網訂票（週末去看電影或看表演）
- ⑤ 其他

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Burning Incense and Online Worship

Burning incense is not only a Buddhist ritual in Taiwan, it is an integral part of Taiwan's folk religion, the culture of worshipping, and festival customs. The smoke produced from lighting an incense stick is a means for people to express their hopes and wishes to the gods and their ancestors, and to gain help or blessing in return. The pleasant aroma of incense also instills joy and a sense of calm in people's hearts.



◆ People in Taiwan go to temples and light incense sticks in order to pray for success, a happy marriage, etc.

In Taiwan, save for Christians, Catholics, and Muslims, most people have had some experience with incense offerings. People pray for peace, good health, and success in their career, or they supplicate the god of marriage for a partner or the god of examinations for top marks. They believe that their wishes ride the curls of smoke up to the clouds, to that otherworldly place where the gods and ancestors will hear their plea and bestow upon them peace and happiness. Incense burning is more than just a ritual, the smoke and smell it produces is a means of communication, making it a part of life. There is even a nickname for those who go to the temple to worship, *xiangke* (香客).

Even today's technology industry has not neglected the worshiping ways of modern man. People in the industry have set up online platforms for worship, allowing busy internet users to worship the god they believe in any time they feel need, providing an ever-present outlet for spirituality. There are options to go online to worship and pray for all kinds of occasions, such as feeding hungry ghosts, worshipping ancestors, seeking help from the gods during the inauspicious year of your Chinese zodiac, lighting candles to put up on temple walls, finding comfort amid ill health; and send prayers if things just aren't going well. There are even message boards where you can send private messages to the gods.



◆ In modern times, people can even seek help from and worship the gods online.



## Self-Assessment Checklist

我能介紹科技所帶來的改變。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能談談自己使用雲端科技的經驗。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能說明自己如何利用科技。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能和他人討論科技正面和負面的影響。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%



*note*



LESSON

4

第四課

## 床該擺哪裡？

Where Should the Bed Go?

---

### 學習目標

主題：風水

- 能說明家中的布置。
- 能簡單說明風水是什麼。
- 能討論迷信，並說出自己的想法。
- 能討論風水與迷信的關係和不同。



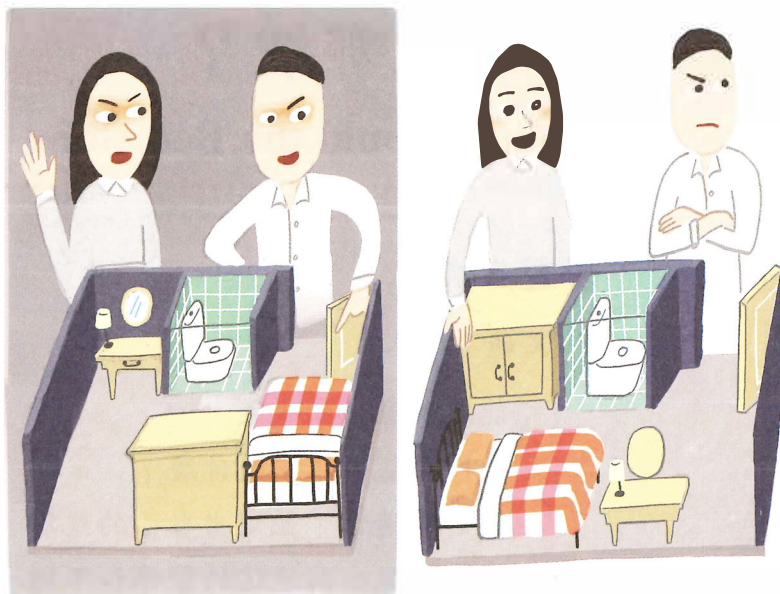
LESSON  
4

# 床該擺哪裡？

## Where Should the Bed Go?

對話 Dialogue

04-01



- 林先生：總算把所有的東西都搬過來了，累死了！
- 林太太：欸！別急著坐下，先把一些大家具擺好吧。
- 林先生：床要放在哪裡呀？衣櫥旁邊好不好？
- 林太太：不行！不行！不要放在那裡，放在我的梳妝台旁邊。
- 林先生：那裡太擠了，進出不方便。
- 林太太：那就把衣櫥跟梳妝台換個位置，空間就比較大了。
- 林先生：為什麼不擺在這裡呢？
- 林太太：放在這裡會正對門，不好。

- 林先生：什麼正對門，妳太迷信了吧！
- 林太太：這並不是迷信，而是有科學根據的。
- 林先生：什麼科學根據！還不就是風水師的那些說法。如果太在意那些說法，就什麼事都做不成了。
- 林太太：才不是你說的那樣呢！所謂現代風水學，是指站在科學的角度，利用環境、改造環境的一門學問，研究的是人與居住環境的關係。你不懂不要亂說好不好！
- 林先生：好！那妳說風水到底跟我們的日常生活有什麼關係？
- 林太太：譬如說家裡的布置，如果在牆上掛很凶猛的動物，或是刀、劍這樣的東西，就會讓居住者的脾氣暴躁、容易衝動。又譬如說，鏡子不能正對床腳，這樣起床時容易被自己嚇到。
- 林先生：等一下！等一下！妳一口氣說了那麼多，我怎麼聽得清楚？妳是說連牆上掛什麼東西都會對人的個性有影響嗎？
- 林太太：對啊！光擺飾就有很多學問，你想了解的話，我以後再慢慢告訴你。
- 林先生：我懂了，難怪我老婆脾氣那麼壞。那把劍可別再掛上去了！
- 林太太：喂！你居然敢欺負我！你死定了！
- 林先生：好啦！好啦！開玩笑的。不過我覺得不知道這樣的事情比較好，知道家裡風水有問題，可是卻沒辦法改變，這樣不是住得很不自在嗎？
- 林太太：話是這樣說沒錯，但是如果可以早一點了解，在租房子、買房子的時候就可以多注意這方面的問題，才不會一搬進去就後悔了。你說是不是？



### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

- 林先生 : 总算把所有的东西都搬过来了, 累死了!
- 林太太 : 欸! 别急着坐下, 先把一些大家具摆好吧。
- 林先生 : 床要放在哪里呀? 衣橱旁边好不好?
- 林太太 : 不行! 不行! 不要放在那里, 放在我的梳妆台旁边。
- 林先生 : 那里太挤了, 进出不方便。
- 林太太 : 那就把衣橱跟梳妆台换个位置, 空间就比较大了。
- 林先生 : 为什么不摆在这里呢?
- 林太太 : 放在这里会正对门, 不好。
- 林先生 : 什么正对门, 妳太迷信了吧!
- 林太太 : 这并不是迷信, 而是有科学根据的。
- 林先生 : 什么科学根据! 还不就是风水师的那些说法。如果太在意那些说法, 就什么事都做不成了。
- 林太太 : 才不是你说的那样呢! 所谓现代风水学, 是指站在科学的角度, 利用环境、改造环境的一门学问, 研究的是人与居住环境的关系。你不懂不要乱说好不好!
- 林先生 : 好! 那妳说风水到底跟我们的日常生活有什么关系?
- 林太太 : 譬如说家里的布置, 如果在墙上挂很凶猛的动物, 或是刀、剑这样的东西, 就会让居住者的脾气暴躁、容易冲动。又譬如说, 镜子不能正对床脚, 这样起床时容易被自己吓到。
- 林先生 : 等一下! 等一下! 妳一口气说了那么多, 我怎么听得清楚? 妳是说连墙上挂什么东西都会对人的个性有影响吗?
- 林太太 : 对啊! 光摆饰就有很多学问, 你想了解的话, 我以后再慢慢告诉你。
- 林先生 : 我懂了, 难怪我老婆脾气那么坏。那把剑可别再挂上去了!
- 林太太 : 喂! 你居然敢欺负我! 你死定了!
- 林先生 : 好啦! 好啦! 开玩笑的。不过我觉得不知道这样的事情比较好, 知道家里风水有问题, 可是却没办法改变, 这样不是住得很不自在吗?
- 林太太 : 话是这样说没错, 但是如果可以早一点了解, 在租房子、买房子的时候就可以多注意这方面的问题, 才不会一搬进去就后悔了。你说是不是?

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



04-02

## Vocabulary

1	該	gāi	ㄍㄞ	(Vaux)	should, ought to
2	擺	bǎi	ㄅㄞˇ	(V)	to place, display
3	總算	zǒngsuàn	ㄗㄨㄥˇ ㄙㄨㄢˋ	(Adv)	finally
4	欸	èi	ㄝˋ	(Ptc)	hey, calling attention
5	呀	yā	ㄚ	(Ptc)	particle indicating uncertainty
6	衣櫥	yīchú	ㄟ ㄔㄨˊ	(N)	closet
7	梳妝台	shūzhuāngtái	ㄕㄨ ㄓㄨㄤ ㄊㄞˊ	(N)	dressing table
8	位置	wèizhì	ㄨㄟˋ ㄓˋ	(N)	position, location
9	空間	kōngjiān	ㄎㄨㄥ ㄐㄩㄢ	(N)	space
10	科學	kēxué	ㄎㄜ ㄒㄨㄟˊ	(N)	science
11	風水師	fēngshuǐshī	ㄈㄥ ㄕㄨㄟˊ ㄕㄨ	(N)	Feng Shui master, geomancer (風水 fēngshuǐ, Feng Shui; 師 -shī, master)
12	在意	zàiyì	ㄗㄞˋ ㄩˋ	(Vs)	to care about
13	所謂	suǒwèi	ㄙㄨㄛˇ ㄨㄟˋ	(V)	so-called, what is known as
14	角度	jiǎodù	ㄐㄞˇ ㄉㄨˋ	(N)	angle, perspective
15	改造	gǎizào	ㄍㄞˇ ㄗㄞˋ	(V)	to transform, restructure
16	學問	xuéwèn	ㄒㄨㄟˊ ㄨㄣˋ	(N)	a branch of learning
17	居住	jūzhù	ㄐㄨ ㄓㄨˋ	(Vi)	to live, reside
18	日常	rìcháng	ㄞˋ ㄔㄨㄥˊ	(Vs-attr)	daily
19	布置	bùzhì	ㄅㄨˋ ㄓˋ	(N/V)	décor, layout, arrangement; to decorate, to arrange furniture
20	凶猛	xiōngměng	ㄒㄨㄥ ㄇㄥˇ	(Vs)	fierce, ferocious
21	動物	dòngwù	ㄉㄨㄥˋ ㄨˋ	(N)	animal
22	刀	dāo	ㄉㄠ	(N)	knife
23	劍	jiàn	ㄐㄞˋ	(N)	sword
24	脾氣	píqì	ㄆㄨˊ ㄑㄧˋ	(N)	temper
25	暴躁	bàoào	ㄅㄞˋ ㄞˋ	(Vs)	cranky, irritable

26	衝動	chōngdòng	多 夕 夕 夕	(Vs)	impulsive, rash
27	鏡子	jìngzi	日 子 子 子	(N)	mirror
28	床腳	chuángjiǎo	多 夕 夕 夕	(N)	foot of the bed
29	光	guāng	光 光 光 光	(Adv)	alone, merely
30	擺飾	bǎishì	夕 夕 夕 夕	(N)	décor, ornaments
31	老婆	lǎopó	夕 夕 夕 夕	(N)	wife
32	把	bǎ	夕 夕 夕 夕	(M)	measure word for objects that can be grasped or objects with a handle, e.g., umbrella, knife
33	欺負	qīfù	夕 夕 夕 夕	(V)	to pick on, bully, take advantage of

### Names

34	風水學	Fēngshuǐxué	夕 夕 夕 夕		the study of Feng Shui, geomancy (學 -xué, study, -ology)
----	-----	-------------	------------	--	--

### Phrases

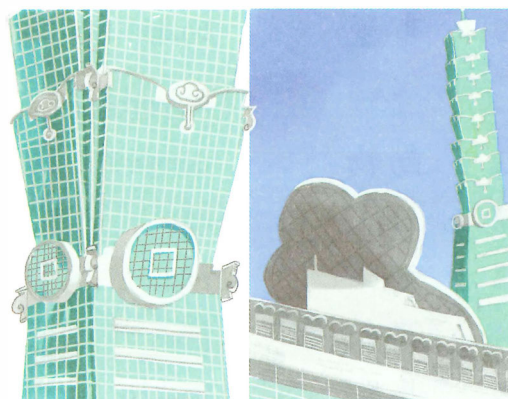
35	正對門	zhèng duì mén	夕 夕 夕 夕		directly facing the door
36	譬如說	pìrú shuō	夕 夕 夕 夕		for example
37	一口氣	yì kǒu qì	夕 夕 夕 夕		in one breath
38	死定了	sǐdìngle	夕 夕 夕 夕		(You're) a dead man; You're toast

## 短文 Reading



### 風水到底用在哪裡？

一般來說，選一個房子，大概會考慮幾個條件：地理位置、交通的便利性、周邊的環境和價格等。隨著生活水準不斷提高，人們對選擇住宅的考慮條件更多了。不只是上面所提到的幾個，風水的好壞也成為重要的考慮條件了。



「風水」這個詞是中國晉代的郭璞（西元 276 年到 324 年）第一個提出的，到現在已經有一千七百多年了。相信風水的人認為，如果風水不值得相信，都過了一千七百多年了，怎麼可能不被推翻？中國有句話說：「一命，二運，三風水。」從這裡可以看出風水在中國人心中占了很重要的地位。

英國的邱吉爾曾經說過一句名言：「人建造房子，房子塑造我們。」意思是說，房子對人的影響是很大的。從風水學的角度來看，對人的個性、健康、命運有影響的不只是房子本身，房子外面的環境以及房子裡面的布置、擺飾等都是有意義的。

拿台北的地標——台北 101 大樓來說，雖然它是一棟非常現代的建築，可是建築師參考了許多風水的想法。先從外觀看起，它像一個個往上疊的盆子，每八層樓是一個盆子。往外斜的牆面，讓每個盆子看起來都像個聚寶盆，每個「聚寶盆」的四個角都有代表吉祥的龍，加起來就有三十二條飛龍。另外，大樓牆上的古錢幣和左邊的屋頂上的咬錢龜都是招財的意思。信義路正門和松智路側門上面的遮雨棚，都有十條魚、十個錢幣和十個如意，意思是十全十美。走進大樓裡面，到處可見代表吉祥的「如意」。

這些設計都不是偶然的，是建築師在參考了中國的風水學以後所設計出來的，下次如果你到台北 101 大樓去，可以算算裡面一共有多少個「如意」。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

風水到底用在哪里？

一般来说，选一个房子，大概会考虑几个条件：地理位置、交通的便利性、周边的环境和价格等。随着生活水准不断提高，人们对选择住宅的考虑条件更多了。不只是上面所提到的几个，风水的好坏也成为重要的考虑条件了。

「风水」这个词是中国晋代的郭璞（西元 276 年到 324 年）第一个提出的，到现在已经有一千七百多年了。相信风水的人认为，如果风水不值得相信，都过了一千七百多年了，怎么可能不被推翻？中国有句话说：「一命，二运，三风水。」从这里可以看出风水在中国人心中占了很重要的地位。

英国的邱吉尔曾经说过一句名言：「人建造房子，房子塑造我们。」意思是说，房子对人的影响是很大的。从风水学的角度来看，对人的个性、健康、命运有影响的不仅是房子本身，房子外面的环境以及房子里面的布置、摆饰等都是有影响的。

拿台北的地标——台北 101 大楼来说，虽然它是一栋非常现代的建筑，可是建筑师参考了许多风水的想法。先从外观看起，它像一个个往上迭的盆子，每八层楼是一个盆子。往外斜的墙面，让每个盆子看起来都像个聚宝盆，每个「聚宝盆」的四个角都有代表吉祥的龙，加起来就有三十二条飞龙。另外，大楼墙上的古钱币和左边的屋顶上的咬钱龟都是招财的意思。信义路正门和松智路侧门上面的遮雨棚，都有十条鱼、十个钱币和十个如意，意思是十全十美。走进大楼里面，到处可见代表吉祥的「如意」。

这些设计都不是偶然的，是建筑师在参考了中国的风水学以后所设计出来的，下次如果你到台北 101 大楼去，可以算算里面一共有多少个「如意」。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



04-04

### Vocabulary

1	地理	dìlǐ	地、理	(N)	geography
2	便利性	biànlìxìng	方、便、性	(N)	convenience (性 -xìng, property, suffix indicating that a term is a noun)
3	周邊	zhōubiān	周、邊	(N)	surrounding, periphery
4	住宅	zhùzhái	住、宅	(N)	residence
5	詞	cí	词	(N)	term, word
6	西元	Xīyuán	西、元	(N)	A.D.
7	推翻	tuīfān	推、翻	(V)	to repudiate, overturn
8	心中	xīnzhōng	心、中	(N)	in somebody's heart
9	名言	míngyán	名、言	(N)	well-known saying
10	建造	jiànzhào	建、造	(V)	to build
11	塑造	sùzhào	塑、造	(V)	to shape

12	命運	mìngyùn	命 運	(N)	fate, destiny
13	本身	běنشēn	本 身	(N)	itself, oneself
14	地標	dìbiāo	地 標	(N)	landmark
15	參考	cānkǎo	參 考	(V/N)	to make reference to; reference
16	外觀	wàiguān	外 觀	(N)	exterior, appearance
17	疊	dié	疊	(V)	to stack
18	盆子	pénzi	盆 子	(N)	basin
19	斜	xié	斜	(Vs)	slanted, tilted
20	牆面	qiángmiàn	牆 面	(N)	wall face
21	聚寶盆	jùbǎopén	聚 寶 盆	(N)	treasure basin, similar to a cornucopia but filled with treasure (聚 -jù, to gather; 寶 -bǎo, treasure; 盆 -pén, basin)
22	角	jiǎo	角	(N)	corner
23	龍	lóng	龍	(N)	dragon
24	古	gǔ	古	(Vs-attr)	ancient (formal)
25	錢幣	qiánbì	錢 幣	(N)	coins, currency
26	屋頂	wūdǐng	屋 頂	(N)	roof
27	龜	guī	龜	(N)	turtle, tortoise
28	招財	zhāocái	招 財	(Vi)	to attract treasure
29	側門	cèmén	側 門	(N)	side door, side gate
30	遮雨棚	zhēyǔpéng	遮 雨 棚	(N)	canopy, awning
31	如意	rúyì	如 意	(N)	ruyi, scepter, s-shaped ornamental object that brings good luck
32	設計	shèjì	設 計	(N/V)	design; to design
33	偶然	ǒurán	偶 然	(Vs)	random, accidental, chancy

### Names

34	晉代	Jìn Dài	晉 代		Jin Dynasty
----	----	---------	-----	--	-------------

35	郭璞	Guō Pú	ㄍㄨㄛ ㄆㄨˊ	Guo Pu
36	英國	Yīngguó	ㄩㄥ ㄍㄨㄛˊ	the UK
37	邱吉爾	Qiūjí'ěr	ㄑㄩ ㄐㄧˊ ㄦˇ	Churchill
38	信義路	Xìnyì Lù	ㄒㄩˋ ㄩˋ ㄌㄨˋ	Xinyi Road
39	松智路	Sōngzhì Lù	ㄙㄨㄥ ㄓˋ ㄌㄨˋ	Songzhi Road

### Phrases

40	一命二運 三風水	yímìng èryùn sānfēngshuǐ	ㄩˋ ㄇㄩˋ ㄥˋ ㄥˋ ㄙㄢ ㄈㄥ ㄕㄨㄟˇ	Fate is most important. Luck is second. Feng Shui is third.
41	加起來	jiāqǐlái	ㄐㄩㄞˋ ㄑǐ ㄌㄞˊ	to add up, totalize
42	咬錢龜	yǎoqián guī	ㄢㄞˋ ㄑㄩㄢˊ ㄍㄨㄟ	money-biting turtle
43	十全十美	shíquán shíměi	ㄕㄨˊ ㄑㄩㄢˊ ㄕㄨˊ ㄇㄟˇ	perfect, pinnacle of perfection

## 文法 Grammar

### I. 總算 *finally, speaking roughly (in the ballpark)* 04-05

 英譯 p.93

**Function:** The adverb 總算 has two distinct meanings:

1. Finally, as anticipated (interchangeable with “終於”)
  - (1) 下了兩個星期的雨，今天天氣總算變好了。
  - (2) 警察問了半天，都沒有人敢說話，最後總算有人說話了。
  - (3) 王小明上學期每天都欺負我，這個學期總算可以不必跟他一起上課了。
2. Roughly speaking (not to be interchangeable with “終於”)
  - (1) 雖然這次考試也不是考得很好，但總算還可以。
  - (2) 這次在台中雖然只住了一天，但總算去過了。
  - (3) 這次的報告我寫得不好，但總算寫完了。

## 練習 Exercise

Please use the second meaning, “roughly speaking,” to complete the sentences.

- 1 搬了新家，布置了一個多月，雖然不是很滿意，但是  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 小明上個月腳受傷，完全不能走路，醫治了一個多月，雖然還沒完全好，但\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 這個孩子脾氣暴躁，常常打同學，老師跟他談了很久，雖然他的脾氣還是不好，但\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 小時候媽媽總是為了我們的事焦慮不安，現在我們長大了，雖然還是有些事會讓她擔心，但\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 因為原來的那個公司工作太多，害她身體出了問題，現在到這個公司，雖然也很忙，但\_\_\_\_\_。

II. 還不就是 *nothing more than*  04-06

**Function:** The phrase 還不就是 qualifies what's meaningless or uninteresting.

- 1 A: 昨天你跟太太去台北 101 附近做什麼？  
B: 還不就是逛百貨公司、買東西。
- 2 A: 聽說小王的爸爸又住院了，怎麼了？  
B: 還不就是老問題。
- 3 A: 小美，妳室友晚上都不睡覺，到底在做什麼啊？  
B: 還不就是上網玩遊戲、跟朋友聊天。
- 4 A: 你女朋友怎麼又生氣了？  
B: 還不就是我又忘了今天是我們認識第幾天了。唉！
- 5 A: 開學第一天，老師說了什麼？  
B: 還不就是一些上課的規定。



### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following dialogues with items that are insignificant.

- ① A: 美美跟男朋友不是很好嗎? 為什麼要分手呢?  
B: 還不就是\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A: 你拿著那麼多帳單, 要繳哪些錢?  
B: 還不就是\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A: 你們剛剛去夜市吃了什麼?  
B: 還不就是\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ A: 你弟常去租書店租漫畫, 他愛看哪些漫畫?  
B: 還不就是\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ A: 阿建, 好久不見, 最近在忙些什麼呢?  
B: 還不就是\_\_\_\_\_。

### III. Outright Denial with 才 04-07

 英譯 p.94

**Function:** With the adverb 才, the speaker outrightly rejects the other party's viewpoint. It cannot be translated into English literally. See the various translations on page 94.

- ① A: 風水是種迷信。  
B: 風水才不是迷信!
- ② A: 那個餐廳在學校的右邊。  
B: 才不是在右邊, 在左邊。
- ③ A: 你不是很喜歡吃臭豆腐嗎? 我們去吃吧!  
B: 我才不喜歡(呢)!
- ④ A: 台北 101 大樓是世界上最高的大樓。  
B: 台北 101 才不是最高的, 已經有比台北 101 還高的了。
- ⑤ A: 那部電影好無聊, 我一點都不想看看。  
B: 才不無聊呢, 我感動得哭了。
- ⑥ A: 妳脾氣好壞喔!  
B: 你脾氣才壞(呢)!

- 7 A：小籠包是台灣最好吃的食物。  
B：小籠包算什麼，牛肉麵才是。
- 8 A：那兩個人，高的是哥哥吧？  
B：不是，矮的才是。
- 9 A：既然你上網購物了，為什麼不用宅配的方法？宅配又快又方便。  
B：宅配不方便，因為我常常不在家。我覺得超商取貨才方便。
- 10 A：我的壓力好大。要養家，薪水卻這麼低。  
B：我的壓力才大（呢）！你只有一個孩子，我有三個孩子！

### 練習 Exercise

Respond negatively to the (A) utterances below by using 才.

- 1 A：你喜歡那個穿紅色衣服的男生，對不對？  
B：\_\_\_\_\_ !
- 2 A：聽說你做飯做得很好，比李太太做得好。  
B：\_\_\_\_\_ !
- 3 A：聽說上網購物很不安全，最好不要在網路上買東西。  
B：\_\_\_\_\_ !
- 4 A：哇！這個包包很貴吧！你怎麼買得起？是不是仿冒品？  
B：\_\_\_\_\_ !
- 5 A：美美說她每天都忙得不得了，所以沒有時間寫功課。  
B：\_\_\_\_\_ !
- 6 A：我覺得買房子最重要的就是周邊的便利性。  
B：我不同意，\_\_\_\_\_ 。
- 7 A：台北 101 大樓是世界最高的大樓。  
B：台北 101 才不是最高的，\_\_\_\_\_ 。

8 A：那雙紅色的鞋子是你的嗎？

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

9 A：用 5000 塊買一件衣服，你真不懂節省！

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

10 A：你們女生愛看連續劇，真無聊！

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

#### IV. A Summary of the Various Usages of 才 04-08

 英譯 p.94

**Function:** 才 is one of the most difficult adverbs in modern Chinese. Up to this lesson in our series of textbooks, we have encountered the following 6 types of 才. It is strongly advised that you review the sections in question.

##### 1. Merely, only

- (1) 我才學了半年。(B2, L3)
- (2) 沒想到才念了一個學期，她就發現跟她的興趣不合，念起來非常痛苦。(B3, L1)
- (3) 透過網路團購，才一年多這家公司的產品就成為台灣最受歡迎的鳳梨酥。(B3, L9)

##### 2. Later than expected

- (1) 他常常半夜十二點多才睡覺。(B2, L3)
- (2) 她覺得何雅婷好不容易才考上這麼好的科系，怎麼可以說放棄就放棄？(B3, L1)
- (3) 妳怎麼現在才來？我們等妳等半天了。(B3, L3)

##### 3. Only and only then (condition)

- (1) 夏天去玩的人很多，去墾丁一定要先訂好旅館，才不會找不到地方住。(B2, L11)
- (2) 老師嚴才學得快，學得好啊。(B3, L1)
- (3) 有時候得穿上才知道好看不好看。(B3, L2)

## 4. Only just..., and

- (1) 很多人每天早上才起床，就急著上網。(B2, L13)
- (2) 小玲才剛回到家，就把電腦打開。
- (3) 你的身體才剛恢復，不要太累了。

## 5. Consequently

- (1) 她看到連續劇裡的女主角穿了這件衣服看起來很甜美，所以才特別請朋友從國外寄來的。(B3, L5)
- (2) 因為看到父母年紀大了，做不動了，才決定回來幫忙的。(B3, L6)
- (3) 我也是看了漫畫才知道壽司是怎麼做的。(B3, L5)

## 6. Denial

- (1) 才不是你說的那樣呢！(this lesson)

V. 所謂 (的) A 是指 B *so called A refers to B*  04-09

**Function:** In this pattern, B defines or explains the definition or properties of A.

- ① 所謂「現代風水學」是指站在科學的角度，利用環境、改造環境的一門學問。
- ② 所謂「限制級電影」是指滿 18 歲才能看的電影。
- ③ A：這附近的房子價錢不太貴，你可以去看看。  
B：你所謂的「不太貴」是指多少錢呢？
- ④ A：我們老師只喜歡好學生。  
B：你所謂的「好學生」是指怎麼樣的學生呢？
- ⑤ A：過度使用網路會影響身體健康。  
B：你所謂的「過度」是指多久呢？

### 練習 Exercise

Give responses below by using the pattern 所謂 (的) A 是指 B.

- 1 A: 最近台灣有許多新移民。  
B: 你所謂的「新移民」\_\_\_\_\_?
- 2 A: 我最近常看到「宅經濟」這三個字，到底是什麼意思？  
B: 所謂「宅經濟」\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 建國，我們去國家戲劇院看表演，要穿得正式一點，可別太隨便喔！  
B: \_\_\_\_\_?
- 4 A: 你認為怎麼樣才是快樂？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 在你心裡，所謂的成功是什麼呢？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

## VI. 一口氣 *lit. in one breath* 04-10

 英譯 p.95

**Function:** The phrase 一口氣 means “in one breath”, to accomplish an entire task without interruption.

- 1 今天我一口氣游了兩千公尺。
- 2 他可以一口氣喝完一杯大杯的可樂。
- 3 她這學期一口氣修了 28 個學分，我看她是瘋了。
- 4 這位舞者一口氣跳了一個鐘頭，都沒有休息。
- 5 我爺爺一口氣把他從年輕的時候到現在的事情都說給我聽，聽得我差一點睡著。

## 練習 Exercise

Answer the following by using 一口氣.

- 1 你朋友二十分鐘吃了三份臭豆腐，你覺得他可能會肚子痛，你會對他說什麼？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 媽媽要出門前五分鐘，提醒你很多事情，你覺得你一定會忘記，你會對媽媽說什麼？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 今天要考試，你昨天念了十個鐘頭的書，都沒有休息，你會對朋友說什麼？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 百貨公司打折，因為比較便宜，所以你買了好多件衣服，回家後你會對家人說什麼？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 你開車去找朋友，從早上八點開到下午兩點，都沒有休息，你會說什麼？  
\_\_\_\_\_。

VII. 光 A 就... *just A alone...*

04-11

英譯 p.95

**Function:** This pattern consists of 2 adverbs, meaning “even/just A alone exceeds common expectations”.

- 1 台灣的便利商店非常多，光我家外面那條街就有三家。
- 2 他很愛吃甜點，光蛋糕一次就可以吃五個。
- 3 媽媽脾氣暴躁，光一件小小的事就能讓她生很大的氣。
- 4 老人動作比較慢，光上下公車就要比較長的時間，旁邊的人應該幫幫他們。
- 5 那家新開的餐廳，聽說很有名，昨天我們光等位子就等了一個半鐘頭。

**Usage:** A in this pattern is either a noun phrase or a subject-less sentence as illustrated above.

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences by using 光 A 就….

- 1 我最怕陪媽媽去逛百貨公司了，每次光\_\_\_\_\_就\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 小王是個很容易緊張的人，光一個小考試就\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 這次旅行我花了不少錢，光\_\_\_\_\_就\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 妹妹吃飯吃得很慢，光\_\_\_\_\_就\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 颱風來了，風很大，很難走，光\_\_\_\_\_就\_\_\_\_\_。

## VIII. Expressing Displeasure or Annoyance with 都

04-12

英譯 p.95

**Function:** The adverb 都 qualifies an unexpected or unusual state of affairs. With it, the speaker expresses displeasure or annoyance.

- 1 都幾點了，你還不起床！
- 2 我都等了兩個鐘頭了，你還沒到，我要走了！
- 3 我都給你五千塊錢了，還不夠嗎？
- 4 風水學都用了一千多年了，應該有值得相信的部分吧？
- 5 你都病得快起不來了，還想去上班！

### 練習 Exercise

Answer the following questions, using 都 to express your displeasure or annoyance.

- 1 你的孩子明天有考試，現在是晚上九點，可是他還沒開始看書。你會說什麼？

\_\_\_\_\_。

2 你跟朋友說明一件事情，說明了一個小時，可是他還是不懂。你會說什麼？

\_\_\_\_\_。

3 有一個地方，你朋友去了很多次，可是還是迷路。你會說什麼？

\_\_\_\_\_。

4 你看到朋友有一件衣服破了，你知道那件衣服他已經穿了很多年。你會說什麼？

\_\_\_\_\_。

5 有一個風水的說法，你認為是迷信，可是你朋友卻非常相信，你會說什麼？

\_\_\_\_\_。

### 語法例句英譯

#### Grammar Examples in English

#### I. 總算 *finally, speaking roughly* (*in the ballpark*)

##### Function:

- Finally, as anticipated
  - After two solid weeks of rain, today the weather has finally turned good.
  - The policeman pressed the issue but nobody dared speak out. Eventually somebody spoke up.
  - Wang Xiaoming picked on me all last semester; finally I don't have to take a class with him this semester.
- Roughly speaking
  - I may not have done amazingly well on the test, but I did good enough.
  - We were only in Taichung for one day, but it still counts as having been there.

- (3) I didn't do a great job on this report, but at least it's done.

#### II. 還不就是 *nothing more than*

##### Function:

- A: What did your and your wife do around Taipei 101 yesterday?  
B: Same old, shopping at the department stores.
- A: I heard that Xiao Wang's dad was admitted to the hospital. What happened?  
B: The same old problem.
- A: Xiao Mei, what does your flatmate do all night if not sleep?  
B: Nothing much, just online games and chatting.



- 4 A: Why is your girlfriend upset again?  
B: Sigh, seems I've forgotten exactly how many days we've been together again!
- 5 A: It's the first day of school today. What did the teacher say?  
B: We only went over the class rules.

### III. Outright Denial with 才

#### Function:

- 1 A: Feng Shui is just a superstition.  
B: No, it's not!
- 2 A: That restaurant is just to the right of the school.  
B: No, it's not, it's to the left.
- 3 A: You like stinky tofu, right? Let's go get some.  
B: No way, I hate stinky tofu!
- 4 A: Taipei 101 is the tallest building in the world.  
B: Actually it's not the tallest anymore; there are others that are taller.
- 5 A: What a boring movie. I'd really rather not watch it.  
B: Boring? It brought me to tears.
- 6 A: You've got a bad temper!  
B: No, you've got a bad temper!
- 7 A: The best food in Taiwan has got to be those steamed meat buns.  
B: Those buns are nothing; beef noodles is where it's at.
- 8 A: Those two people over there, the taller one is older, right?  
B: Nope, the shorter one is.
- 9 A: Since you are shopping online anyway, why don't you have your goods couriered? It's fast and easy.  
B: I'm never home, so it's actually easier for me to pick up at the store than to have it couriered.
- 10 A: It's a lot of stress having to raise a family on such low pay.  
B: You think you're under stress? You only have one kid, but I've got three!

### IV. A Summary of the Various Usages of 才

#### Function:

1. Merely, only
  - (1) I've only been studying for six months.
  - (2) Who knew one term was all it took for her to lose interest. She had a real hard time studying.
  - (3) Thanks to group buying online, this company's pineapple cakes became the most popular in Taiwan after only a little more than a year.
2. Later than expected
  - (1) He usually only goes to bed after midnight.
  - (2) She couldn't believe that He Yating, who worked so hard to finally get into a good university program, is now giving it up just like that.
  - (3) What took you so long? We've been waiting for you for ages.
3. Only and only then (condition)
  - (1) A lot of people take vacation in summer. If you go to Kenting without booking accommodations first, then you might not be able find anything.
  - (2) If the teacher is strict, then you will learn faster and understand more thoroughly.
  - (3) Once you try something on than you'll know if it fits or not.
4. Only just..., and
  - (1) Lots of people go online first thing in the morning, only just after they've woken up.
  - (2) Xiao Ling only just got home and she's already on the computer.
  - (3) Your body has only just recovered; don't overwork yourself.
5. Consequently
  - (1) It was only because this article of clothing looked so pretty on a soap opera actress that she had a friend send her one from overseas.

- (2) It was only because I saw that my parents were old and couldn't work that I decided to come back and help out.
- (3) I only know how sushi is made because I've read so many comic books.
6. Denial
- (1) It's not like that at all!

### V. 所謂(的) A 是指 B *so called A refers to B*

#### Function:

- ① What is meant by modern Feng Shui is a study that takes a scientific approach to using and remoulding the environment around us.
- ② Restricted movies refer to those that you must be 18 years old to watch.
- ③ A: Flats around here aren't too expensive, and you should have a look around.  
B: How much exactly is 'not too expensive'?
- ④ A: Our teacher only likes good students.  
B: What is it meant by a 'good student'?
- ⑤ A: Overusing the internet affects one's health.  
B: How much time constitutes 'overuse'?

### VI. 一口氣 *lit. in one breath*

#### Function:

- ① Today I swam 2,000 meters in one go.
- ② He can gulp down an entire large Coke in one gulp.
- ③ She did 28 credits all in one term; she's nuts.
- ④ This dancer danced for an hour straight without taking a break.
- ⑤ My grandpa gave me the entire story of his life from start to finish all in one go, and it nearly put me to sleep.

### VII. 光 A 就... *just A alone...*

#### Function:

- ① There are tons of convenience stores in Taiwan. There are three on the street just outside my place alone.
- ② He loves sweets. Just speaking of cake, he can eat five slices in one sitting.
- ③ Mother's temper is very volatile; even a minor thing can cause her to erupt.
- ④ The elderly move slowly. Just getting on and off the bus alone takes quite a bit of time. Those close by ought to help.
- ⑤ I hear that new restaurant is quite popular. We went yesterday, and waiting for a table took an hour and a half.

### VIII. Expressing Displeasure or Annoyance with 都

#### Function:

- ① Do you know what time it is now? Get out of bed!
- ② I've been waiting for two hours already, and you're not here yet. I'm leaving!
- ③ I gave you 5,000 dollars. That's not enough!?
- ④ Feng Shui has been practiced for over 1,000 years. It must have at least some credibility, right?
- ⑤ You're so sick that you can barely get up. Forget going to work!

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 我所知道的風水

目標：能說明什麼是風水和比較不同的文化裡跟風水很像的說法。

任務：把不同國籍的學生分為兩兩一組，讓學生討論 ①、② 兩個問題。

- ① 認為風水這種說法到底有沒有科學根據？為什麼？
- ② 在你的國家有沒有跟風水很像的說法？如果有，請說一、兩個例子。

### II. 到底是不是風水的問題？

目標：能說出自己的看法，並讓別人也同意你的看法。

任務：最近王家過得不太順利，不是有人一直生病，就是工作常常出問題，還有一個孩子因為被車撞到而受傷了。王先生的朋友告訴他，這些事都是因為家裡的風水出了問題。如果不請風水師到家裡去看看，改改風水，恐怕會有更大的麻煩。王先生完全不相信這樣的說法，可是王太太認為，只要對家人有好處，都可以試試。這件事該怎麼解決呢？把學生分為三人一組，做角色扮演，一名扮演王先生，一名扮演王太太，一名扮演王先生的朋友。

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### A Few Feng Shui Dos and Don'ts

In the philosophical system of Feng Shui one element of floor plan considered very inauspicious is 穿堂煞 (Chuan Tang Sha), or The Penetrating Pathway for Evil Spirits. This ominous pathway is a direct line between the front and rear entrances of a room or space, and it originated in an era when traditional homes were old and quite large. In the architecture of that time entrances were often aligned, allowing thieves easy entrance and a quick getaway. Even to this very day, many people associate a penetrating pathway in the home with financial loss.

Another Feng Shui no-no is 樑壓床頭 (Liang ya Chuangtou), or Pressure Pillar, which occurs when the head of a bed is situated at the bottom of a pillar. It is said that a Pressure Pillar can cause migraines and is conducive to headaches and other head-related ailments. The body becomes adversely affected after many years of sleeping under the so-called pressure of a pillar; metabolism decreases and long-term stress of the inner qi causes poor sleep. The result is a weakened physical and mental state and a tendency towards nightmares.

In Feng Shui the four ancient Chinese beasts correspond with direction. 前朱雀、左青龍、右白虎、後玄武 (Rosefinch, Green Dragon, White Tiger, and Black Tortoise) respectively align with front, left, right, and back. “Rosefinch in the front” symbolizes prospects, thus an open space at the front of a house is required for future success. “Black Tortoise in the back” symbolizes support, thus a mountain, or other large buildings, are ideally situated behind a house. Having support attracts favor from the higher-ranked,



▲ If there is a direct line between the front and back entrances of a building, this is considered poor Feng Shui which will lead to financial losses.



▲ In Feng Shui, situating the head of a bed at the bottom of a pillar may cause headaches or other illnesses.

and is thus advantageous for one's career. "Green Dragon to the left" and "White Tiger to the right" denote that a building ought to have room enough on both sides for its own shadow. Lacking space on the left is unfavorable for males, and conversely, lacking space on the right is unfavorable for females. When it comes to the location of one's home, the adage for copybook Feng Shui goes: Green Dragon to the left, White Tiger to the right, Rosefinch in the front, and Black Tortoise in the back.



▲ Top: Rose Finch,  
Left: Green Dragon,  
Right: White Tiger,  
Back: Black Tortoise.  
《謝沅瑾居家風水教科書》／提供



### Self-Assessment Checklist

我能說明家中的布置。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能簡單說明風水是什麼。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能討論迷信，並說出自己的想法。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能討論風水與迷信的關係和不同。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

LESSON

# 5

## 第五課 有夢最美

### Pursuing Your Dreams

---

#### 學習目標

主題：經濟情況

- 能談一談現代年輕人升學就業的情況。
- 能對想做的事提出解釋及說明原因。
- 能表達出所觀察到的社會轉變。
- 能和朋友討論未來的計畫。





馬安同：雲真，妳也受到連續劇的影響來排隊買雞排嗎？

李雲真：我哪裡有時間看連續劇？我不是來買雞排的，而是為了校刊來採訪老闆的。

馬安同：這個賣雞排的老闆很有名嗎？

李雲真：你沒聽說過嗎？他是我們學校的校友，去年剛得到博士學位。

馬安同：我沒聽錯吧？既然有那麼高的學歷，為什麼要在夜市裡賣雞排呢？

李雲真：現在博士去考清潔隊員、碩士去當司機和學士擺地攤的現象在台灣越來越普遍，已經不稀奇了。

馬安同：賣雞排並不丟臉，不偷不搶，靠自己賺錢，很好啊！

李雲真：我也這麼認為，但也聽到不少負面的看法，批評這種人浪費國家的教育資源。

馬安同：這個我可以了解，畢竟念到博士不容易，應該可以為國家貢獻更多才對。

李雲真：這的確是個很嚴重的問題。很多人盲目升學，甚至有些學生因為要逃避就業而延後畢業的時間。

馬安同：在我的國家並沒有這個問題，因為大多數人都念不起大學。

李雲真：不過話說回來，能自食其力的人比那些「靠爸族」好多了。

馬安同：所謂「靠爸族」是指靠父母生活嗎？

李雲真：大概的意思是：自己沒什麼能力，這些人之所以成功是因為父母的關係。另外還有一種人叫「啃老族」，就是自己沒有能力獨立生活，還住在家裡靠父母的人。

馬安同：我的國家現在也有不少這種人。我沒有有錢的父母，得趕快去圖書館看書了，畢業後我得靠自己啊！

李雲真：我也該去採訪了，免得等一下老闆收攤，我就採訪不成了。

馬安同：那麼，希望你採訪順利，我等著看下一期的校刊。

李雲真：謝謝，明天見。

馬安同：對了，採訪完了以後，別忘了買一些「博士雞排」吃吃看。

李雲真：希望我吃了以後，也可以早一點拿到博士學位。



## 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

马安同：云真，妳也受到连续剧的影响来排队买鸡排吗？

李云真：我哪里有时间看连续剧？我不是来买鸡排的，而是为了校刊来采访老板的。

马安同：这个卖鸡排的老板很有名吗？

李云真：你没听说过吗？他是我们学校的校友，去年刚得到博士学位。

马安同：我没听错吧？既然有那么高的学历，为什么要在夜市里卖鸡排呢？

李云真：现在博士去考清洁队员、硕士去当司机和学士摆地摊的现象在台湾越来越普遍，已经不稀奇了。

马安同：卖鸡排并不丢脸，不偷不抢，靠自己赚钱，很好啊！

李云真：我也这么认为，但也听到不少负面的看法，批评这种人浪费国家的教育资源。

马安同：这个我可以了解，毕竟念到博士不容易，应该可以为国家贡献更多才对。

李云真：这的确是个很严重的问题。很多人盲目升学，甚至有些学生因为要逃避就业而延后毕业的时间。

马安同：在我的国家并没有这个问题，因为大多数人都念不起大学。

李云真：不过话说回来，能自食其力的人比那些「靠爸族」好多了。

马安同：所谓「靠爸族」是指靠父母生活吗？

李云真：大概的意思是：自己没什么能力，这些人之所以成功是因为父母的关系。另外还有一种人叫「啃老族」，就是自己没有能力独立生活，还住在家里靠父母的人。

马安同：我的国家现在也有不少这种人。我没有有钱的父母，得赶快去图书馆看书了，毕业后我得靠自己啊！

李云真：我也该去采访了，免得等一下老板收摊，我就采访不成了。

马安同：那么，希望妳采访顺利，我等着看下一期的校刊。

李云真：谢谢，明天见。

马安同：对了，采访完了以后，别忘了买一些「博士鸡排」吃吃看。

李云真：希望我吃了以后，也可以早一点拿到博士学位。

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



## Vocabulary

1	夢	mèng	ㄇㄨㄥˋ	(N)	dream
2	排隊	páiduì	ㄊㄨㄟˊ ㄉㄨㄟˋ	(V-sep)	to line up, stand in queue
3	校刊	xiàokān	ㄒㄩㄠˋ ㄎㄢ	(N)	school newspaper, school publications of all sorts
4	採訪	cǎifǎng	ㄘㄞˇ ㄈㄤˇ	(V)	to interview
5	校友	xiàoyǒu	ㄒㄩㄠˋ ㄩˇ	(N)	alumnus
6	博士	bóshì	ㄅㄛˊ ㄕㄨˋ	(N)	doctorate, PhD
7	學位	xuéwèi	ㄒㄩㄟˊ ㄨㄟˋ	(N)	academic degree
8	考	kǎo	ㄎㄠˇ	(V)	to take a test
9	司機	sījī	ㄙㄧ ㄐㄧ	(N)	driver, chauffeur
10	學士	xuéshì	ㄒㄩㄟˊ ㄕㄨˋ	(N)	bachelors, college degree
11	地攤	dītān	ㄉㄧˋ ㄊㄢ	(N)	street stall
12	現象	xiànxàng	ㄒㄩㄠˋ ㄒㄩㄤˋ	(N)	phenomenon
13	稀奇	xīqí	ㄒㄧ ㄑㄧˊ	(Vs)	rare (and unique), singular
14	搶	qiǎng	ㄑㄩㄤˇ	(V)	to rob, mug
15	批評	pīpíng	ㄆㄧ ㄆㄧㄥˊ	(V)	to criticize
16	浪費	làngfèi	ㄌㄤˋ ㄈㄟˋ	(Vst)	to waste
17	畢竟	bìjìng	ㄅㄧˋ ㄐㄩㄥˋ	(Adv)	after all
18	貢獻	gòngxiàn	ㄍㄨㄥˋ ㄒㄩㄢˋ	(V)	to make contributions
19	的確	díquè	ㄉㄧˊ ㄑㄩㄟˋ	(Adv)	indeed
20	盲目	mángmù	ㄇㄤˊ ㄇㄨˋ	(Adv)	blindly
21	升學	shēngxué	ㄕㄨㄥ ㄒㄩㄟˊ	(Vi)	to pursue further education
22	逃避	táobì	ㄊㄞˊ ㄅㄧˋ	(V)	to evade, escape
23	就業	jiùyè	ㄐㄩㄟˋ ㄧㄝˋ	(N/Vi)	employment; to get a job
24	延後	yánhòu	ㄧㄢˊ ㄏㄡˋ	(V)	to postpone

25	啃老族	kěnlǎozú	ㄎㄥˇ ㄌㄠˇ ㄓㄨˊ	(N)	a “sponge”, a “parasite”, somebody who feeds off the old (啃老 kěnlǎo, live off one’s parents, lit. gnaw on the old)
26	收攤	shōutān	ㄕㄨㄟ ㄊㄢ	(V-sep)	to close up shop (said of street stalls)

### Phrases

27	清潔隊員	qīngjié duìyuán	ㄑㄩㄥ ㄓㄟ ㄉㄨㄟ ㄩㄢˊ		cleaning squad, street cleaners (清潔 qīngjié, to clean; 隊員 -duìyuán, team member)
28	擺地攤	bǎi dìtān	ㄅㄞˇ ㄉㄧˋ ㄊㄢ		to have a street stall
29	大多數	dàduōshù	ㄉㄚˋ ㄉㄨㄛ ㄕㄨˋ		most, the majority of
30	話說回來	huàshuō huílái	ㄏㄨㄚˋ ㄕㄨㄛ ㄏㄨㄟ ㄌㄞˊ		on the other hand, however
31	自食其力	zìshí qíli	ㄗˋ ㄕㄨˋ ㄑㄧˊ ㄌㄧˋ		to rely on yourself, to stand on your own two feet
32	下一期	xiàyīqī	ㄒㄚˋ ㄩˊ ㄑㄧ		next issue (of a periodical)

## 短文 Reading



### 別放棄夢想

在台灣生活了一段時間以後，馬安同覺得台灣的物價比他剛來的時候上漲了不少。有越來越多的台灣人抱怨這種低所得、高物價的情況，什麼都漲了，就是薪水沒漲。一般大學剛畢業的年輕人，不是找不到工作，就是每個月的薪水只能勉強生活。不少人辛苦工作了很多年，卻根本存不了什麼錢，更別說有能力買房子了。有些人還成



立了「無殼蝸牛」組織，抗議台灣地價和房價高漲，造成貧富不均，人民買不起房子。

根據台灣政府的統計，每年的失業率大概在百分之三到五左右。雖然跟其他國家比起來，台灣的失業率並不特別高，但人民卻覺得生活苦哈哈的，很多人都是「窮忙族」。這種現象一方面受到全球經濟不景氣的影響，另一方面是因為政府所施行的經濟政策也有問題。大多數人的薪資多年未調高不說，還有不少人被裁員。在台灣找不到工作的，不得不去中國大陸或別的國家另謀發展。

馬安同今年在台灣過年時，他觀察到一些有趣的現象。不少台灣人恨不得能一夜致富，大家喜歡買彩券，希望能中獎，常做發財夢。另外還有一個現象就是每個人都想當老闆，不想看別人的臉色，所以在台灣有不少只有三、四個人的小公司。根據新聞報導指出，台灣有八成的年輕人想自己創業，而且大部分都想從事餐飲業。

目前雖然經濟情況差，就業機會少，但是人生因為夢想而美麗，有夢最美。有句話說：「機會是留給準備好的人」，夢想的實現要經過許多努力及挑戰。培養實力，等待機會，相信每一個人都能擁有自己的一片天。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

#### 别放弃梦想

在台湾生活了一段时间以后，马安同觉得台湾的物价比他刚来的时候上涨了不少。有越来越多的台湾人抱怨这种低所得、高物价的情况，什么都涨了，就是薪水没涨。一般大学刚毕业的年轻人，不是找不到工作，就是每个月的薪水只能勉强生活。不少人辛苦工作了很多年，却根本存不了什么钱，更别说有能力买房子了。有些人还成立了「无壳蜗牛」组织，抗议台湾地价和房价高涨，造成贫富不均，人民买不起房子。

根据台湾政府的统计，每年的失业率大概在百分之三到五左右。虽然跟其他国家比起来，台湾的失业率并不特别高，但人民却觉得生活苦哈哈

的，很多人都是「穷忙族」。这种现象一方面受到全球经济不景气的影响，另一方面是因为政府所施行的经济政策也有问题。大多数人的薪资多年未调高不说，还有不少人被裁员。在台湾找不到工作的，不得不去中国大陆或别的国家另谋发展。

马安同今年在台湾过年时，他观察到一些有趣的现象。不少台湾人恨不得能一夜致富，大家喜欢买彩券，希望能中奖，常做发财梦。另外还有一个现象就是每个人都想当老板，不想看别人的脸色，所以在台湾有不少只有三、四个人的小公司。根据新闻报导指出，台湾有八成的年轻人想自己创业，而且大部分都想从事餐饮业。

目前虽然经济情况差，就业机会少，但是人生因为梦想而美丽，有梦最美。有句话说：「机会是留给准备好的人」，梦想的实现要经过许多努力及挑战。培养实力，等待机会，相信每一个人都能拥有自己的一片天。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



### Vocabulary

1	段	duàn	ㄉㄨㄢˋˋ	(M)	a period of (time)
2	物價	wùjià	ㄨˋˋ ㄐㄩㄚˋˋ	(N)	prices, commodity prices
3	上漲	shàngzhǎng	ㄕㄨㄥˋˋ ㄓㄤˇ	(Vp)	to rise (of prices)
4	所得	suǒdé	ㄙㄨㄛˇˋ ㄉㄛˊˋ	(N)	income
5	漲	zhǎng	ㄓㄤˇ	(Vp)	to rise (as of prices and water level)
6	勉強	miǎnqiǎng	ㄇㄧㄢˇˋ ㄑㄩㄢˇˋ	(Adv)	barely, with great reluctance
7	根本	gēnběn	ㄍㄜㄣˇˋ ㄅㄣˇˋ	(Adv)	at all, in the slightest
8	組織	zǔzhī	ㄗㄨˇˋ ㄓㄧˊˋ	(N)	organization
9	抗議	kàngyì	ㄎㄤˋˋ ㄩˋˋ	(V)	to protest against
10	地價	dìjià	ㄉㄧˋˋ ㄐㄩㄚˋˋ	(N)	land prices
11	房價	fángjià	ㄈㄤˊˋ ㄐㄩㄚˋˋ	(N)	housing prices
12	高漲	gāozhǎng	ㄍㄠˊˋ ㄓㄤˇ	(Vs)	to (upward) surge

13	造成	zàochéng	ㄗㄞˋ ㄔㄥˊ	(Vpt)	to cause, produce, make
14	統計	tǒngjì	ㄊㄨㄥˋ ㄐㄩˋ	(N)	statistics
15	窮忙	qióngmáng	ㄑㄩㄥˊ ㄇㄤˊ	(Vs)	busy doing things without achieving anything
16	全球	quánqiú	ㄑㄩㄢˊ ㄑㄩㄟˊ	(N)	global, worldwide
17	景氣	jǐngqì	ㄐㄩㄥˋ ㄑㄩˋ	(Vs)	prosperous, booming, economic conditions
18	施行	shīxíng	ㄕㄩㄥ ㄒㄩㄥˊ	(V)	to implement, put into effect
19	薪資	xīnzī	ㄒㄩㄥ ㄗㄩ	(N)	pay, salary, wages
20	多年	duōnián	ㄉㄨㄛ ㄋㄩㄢˊ	(N)	for many years, for so long
21	未	wèi	ㄨㄟˋ	(Adv)	not yet (formal)
22	調高	tiáogāo	ㄊㄩㄠˊ ㄍㄠ	(V)	to adjust upward
23	裁員	cáiyuán	ㄘㄞ ㄩㄢˊ	(Vi)	to lay off
24	觀察	guānchá	ㄍㄨㄢ ㄔㄚˊ	(V)	to observe, note
25	彩券	cǎiquàn	ㄘㄞ ㄑㄩㄢˋ	(N)	lottery
26	中獎	zhòngjiǎng	ㄓㄨㄥˋ ㄐㄩㄥˋ	(Vp-sep)	to win (a prize or lottery), to hit a jackpot
27	做夢	zuòmèng	ㄗㄨㄛˋ ㄇㄥˋ	(V-sep)	to dream
28	發財	fācái	ㄈㄞ ㄘㄞˊ	(Vp-sep)	to strike it rich
29	臉色	liǎnsè	ㄌㄩㄢˋ ㄙㄟˋ	(N)	countenance (mood shown on face)
30	報導	bàodǎo	ㄅㄞˋ ㄉㄞˋ	(N)	report, article, story (news)
31	指出	zhǐchū	ㄓㄩˇ ㄔㄨ	(V)	to indicate, point out
32	創業	chuàngyè	ㄔㄨㄢˋ ㄩㄝˋ	(Vi)	to set up a business
33	餐飲業	cānyǐnyè	ㄘㄞ ㄩㄢˋ ㄩㄝˋ	(N)	food and beverage industry
34	人生	rénshēng	ㄖㄣˊ ㄕㄥ	(N)	life
35	及	jí	ㄐㄩˊ	(Conj)	and (formal)
36	挑戰	tiǎozhàn	ㄊㄩㄢˋ ㄓㄢˋ	(N)	challenge
37	培養	péiyǎng	ㄆㄟˊ ㄩㄤˋ	(V)	to cultivate, train, foster
38	實力	shíli	ㄕㄞˋ ㄌㄩˋ	(N)	strength (not physical strength)

39	等待	děngdài	等 待	(V)	to wait for, await
40	擁有	yǒngyǒu	擁 有	(Vst)	to have as one's own, possess

### Names

41	中國大陸	Zhōngguó Dàlù	中 國 大 陸		Mainland China
----	------	---------------	---------	--	----------------

### Phrases

42	存不了	cúnbùliǎo	存 不 了		can't save (money)
43	無殼蝸牛	wúké guāniú	無 殼 蝸 牛		“snails without shells” (people who cannot afford to buy their own home)
44	貧富不均	pínfù bùjūn	貧 富 不 均		gap between the rich and the poor, unequal distribution of wealth
45	苦哈哈	kǔ hāhā	苦 哈 哈		bitter life, very poorly
46	另謀發展	lìngmóu fāzhǎn	另 謀 發 展		to seek opportunities elsewhere
47	恨不得	hènbùdé	恨 不 得		to be dying to, desperately
48	一夜致富	yíyè zhìfù	一 夜 致 富		to become rich overnight
49	一片天	yípiàntiān	一 片 天		“place in the sun”, a job that makes you happy and provides you with all the money and things that you want, paradise

## 文法 Grammar

### I. Rhetorical Question with 哪裡 05-05

 英譯 p.117

**Function:** 哪裡 can also express a rhetorical question in refuting or in doubt, i.e., “how can it be possible?” or “cannot possibly...”.

① 一般大學剛畢業的年輕人哪裡有錢買房子？

- ② 這件事哪裡稀奇了？這種現象越來越普遍了。
- ③ 我哪裡是盲目升學？我以後還要念博士呢。
- ④ 妳穿起來哪裡不好看？妳穿起來跟模特兒一樣漂亮。
- ⑤ 我媽媽連電腦都不會用，哪裡會上網購物？

**Usage:** 哪裡, though originally an interrogative pronoun, refers to the meaning of “cannot possibly” here. This 哪裡 should be distinguished from the common response to ‘thank you’.

A: 「謝謝。」

B: 「哪裡！哪裡！」

### 練習 Exercise

Respond to the utterances below with total disagreements by using 哪裡.

- ① A: 泰國菜跟韓國菜都很辣，味道差不多一樣吧？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A: 根據統計指出：一般不到 40 歲的上班族，大多數都是「無殼蝸牛」。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A: 我最近想搬家，想租捷運站附近的房子。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ A: 我把梳妝台放在床旁邊好嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ A: 你知道為什麼台北 101 大樓要設計成一個個往上疊的盆子嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。



## II. 畢竟 *after all* 05-06

 英譯 p.118

**Function:** With this adverb, the speaker urges the addressee to accept what cannot be helped or avoided.

- 1 雖然現在很多年輕人批評他，但我認為我們都應該尊敬他，畢竟他對國家還是有不少貢獻。
- 2 我們餐飲業還算景氣，不過畢竟物價上漲了不少，所以我的生活還是苦哈哈的。
- 3 聽古典音樂的人畢竟比較少，那場音樂會的票應該還買得到吧。
- 4 由於養狗畢竟比養孩子方便，因此很多人不養孩子而養狗。
- 5 整型畢竟還是有風險的，你再多考慮考慮吧。

**Usage:** As a member of the so-called ‘movable adverbs’, 畢竟 can occur before a VP or at the beginning of a clause. Other such adverbs include 難道, 大概, 居然, 隨時, 到底 etc.

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 畢竟 sentences.

- 1 別勉強他，畢竟這是他的人生，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 念會計系畢竟\_\_\_\_\_，因此他媽媽不希望他轉系。
- 3 撞衫對她來說畢竟\_\_\_\_\_，所以她馬上就把外套脫掉。
- 4 別擔心，他會另謀發展的，畢竟\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 找工作時外表畢竟\_\_\_\_\_，所以有越來越多人能接受微整型手術了。

## III. 的確 *indeed* 05-07

 英譯 p.118

**Function:** This adverb re-affirms a view previously presented.

- 1 A: 我聽說現在有不少大學生想延後畢業的時間，是真的嗎？  
B: 現在的確有不少學生，因為要逃避就業而延後畢業的時間。

- ② A：我覺得上網交友好容易喔！  
B：上網交友的確容易，不過要小心喔！
- ③ A：上次你說你以後要自己創業，為什麼呢？  
B：我畢業以後，的確想自己創業，因為不想看別人的臉色。
- ④ A：現在的房價高漲，大多數人都買不起房子吧？  
B：的確，我跟很多人一樣買不起房子，我們都是「無殼蝸牛」。
- ⑤ A：最近我的眼睛非常疲倦，可能是因為工作時一直盯著螢幕看吧！  
B：長時間一直盯著螢幕看，眼睛的確會很疲倦。

**Usage:**

1. 的確 can be used at the beginning of a sentence, meaning 'I agree with you', e.g.,  
的確，現在即使有碩士學位的人找工作也不容易。
2. 的確 can be reduplicated: 的的確確, e.g.,  
他的的確確是昨天才知道的。

The reduplicated form of 的確 is quite colloquial and puts added stress on whatever follows it, making the tone stronger. It is worth noting that only very few disyllabic adverbs can be reduplicated, as below.

完全—完完全全 (B2, L12)，幾乎—幾幾乎乎 (B3, L03)

隨便—隨隨便便 (B3, L06)，確實—確確實實 (B4, L03)

**練習 Exercise**

Re-affirm what has been said by using 的確.

- ① A：她們兩個很像，她們應該是姐妹吧？  
B：\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A：聽說很多擁有學士學位的人想去考清潔隊員呢。  
B：的確，\_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 A：有的人認為相信風水是一種迷信。  
B：的確，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A：他頭腦清楚、口才好，應該出來競選民意代表。  
B：的確，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A：雲端科技不只給人類帶來正面的影響吧？  
B：\_\_\_\_\_。

IV. 話說回來 *however, on the other hand*  05-08

 英譯 p.118

**Function:** With this phrase, the speaker first affirms the merit of a previous statement and then presents a qualification from a different perspective.

- 1 雖然帶現金比較麻煩。可是話說回來，刷卡風險比較大，信用卡容易被盜用。
- 2 電信公司的合約已經寫得很清楚了。不過話說回來，他是外國人，應該要再解釋一下才行。
- 3 用手機祝朋友生日快樂的確很方便。但話說回來，好像少了一點感覺。
- 4 對她來說，包餃子不難。不過話說回來，要包一百多個餃子也沒那麼容易。
- 5 你應該趁在台灣的時候多出去逛逛。但是話說回來，學校的功課也很重要。

**Usage:** This phrase is often preceded by such conjunctions as 可是, 但是, and 不過, e.g.,

住在捷運站附近的確很方便。不過話說回來，那裡的房價都很貴。

## 練習 Exercise

Modify what has already been said by completing the 話說回來 clauses.

- 1 她已經習慣了大城市熱鬧的氣氛，可是話說回來，  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 我覺得你應該去投票，不過話說回來，  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 學歷高不一定能找到工作，但是話說回來，  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 我在北部住了一段時間以後比較習慣了，可是話說回來，  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 學校的校刊的確不應該只採訪校友，可是話說回來，  
\_\_\_\_\_。

### V. NP 之所以 S<sub>2</sub> 是因為 S<sub>1</sub> *S<sub>2</sub> is due to S<sub>1</sub>* 05-09



英譯 p.118

**Function:** This pattern inverts S<sub>1</sub> (cause) and S<sub>2</sub> (effect) and places special emphasis on the new information (S<sub>1</sub>). NP is the subject of both S<sub>1</sub> and S<sub>2</sub>.

- 1 他之所以熬夜是因為要準備明天的考試。
- 2 我之所以要學西班牙文，是因為明年想去西班牙旅行。
- 3 我的房間之所以這麼亂，是因為我是上個禮拜才剛搬來的。
- 4 「靠爸族」及「啃老族」之所以越來越多，是因為年輕人不願意自食其力。
- 5 我之所以買小農種的蔬菜，是因為他們不用農藥。

**Usage:** This is a highly formal pattern and should be reserved for formal occasions, not for ordinary conversations.

### 練習 Exercise

Use the key issue raised as  $S_2$  in the structure above, and then provide your response as  $S_1$ .

- 1 A: 他在這個公司裡表現得很好，怎麼被裁員了呢？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 為什麼林太太說：牆上不能掛刀、劍這樣的東西？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 為什麼那些抗議團體所舉辦的活動，媒體都未報導出來？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 你來台灣半年了，怎麼還沒辦居留證呢？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 現代社會貧富不均的現象越來越嚴重，是怎麼造成的呢？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

## VI. 根本 *not...at all* 05-10

 英譯 p.119

**Function:** With the adverb 根本, the speaker emphatically presents a negative view.

- 1 他每天在夜市裡擺地攤，收攤的時間都很晚，根本沒有時間去約會。
- 2 你根本就看不懂現代舞，何必要買那麼貴的票？
- 3 台灣的房價那麼高，一般人根本買不起房子。
- 4 現在是宅經濟時代，根本不必去百貨公司買衣服，線上購物就好了。
- 5 他們根本沒有什麼實力，只是運氣好而已。

## 練習 Exercise

Complete the dialogues below by presenting negative views or facts.

- 1 A: 這份工作很適合你。面談很順利吧?  
B: 我去了那家公司, 但根本\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 你不是答應要幫我下載嗎? 我把隨身碟帶來了。  
B: 我根本\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 我的同事買了彩券以後就一夜致富了, 我們也去買吧。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 你怎麼把我的衣櫥弄得這麼亂?  
B: 不是我弄的。我根本\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 政府打算調高公務員的薪資, 確實施行後, 對經濟會有幫助吧?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

VII. 更別說...了 *let alone, never mind*  05-11
 英譯 p.119

**Function:** This pattern presents a new topic, to which the previous statement applies even more effectively.

- 1 一到週末百貨公司裡人就很多, 更別說百貨公司週年慶的時候了。
- 2 你這麼有學問的人都不懂, 更別說我了。
- 3 他說的地方連我這個當地人都找不到, 更別說你們了。
- 4 我來台灣以後每天忙著念書, 連台北 101 都還沒去過, 更別說平溪老街了。
- 5 我連小獎都沒中過, 更別說中大獎了。

**Usage:**

1. 更別說 is followed by either an NP or a VP. See above.

2. This pattern is often used together with 連...都... and 就是...也... patterns, e.g.,

- (1) 連你都不清楚，更別說我這個新來的人了。
- (2) 就是我也可能遲到，更別說他了。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 更別說 clauses.

- ① 節省的人都存不了錢，更別說\_\_\_\_\_了。
- ② 颱風過後蔬菜都很貴，連我這個愛吃肉的人都覺得飯錢增加了，更別說\_\_\_\_\_了。
- ③ 寵物不是人，不能照顧你，更別說\_\_\_\_\_了。
- ④ 連專家都很難決定核能電廠的去留問題，更別說\_\_\_\_\_了。
- ⑤ 這件羊毛外套在韓國穿起來都夠暖和，更別說\_\_\_\_\_了。

### VIII. 恨不得 *one really wishes one could...* 05-12

 英譯 p.119

**Function:** The phrase 恨不得 expresses a strong desire to do something against all odds.

- ① 住在美國時，我真恨不得每天早上都能吃到燒餅油條或中式飯糰。
- ② 他好不容易考上了熱門科系，念了一個學期卻發現興趣不合，念得很痛苦，恨不得能馬上轉系。
- ③ 水餃被我煮破了不少，不夠的話怎麼辦？真恨不得我們還有時間能再包一些。可是我們得出門了。
- ④ 要不是我媽媽反對，我也恨不得能跟你們一起去參加反核遊行。

- 5 走路走得腿痛死了，真恨不得能搭計程車過去，可惜錢包裡只有 50 塊錢。

### Usage:

1. Most often used with auxiliary verbs like wish, want, would, could, and cannot be used in the negative: e.g.,  
\*我恨不得不可以馬上回家。
2. All pronouns can serve as the subject though “I” is the commonest.

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 恨不得 portions of the sentences.

- 1 我昨天做夢夢到發了大財，真恨不得\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 上網訂購的東西，宅配居然要 10 天才能到，真恨不得\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 很羨慕你小時候學過鋼琴和小提琴，我真恨不得\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 我常對那些顧客說：別搶，別擠，請排隊。我有時真恨不得\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 他恨不得\_\_\_\_\_，就可以不必再看老闆的臉色了。

### 語法例句英譯

#### Grammar Examples in English

### I. Rhetorical Question with 哪裡

#### Function:

- 1 How could young university graduates possibly afford to buy a house?
- 2 What's so strange about it? It's become rather common actually.
- 3 What do you mean I keep studying just for the sake of studying? I have plans to do a PhD.



- ④ What do you mean it doesn't look good on you? You look like a model in that.
- ⑤ My mom doesn't even know how to use a computer. How could she possibly shop online?

## II. 畢竟 *after all*

### Function:

- ① He has come under a lot of criticism among younger people, but I think we still ought to respect him. After all he has done so much for our country.
- ② Our food and beverage industry is doing well, but after all, commodity prices have risen quite a bit, so times are still hard for me.
- ③ There aren't many people that listen to classical music after all, so there should still be tickets available for the performance.
- ④ After all it's much easier to have a dog than a child, so that's what a lot of people are doing.
- ⑤ Cosmetic surgery does have its risks after all. Make sure you give it due thought.

## III. 的確 *indeed*

### Function:

- ① A: I've heard that a lot of college students are putting off graduation. Is that true?  
B: Indeed, many students postpone graduation to avoid having to get a job.
- ② A: Making friends online is real easy!  
B: It is indeed, but be discerning!
- ③ A: I remember you talked about starting your own business. Why is that?  
B: Indeed, I want to start my own business after graduation because I don't want to have to deal with bosses.
- ④ A: Housing prices have risen sharply. Most people can't afford to buy a house, right?  
B: You're absolutely right. Like a lot of other people, I too can't afford one. We're all like a snail without a shell.

- ⑤ A: My eyes have been extremely sore lately. I think it's because I have to stare at a screen all day for work.  
B: Looking at a screen for extended periods of time will certainly do that to you.

## IV. 話說回來 *however, on the other hand*

### Function:

- ① It's a hassle always carrying cash, but on the other hand there is a greater risk with paying by plastic.
- ② That telecom company's contract is very clear. However, on the other hand he's a foreigner, so further explanation might be needed.
- ③ Sending a birthday wish to a friend via cell phone is easy, but on the other hand it feels a little empty.
- ④ Making dumplings is not hard for her, but on the other hand making 100 of them is no easy task.
- ⑤ You should take the opportunity to experience Taiwan while you are here, but on the other hand, schoolwork is important too.

## V. NP 之所以 S<sub>2</sub> 是因為 S<sub>1</sub> *S<sub>2</sub> is due to S<sub>1</sub>*

### Function:

- ① His whole purpose for staying up late is to prepare for tomorrow's test.
- ② I want to study Spanish because next year I will be travelling to Spain.
- ③ My room is such a mess because I only moved in last week.
- ④ Sponges and parasites are increasing in number because the younger generation doesn't want to earn their own living.
- ⑤ I buy produce from small-scale farmers because it is chemical free.

VI. 根本 *not...at all***Function:**

- 1 He sets up a stand at the night market every day, and by the time he packs up it is so late that there is no way he can make meet-up afterwards.
- 2 You don't understand the first thing about modern dance, so why go and buy such an expensive ticket?
- 3 Housing prices in Taiwan are exorbitant. There is no way the average joe can afford it.
- 4 It's the on-line economy generation. There's no longer any need to go to department stores for clothes. Everything can be ordered online.
- 5 They have no actual prowess at all, just good luck.

VII. 更別說…了 *let alone, never mind***Function:**

- 1 The department stores are packed even on the weekends, not to mention during anniversary sales.
- 2 If someone as highly educated as you doesn't understand it, what chance do I have.
- 3 I grew up here and even I can't find it. How can you possibly find it?
- 4 After I came to Taiwan I was so busy studying that I didn't have a chance to see Taipei 101, let alone the old street in Pingxi.
- 5 I've never even won a small prize, let alone a big one.

VIII. 恨不得 *one really wishes one could...***Function:**

- 1 When I was living in the US, every morning I wanted so badly to have those deep fried breadsticks wrapped in a roll and Chinese style onigri.
- 2 He worked so hard to get into a good department in university, but after struggling for one term found out it wasn't for him, and wanted nothing more than to change majors.
- 3 I over-boiled quite some of the dumplings, some split open. What if there isn't enough? I really wish we had the time to make some more, but we have to get going soon.
- 4 Too bad my mom is against it. I really wish I could join up for the rally against nuclear energy.
- 5 My legs are so sore from walking and I want nothing more than to take a taxi. Too bad I only have 50 dollars in my wallet.

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 你還聽過什麼「XX族」呢？

目標：學習了解和怎麼解釋新的詞語。

任務：訪談三個台灣朋友，請他們說說你選的三個「XX族」的意思，並請問他們除了「靠爸族」、「啃老族」以外，還知道哪些族，在班上給大家介紹這幾個詞語。

快閃族	豆腐族	菜籃族	頂客族	麵龜族
夜貓族	飆車族	粉領族	紅唇族	芭樂族
月光族	外食族	洋蔥族	低頭族	水蜜桃族

### II. 我中獎了！

目標：能綜合整理訪問調查的資料，並做出結論。

任務：要是你買的彩券中了獎，你要做什麼？學生兩兩一組，問問同學要是中了獎要做什麼？一筆錢只能做一件事，在表格中寫上同學的名字，並在想做的事中打「✓」，訪談結束後請分別整理出了100萬和300萬時大家最想做的前三件事。

中獎後想做的事	名字	100 萬台幣	300 萬台幣
① 出國學語言，哪一國？			
② 買汽車，哪一種牌子？			
③ 買名牌包，哪一種牌子？			
④ 幫助別人，誰？			
⑤ 學一種樂器或舞蹈			
⑥ 當老闆，開店，什麼店？			
⑦ 存起來			
⑧ 給父母			
⑨ 念大學或研究所的學費			
⑩ 結婚、生孩子			
⑪ 其他			

中了 100 萬大家最想做的前三件事：1. \_\_\_\_\_ 2. \_\_\_\_\_ 3. \_\_\_\_\_

中了 300 萬大家最想做的前三件事：1. \_\_\_\_\_ 2. \_\_\_\_\_ 3. \_\_\_\_\_

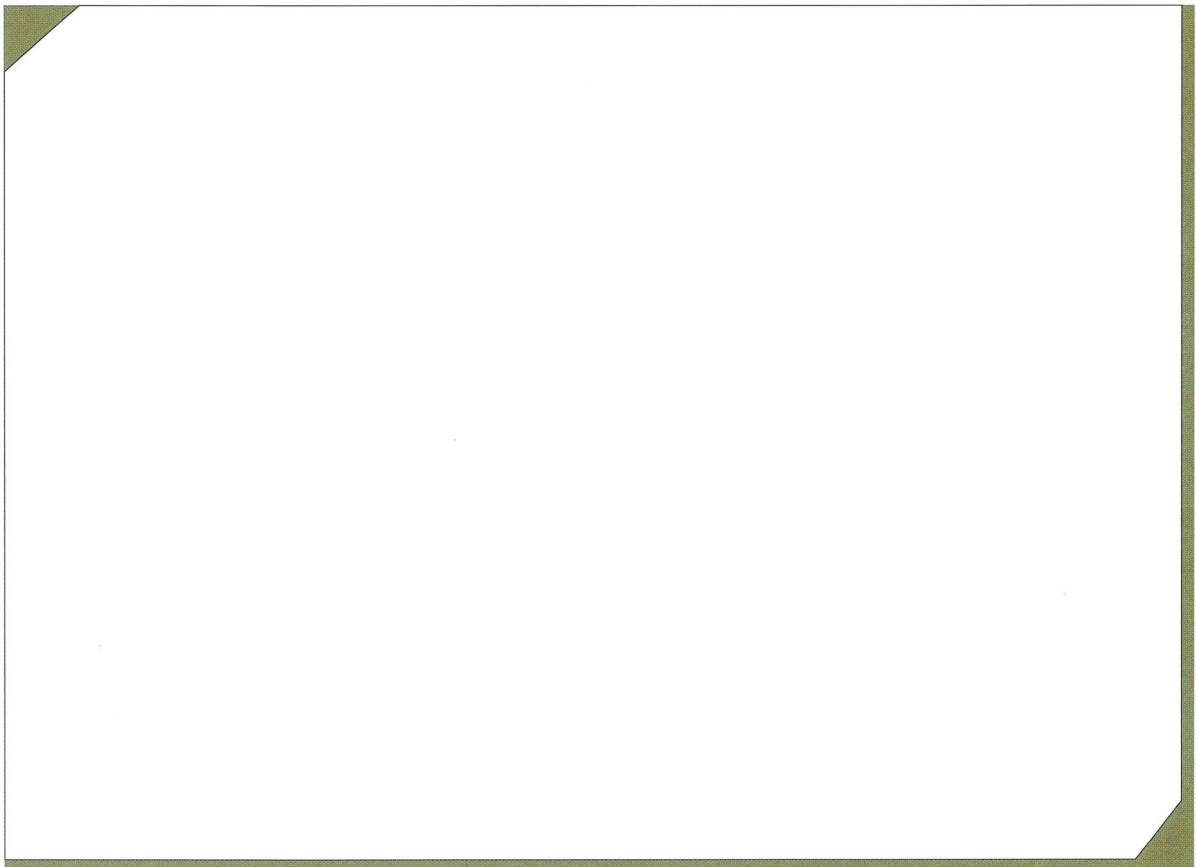
### III. 碩士、博士生畢業後做什麼？

目標：能了解別人的意見，並讓別人同意你的看法。

任務：全班分成兩組進行辯論。

A組是正方：對於碩士或博士生畢業後卻做清潔工或司機給他們正面的看法。

B組是反方：認為碩士或博士生畢業後卻做清潔工或司機是浪費國家的教育資源。



## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Office Antics: Group Buying Food

There is an interesting phenomenon taking place in offices around Taiwan: collectively purchasing food. Comparatively speaking, this type of co-worker group purchase is a rarity in other countries,



▲ Group buying is very common in workplaces in Taiwan.

第1名	紅豆抹茶生乳捲	第11名	醉蝦
第2名	羅宋麵包	第12名	杯子蛋糕
第3名	椒仙草	第13名	迷你泡芙
第4名	提拉米蘇	第14名	軟骨肉
第5名	勁嫩雞腿排	第15名	冰鎮酒鴨翅
第6名	雞腳凍	第16名	月亮蝦餅、起司蝦餅
第7名	仙樓紐	第17名	三明治
第8名	芋泥捲	第18名	活白蝦
第9名	龍蝦沙拉	第19名	檸檬奶、百香鳳梨
第10名	冰糖天山雲蓮子	第20名	牛奶麵包

where most people shop online only after work, and consumer behaviors are much more personalized. According to an analysis from one online platform, online shoppers of food products in Taiwan are mostly female “young professionals” aged 21-30, and “office working wives” aged of 31-40. Group buying saves consumers the trouble of having to go out and run around shopping. It is also a way for them to get goods at a low price, distract themselves from the banality of office work, and stay connected with friends. The build up of putting in an order, the consumption of goods, and ensuing discussion all excite gabble that lightens up the office atmosphere. The thrill that surrounds an order delivery is almost like that of winning a lottery.

Office workers work hard every day, so when a group of them get together to make a collective food purchase, whether as a solution for stress or the munchies, nobody can stop them. Too far away? We deliver! Too expensive? We'll give a discount! It takes just a few clicks of the mouse for food to show up at the door, so you can sit back and enjoy some tasty treats right in the office!

### Beauty Queen Marketing

In Taiwan, there is something special about trade shows and sales in general: As long as gorgeous women endorse a product, sales do particularly well. For computer, information technology, and automotive exhibitions, manufacturers send out their most ostentatious ‘showgirls’ as a way of attracting potential buyers, and it goes without saying that otaku –obsessive anime geeks/gamers– show up in hordes at video game conventions. As the cosplay girls –each more beautiful than the last– are repeatedly lit up by camera flashes, gawking otaku can't help but take out their cash and credit cards to buy video game points. Rather surprisingly, events such as this have led to the creation of an

otaku-fueled economic miracle.

It could be said that 檳榔西施 (Betel Nut Beauties) are the pioneers of beauty queen marketing; they are the young girls wearing scant and sexy clothing selling betel nut on the side of the road. These days, if an exhibition on bedding,

building material, wedding photography, cuisine, or even agricultural products is to attract crowds and feed buyer's hunger, having a beauty queen representing, hosting, or selling the products is standard practice. Doesn't a bowl of noodles served by a beauty queen just smell better? Don't the drinks they serve go down smoother? Stores near university campuses also compete for the looks of customers by employing beauties, and judging by their names –Fruit Beauties, Chicken Steak Beauties, Black Tea Beauties– not only are the oval faces of these saleswomen very pretty, they put up pretty numbers too.



- Beauty queen marketing can be seen in many different situations. Attractive girls are commonly seen at trade shows, fruit stands as well as betel nut stands.



### Self-Assessment Checklist

我能談一談現代年輕人升學就業的情況。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能對想做的事提出解釋及說明原因。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能表達出所觀察到的社會轉變。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能和朋友討論未來的計畫。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%



*note*



LESSON

# 6

第六課

## 天搖地動

Shaking Heavens and Trembling Earth

---

### 學習目標

主題：地震

- 能談談自己國家發生過的災害。
- 能說明災害發生的原因和災害發生的地區。
- 能和其他人談論未來可能發生的災害。
- 能說明如何在災難發生時逃生。





LESSON  
6

# 天搖地動

## Shaking Heavens and Trembling Earth

對話 Dialogue

06-01



- 高來恩：昨天晚上七點左右有地震，妳知道嗎？
- 李文麗：那時候我正在車上，完全沒感覺到。我是後來看新聞才知道的。
- 高來恩：我住在二十樓，搖得好厲害。地震怎麼這麼可怕啊！
- 李文麗：不要怕，這裡經常有地震，我們都已經習慣了，昨天的地震不算大。
- 高來恩：聽說有一次台灣發生大地震，很多房子倒了，橋斷了。多恐怖啊！
- 李文麗：那一次的大地震，有很多人受傷了，還有很多人被壓死了。台灣中部災情慘重，台北也有一棟大樓倒了。

高來恩：在我的國家從來沒有發生過地震，對我來說，這是一個很特別的經驗。

李文麗：西歐、北歐、中歐都沒有地震，澳洲幾乎沒有地震，南美洲東半部也很少。

高來恩：哪些地區常發生地震呢？

李文麗：根據地球科學研究，世界上發生地震的位置大部分都在地震帶上。

高來恩：台灣的地震那麼多，台灣一定是在地震帶上。

李文麗：沒錯，像台灣、日本、菲律賓這些國家都在地震帶上，所以發生強烈地震的頻率相當高。

高來恩：現在颱風都可以預測了，地震應該也可以預測吧？

李文麗：有人說地震快來的時候，動物會出現一些徵兆，在人類還沒有感覺震動前，鳥類已經對地震有感覺了，像雞就可以預先知道。其他像老鼠、貓、狗、馬……等等，也會預先知道，可是因為都沒有經過證實，所以到現在地震還是沒辦法預測。

高來恩：既然地震是沒辦法預測的，我們應該怎麼辦？

李文麗：我們平常要隨時做好準備，萬一發生地震就知道怎麼應變了。

高來恩：那麼我們要怎麼做準備呢？

李文麗：家中要準備一個救生包，就放在隨手拿得到的地方。

高來恩：可是如果大地震沒發生，那我不是白準備了嗎？

李文麗：不要嫌麻煩，有備無患，事前準備總是比較好啊！

課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

高来恩：昨天晚上七点左右有地震，你知道吗？

李文丽：那时候我正在车上，完全没感觉到。我是后来看新闻才知道的。

高来恩：我住在二十楼，摇得好厉害。地震怎么这么可怕啊！

李文丽：不要怕，这里经常有地震，我们都已经习惯了，昨天的地震不算大。

高来恩：听说有一次台湾发生大地震，很多房子倒了，桥断了。多恐怖啊！

李文丽：那一次的大地震，有很多人受伤了，还有很多人被压死了。台湾中部灾情惨重，台北也有一栋大楼倒了。

高来恩：在我的国家从来没有发生过地震，对我来说，这是一个很特别的经验。

李文丽：西欧、北欧、中欧都没有地震，澳洲几乎没有地震，南美洲东半部也很少。

高来恩：哪些地区常发生地震呢？

李文丽：根据地球科学研究，世界上发生地震的位置大部分都在地震带上。

高来恩：台湾的地震那么多，台湾一定是在地震带上。

李文丽：没错，像台湾、日本、菲律宾这些国家都在地震带上，所以发生强烈地震的频率相当高。

高来恩：现在台风都可以预测了，地震应该也可以预测吧？

李文丽：有人说地震快来的时候，动物会出现一些征兆，在人类还没有感觉震动前，鸟类已经对地震有感觉了，像鸡就可以预先知道。其他像老鼠、猫、狗、马……等等，也会预先知道，可是因为都没有经过证实，所以到现在地震还是没办法预测。

高来恩：既然地震是没办法预测的，我们应该怎么办？

李文丽：我们平常要随时做好准备，万一发生地震就知道怎么应变了。

高来恩：那么我们要怎么做准备呢？

李文丽：家中要准备一个救生包，就放在随手拿得到的地方。

高来恩：可是如果大地震没发生，那我不是白准备了吗？

李文丽：不要嫌麻烦，有备无患，事前准备总是比较好啊！

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I

06-02

## People in the Dialogue

1	高來恩	Gāo Lái'ēn	高 來 恩		a man from Switzerland
---	-----	------------	-------	--	------------------------

## Vocabulary

2	地震	dìzhèn	地 震	(N)	earthquake
3	搖	yáo	搖	(Vp)	to rock, shake
4	厲害	lihài	厲 害	(Vs)	fierce, formidable
5	經常	jīngcháng	經 常	(Adv)	frequently
6	倒	dǎo	倒	(Vp)	to collapse
7	橋	qiáo	橋	(N)	bridge
8	斷	duàn	斷	(Vp)	to break, snap
9	多	duó	多	(Adv)	so
10	地區	dìqū	地 區	(N)	region
11	強烈	qiángliè	強 烈	(Vs)	strong
12	頻率	pínlǜ	頻 率	(N)	frequency
13	預測	yùcè	預 測	(V)	to predict, forecast
14	徵兆	zhēngzhào	徵 兆	(N)	sign, omen
15	鳥類	niǎolèi	鳥 類	(N)	birds
16	雞	jī	雞	(N)	chicken
17	預先	yùxiān	預 先	(Adv)	in advance
18	老鼠	lǎoshǔ	老 鼠	(N)	mouse, rat
19	貓	māo	貓	(N)	cat
20	馬	mǎ	馬	(N)	horse
21	證實	zhèngshí	證 實	(V)	to verify
22	應變	yìngbiàn	應 變	(Vi)	to meet an emergency
23	隨手	suíshǒu	隨 手	(Adv)	within easy reach

24	白	bái	ㄅㄞˊ	(Adv)	in vain
25	嫌	xián	ㄒㄧㄢˊ	(Vst)	to grumble
26	事前	shìqián	ㄕㄨㄛˋ ㄑㄧㄢˊ	(Adv)	in advance
27	總是	zǒngshì	ㄗㄨㄥˇ ㄕㄨㄟˋ	(Adv)	always

### Names

28	西歐	Xī Ōu	ㄒㄧ ㄛㄨ	Western Europe
29	北歐	Běi Ōu	ㄅㄟˋ ㄛㄨ	Northern Europe
30	中歐	Zhōng Ōu	ㄓㄨㄥ ㄛㄨ	Central Europe
31	澳洲	Àozhōu	ㄞˋ ㄓㄨ	Australia
32	南美洲	Nán Měizhōu	ㄋㄢˊ ㄇㄟˋ ㄓㄨ	South America
33	地球科學	dìqiú kēxué	ㄉㄧˋ ㄑㄩˊ ㄎㄜˊ ㄒㄨㄟˊ	earth science studies
34	菲律賓	Fēilǜbīn	ㄈㄟˋ ㄌㄩˋ ㄅㄧㄣ	the Philippines

### Phrases

35	天搖地動	tiānyáo dìdòng	ㄊㄧㄢ ㄩㄠ ㄉㄧˋ ㄉㄨㄥˋ	swaying heavens and trembling earth, earth-shaking
36	壓死	yā sǐ	ㄩㄢ ㄙˇ	crushed to death
37	災情慘重	zāiqíng cǎnzhòng	ㄓㄞ ㄑㄩㄥ ㄘㄢˇ ㄓㄨㄥˋ	in serious disaster
38	東半部	dōngbànbù	ㄉㄨㄥ ㄅㄢˋ ㄅㄨˋ	the eastern half
39	地震帶	dìzhèn dài	ㄉㄧˋ ㄓㄨㄣˋ ㄉㄞˋ	seismic zone, earthquake belt
40	救生包	jiùshēng bāo	ㄐㄩˋ ㄕㄨㄥ ㄅㄠ	survival kit, survival pack
41	有備無患	yǒubèi wúhuàn	ㄩˇ ㄅㄟˋ ㄨˊ ㄏㄨㄢˋ	be prepared, be on the safe side

## 短文 Reading

06-03

## 地震時如何逃生

(李文麗和高來恩去聽演講)

大家好！今天我很高興到這裡來跟大家談一談地震發生時如何逃生及應變。雖然現在科技已經很發達了，但是地震還是沒有辦法避免的天災，我們應該隨時做好準備，才可以讓災害減少到最低的程度。

首先我們在家裡要準備一個救生包，其次要練習如何在災難發生時逃生。救生包裡面應該放一些緊急時的必需品，譬如手電筒、水、餅乾等等。平時要和家人練習怎麼逃生，知道各種狀況發生時應該怎麼辦，這樣萬一發生地震才不會慌張。要是晚上停電，我們得在黑暗中找到逃生的方向，也應該先和家人約好逃生後集合的地點，這是平常可以練習的。

另外要檢查房子有沒有裂縫？家裡的擺飾會不會在地震時掉下來？當地震發生時，逃生前應該先關瓦斯開關，才不會發生火災；還要把門打開，免得因為門框歪了，打不開門。地震的時候，如果人在房子裡，要趕快找東西保護頭部。逃生時最重要的是冷靜，如果一慌張，就容易錯過逃生的機會。

如果地震非常厲害，大到連站都站不穩，這時候不要急著往外面跑，因為這時可能會有櫃子倒下來，甚至牆壁也會倒塌。急著往外面跑，或是搭電梯下樓，不但不安全，反而更危險。一棟房子最堅固的地方就是柱子，所以柱子的旁邊是比較安全的。也有專家建議，可以躲在比較堅固的桌子旁邊，那麼當櫃子或牆壁倒下來的時候會先碰到桌子，形成一個保護自己的三角形空間。



如果地震發生後造成很嚴重的災害，我們要讓自己盡量保持平靜，讓最需要幫助的人先得到照顧，要聽救災人員的指示，這樣災後的救援行動和重建工作才會更順利。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

#### 地震時如何逃生

(李文麗和高來恩去聽演講)

大家好！今天我很高興到這裡來跟大家談一談地震發生時如何逃生及應變。雖然現在科技已經很發達了，但是地震還是沒有辦法避免的天災，我們應該隨時做好準備，才可以讓災害減少到最低的程度。

首先我們在家里要準備一個救生包，其次要練習如何在災難發生時逃生。救生包里面應該放一些緊急時的必需品，譬如手電筒、水、餅乾等等。平時要和家人練習怎麼逃生，知道各種狀況發生時應該怎麼辦，這樣萬一發生地震才不會慌張。要是晚上停電，我們得在黑暗中找到逃生的方向，也應該先和家人約好逃生後集合的地点，這是平常可以練習的。

另外要檢查房子有沒有裂縫？家里的擺飾會不會在地震時掉下來？當地震發生時，逃生前應該先關瓦斯開關，才不會發生火災；還要把門打開，免得因為門框歪了，打不開門。地震的時候，如果人在房子里，要趕快找東西保護頭部。逃生時最重要的是冷靜，如果一慌張，就容易錯過逃生的機會。

如果地震非常厲害，大到連站都站不穩，這時候不要急着往外面跑，因為這時可能會有櫃子倒下來，甚至牆壁也會倒塌。急着往外面跑，或是搭電梯下樓，不但不安全，反而更危險。一棟房子最堅固的地方就是柱子，所以柱子的旁邊是比較安全的。也有專家建議，可以躲在比較堅固的桌子旁邊，那麼當櫃子或牆壁倒下來的时候会先碰到桌子，形成一個保护自己的三角形空間。

如果地震發生後造成很嚴重的災害，我們要讓自己盡量保持平靜，讓最需要幫助的人先得到照顧，要聽救災人員的指示，這樣災後的救援行動和重建工作才會更順利。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



06-04

## Vocabulary

1	如何	rúhé	如何	(Adv)	how
2	逃生	táoshēng	逃生	(Vi)	to evacuate
3	發達	fādá	發達	(Vs)	advanced, developed
4	天災	tiānzāi	天災	(N)	natural disaster
5	災害	zāihài	災害	(N)	disaster, damage (from a disaster)
6	程度	chéngdù	程度	(N)	degree, level
7	首先	shǒuxiān	首先	(Adv)	first of all
8	其次	qíci	其次	(Adv)	second, next, then
9	災難	zāinàn	災難	(N)	disaster
10	緊急	jǐnjí	緊急	(Vs)	in emergency
11	必需品	bìxūpǐn	必需品	(N)	necessities (必需 bìxū, essential, indispensable)
12	譬如	pìrú	譬如	(Vst)	for example, like
13	手電筒	shǒudiàntǒng	手電筒	(N)	flashlight, torch
14	餅乾	bǐnggān	餅乾	(N)	crackers, cookies
15	平時	píngshí	平時	(N)	in ordinary times
16	狀況	zhuàngkuàng	狀況	(N)	situation, circumstance
17	慌張	huāngzhāng	慌張	(Vs)	to panic, be flustered
18	停電	tíngdiàn	停電	(Vp-sep)	to have a power outage
19	黑暗	hēi'àn	黑暗	(N)	the darkness
20	方向	fāngxiàng	方向	(N)	direction
21	集合	jíhé	集合	(Vi)	to meet, assemble
22	裂縫	lièfèng	裂縫	(N)	crack
23	瓦斯	wǎsī	瓦斯	(N)	natural gas
24	開關	kāiguān	開關	(N)	switch



25	火災	huǒzāi	火 災	(N)	fire (disaster), conflagration
26	門框	ménkǒng	門 框	(N)	door frame
27	歪	wāi	歪	(Vp)	askew, slanted, crooked
28	頭部	tóubù	頭 部	(N)	head
29	冷靜	lěngjìng	冷 靜	(Vs)	cool-headed, calm
30	穩	wěn	穩	(Vs)	steady
31	櫃子	guìzi	櫃 子	(N)	closet, cabinet
32	牆壁	qiángbì	牆 壁	(N)	wall
33	倒塌	dǎotā	倒 塌	(Vp)	to collapse
34	電梯	diàntī	電 梯	(N)	elevator
35	反而	fǎn'ér	反 而	(Conj)	on the contrary, rather
36	堅固	jiāngù	堅 固	(Vs)	strong, firm, solid
37	柱子	zhùzi	柱 子	(N)	pillar, column
38	碰	pèng	碰	(V)	to hit, bump into
39	形成	xíngchéng	形 成	(V)	to form
40	三角形	sānjiǎoxíng	三 角 形	(N)	triangle
41	保持	bǎochí	保 持	(V)	to remain, stay
42	平靜	píngjìng	平 靜	(Vs)	calm
43	指示	zhǐshì	指 示	(N)	instructions, commands
44	救援	jiùyuán	救 援	(Vi)	to rescue
45	行動	xíngdòng	行 動	(N)	activity, action, operations

### Phrases

46	掉下來	diàoxiàlái	掉 下 來	to fall down, to drop
47	倒下來	dǎoxiàlái	倒 下 來	to fall over, to collapse
48	救災人員	jiùzāi rényuán	救 災 人 員	rescue personnel

## 文法 Grammar

I. 怎麼這麼 *why so...?*  06-05 英譯 p.143

**Function:** These two adverbs, 怎麼 and 這麼, are combined in this instance to convey the speaker's amazement. Only state verbs follow them.

- ① A: 聽說小王每天都去夜市吃雞排。  
B: 他怎麼這麼愛吃雞排?!
- ② A: 這件羊毛外套一件賣三萬塊錢。  
B: 怎麼這麼貴?!
- ③ A: 這位女明星得了今年的最佳女主角獎。  
B: 她還這麼年輕, 演技怎麼這麼好!
- ④ A: 在荷蘭就算下雪, 孩子們也會到戶外活動。  
B: 怎麼這麼不怕冷?!
- ⑤ A: 下訂單以後 24 小時就能收到訂購的東西。  
B: 怎麼這麼快?!

## 練習 Exercise

Based on each statement, please use 怎麼這麼 to express exclamation.

- ① 我休學來台灣念書, 都沒花父母的錢, 我有獎學金。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_ ? !
- ② 這次口試, 老師問的問題我都不懂。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_ ? !
- ③ 你吃吃看, 這是我們這裡最有名的麵包師傅做的麵包。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_ ? !
- ④ 大家都喜歡聽他們的歌, 他們的演唱會總是擠滿了人。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_ ? !
- ⑤ 他自己開了一家店, 一年能做兩億的生意。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_ ? !

## II. Intensifying Adverb 多 *how* 06-06

英譯 p.143

**Function:** 多 expresses a high level of intensity, an exaggeration, or charged emotion. It is frequently used at the end of a sentence, often followed by the particle 呀 or 啊.

- ① 這裡的風景多美啊！真是百聞不如一見。
- ② 你看，老闆給我的薪水這麼少，多小氣呀！
- ③ 表弟每天搭計程車去學校上課，多浪費啊！
- ④ 你不知道導演他的脾氣多暴躁！動不動就罵人。
- ⑤ 這棟建築多堅固啊！地震以後只有它沒倒。

### 練習 Exercise

Please use 多 with the state verb in the box to complete the following sentences, with exclamatory effect.

厲害 / 糟 / 豐盛 / 刺激 / 自在

- ① 你看，奶奶今天準備的晚餐有這麼多好吃的菜，  
\_\_\_\_\_ 啊！
- ② 阿明已經被當了三次，\_\_\_\_\_ 啊！
- ③ 騎腳踏車去旅行真方便，想去哪裡就去哪裡，  
\_\_\_\_\_ ！
- ④ 阿建才三十二歲，一年的薪水就有五百萬，  
\_\_\_\_\_ 呀！
- ⑤ 恐怖片\_\_\_\_\_ 呀！愛情片有什麼好看？

## III. The Various Functions of 多 06-07

英譯 p.143

**Function:**

1. Vs, abundant (productive use). 多 in this function can be used either as a main verb (predicator) or as a modifier. In both functions, it must be preceded by 很, e.g.,

- (1) 經濟情況好的時候，就業機會很多。(as main verb)
- (2) 在這個時代，選擇網路購物的人很多。(as main verb)
- (3) 和平東路上有很多便利商店。(as modifier)
- (4) 捷運站或公園裡都有很多裝置藝術。(as modifier)

2. Vs, various, numerous (unproductive). These are isolated facts and must be learned as such.

- (1) 多 followed by measures, e.g., 多種, 多年, 多樣.
  - a. 多位教授都認為應該改變目前的教育制度。
  - b. 網路商店裡的衣服有多種款式。
- (2) 多 in 4-character frames (四字格), e.g., 多子多孫 (lit. to have many sons and grandsons; to have a large family), 多災多難 (to experience many calamities; plagued by misfortune (can be used literally or figuratively)), 多才多藝 (to be skilled or talented in many areas; multi-talented).

3. Adv. (productive)

- (1) primarily serving as an adverbial occurring before a verb phrase (VP), e.g.,
  - a. 我已經訂了豬腳麵線和蛋。等一下你多吃一點。(B1, L13)
  - b. 我還得多學一點。(B2, L1)
  - c. 沒想到二十年以後還能見面，以後有時間要多聯絡。
- (2) 多 can also be used as an adverbial complement, occurring after verbs. (productive). In this function, it typically associates with 了, e.g.,
  - a. 漢堡吃多了對健康不好。(B2, L12)
  - b. 謝謝妳，好多了。我吃了一包藥以後，睡得比昨天好。(B1, L15)
  - c. 對小玲來說，網路的虛擬關係比現實生活中的關係簡單多了。(B4, L1)
- (3) 多 reduplicated, unproductive, e.g., 多多幫忙, 多多鼓勵, 多多支持.
  - a. 麻煩老師多多照顧這個孩子。
  - b. 您真有學問，我要多多跟您學習。
  - c. 要學好中文得多多練習。

## IV. 白 *in vain, for nothing*

06-08

英譯 p.143

### Function:

1. This adverb modifies action verbs and carries the meaning “to do the action in vain”, “to have no effect at all.”
  - (1) 我說了那麼多次，你還是聽不懂，我真是白說了。
  - (2) 媽媽做了好多菜，可是家人沒回來吃，媽媽白做了。
  - (3) 我們寫的報告老師說不用交了，我們白寫了。
  - (4) 他不知道學校放颱風假，沒開門，他白去了。
  - (5) 打折的時候買的一些東西都沒用，我都白買了。
2. When used with action verbs such as 吃, 喝, and 住, in contexts where the subject normally pays to do the action, 白 + action verb means to do the action without paying for it, coupled with bad attitude and behavior.
  - (1) 有些餐廳常碰到白吃的客人，老闆覺得很頭痛。
  - (2) 他已經六個月沒付房租了，房東說不能再讓他白住了。

### 練習 Exercise

Please use 白 when completing the following sentences.

- 1 我剛洗乾淨的衣服掉在地上了，我\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 雖然他學了中文，可是他不說中文，他\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 我們準備了很多食物，可是下大雨不能去海邊了，我們  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 他等他的女朋友等了很久，可是女朋友沒來，他  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 李先生參加選舉，花了很多錢，結果落選了，他  
\_\_\_\_\_。

V. 總是 *always*  06-09

**Function:** This adverb modifies a very high frequency event.

- ① 剛學中文的學生總是不清楚「的」和「得」有什麼不一樣。
- ② 王太太總是趁百貨公司週年慶的時候買東西。
- ③ 因為那家火鍋店的海鮮很新鮮，所以門口總是有很多人。
- ④ 他的工作很忙，他總是九點多才下班。
- ⑤ 我和朋友去夜市總是吃臭豆腐、水煎包和炸雞。

## 練習 Exercise

Please fill in the blanks by changing 常常 to 總是 and providing a reason for the increase in frequency.

- ① 他常常不吃早餐就到學校來。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_，因為\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 阿建常常用平板電腦上網看漫畫。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_，因為\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 姐姐常常在考試前一天晚上熬夜念書。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_，因為\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 他常常說他對足球有興趣。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_，因為\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 考試以前學生常常去圖書館念書。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_，因為\_\_\_\_\_。

VI. The Various Meanings of the Verb Complement 下來  06-10  英譯 p.144

**Function:** When 下來 serves as a complement to a verb, forming  $V_1V_2V_3$ , the meaning can be locational (downward, upward), temporal (to continue, to keep on), or a state (remain, still).

## 1. Locational

- (1) 王太太聽見王先生在樓下叫她，就從樓上走下來了。

(2) 那本書在櫃子上，請你把那本書從櫃子上拿下來。

2. Temporal

(1) 他從十年前來這家公司，一直做下來，到現在已經當主任了。

(2) 端午節喝雄黃酒、戴香包是古代的人傳下來的習慣。

3. State

(1) 朋友想了很久，最後決定留下來。

(2) 畫家把鄉下美麗的風景畫下來。

**Usage:** Typical  $V_1V_2V_3$  can occur in both forms or modes, as seen below.

1. Actual form: V 下來，沒 V 下來

(1) 我把老闆說的話都寫下來了。

(2) 你把髒衣服脫下來洗一洗。

(3) 雖然他看見山上有凶猛的動物，可是他還在山上，他沒跑下來。

2. Potential form: V 得下來，V 不下來

(1) 月亮怎麼摘得下來？

(2) 車開得太快，停不下來。

(3) 那個衣櫥太大，我一個人搬不下來。

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following sentences with V 下來.

- ① 樓上的人到底怎麼了？你看！水從樓上\_\_\_\_\_了。
- ② 你一定要努力工作，麵包不會從天上\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 地震的時候，櫃子上的擺飾都\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 林太太說她天天都吃得很少，可是還是\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 他已經跑了一個小時了，現在累了，所以速度\_\_\_\_\_了。

VII. 當...的時候 *when, while, at the time of*  06-11

**Function:** The preposition 當 refers to the time of an event, represented by a sentence in this case.

- 1 當機會來的時候，你千萬別錯過。
- 2 她身材那麼好，當我第一次看到她的時候，我以為她是模特兒。
- 3 當別人對你說話時，你要仔細聽。
- 4 當他知道他得到獎學金時，高興地跳起來。
- 5 當你到國家戲劇院欣賞表演時，一定要關手機。

**Usage:** 當 is often optional in conversations, e.g.,

1. (當) 孩子回家的時候，媽媽已經做了很多好吃的菜。
2. (當) 來恩住在香港的時候，認識了很多香港朋友。
3. (當) 她寫功課時，發現了不少問題。

**練習 Exercise**

Supply time frames to the following sentences.

- 1 當 \_\_\_\_\_，我非常緊張。
- 2 當 \_\_\_\_\_，他想當醫生。
- 3 當 \_\_\_\_\_，天氣就涼快了。
- 4 當 \_\_\_\_\_，媽媽會給孩子禮物。
- 5 當 \_\_\_\_\_，你一定要幫助別人。

VIII. 反而 *on the contrary*  06-12

**Function:** The adverb 反而 introduces an action or situation that is contrary to the expectations of the speaker. 反而 brings in S<sub>2</sub>.

- 1 你說了那麼多次，她不但沒聽懂，反而更糊塗了。



- ② 她本來很好看，化了妝以後反而不好看。
- ③ 看了我寫的文章，老師不但沒罵我，反而說我寫得很好。
- ④ 我運動以後不但不累，反而更有精神。
- ⑤ 現在很多年輕人喜歡穿黑色的，反而是年紀大的人喜歡穿紅色的。

**Usage:** The 反而 clause is often preceded by a 不但 clause (S<sub>1</sub>) in the negative.

1. 他常常熬夜念書，成績不但沒有進步，反而退步了。
2. 他去當兵不但沒變瘦，反而胖了。
3. 我幫她打掃房間，她不但不覺得高興，反而生氣了。

### 練習 Exercise

Please respond to the following with the structure 不但 negation... 反而...

- ① A: 聽說張先生最近每天游泳，他現在比以前瘦了吧？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A: 她男朋友離開她以後，她很難過吧？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A: 你的新室友搬來以後，常常幫妳忙吧？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ A: 她哥哥在那家公司工作了那麼多年，薪水增加了吧？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ A: 李先生又熱心、又有能力，李太太一定支持他從政吧？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

## 語法例句英譯

## Grammar Examples in English

I. 怎麼這麼 *why so...?*

## Function:

- 1 A: I hear that Xiao Wang goes to the night market for a chicken cutlet every single day.  
B: How can he love chicken cutlets that much!?
- 2 A: This wool coat cost 30,000 dollars.  
B: Wow, why so expensive!?
- 3 A: This movie star won the award for best leading actress.  
B: How can she be so talented at such a young age!?
- 4 A: In Holland, the kids go out to play even if it's snowing.  
B: Wow, they really must not mind the cold!
- 5 A: You will receive your order within 24 hours of placing it.  
B: How can it be so fast!?

II. Intensifying Adverb 多 *how*

## Function:

- 1 The scenery here is so beautiful! It is something you have to see to believe.
- 2 See! My boss is paying me a pittance. What a cheapskate!
- 3 Every day my cousin takes a taxi to school. How wasteful!
- 4 You don't know how hot-tempered the director is! He'll lash out without warning.
- 5 This building is so sturdy! It's the only one that didn't collapse during the earthquake.

## III. The Various Functions of 多

## Function:

1. Vs, abundant (productive use).
  - (1) When the economy is strong, there are lots of job opportunities.
  - (2) In this modern age, many are choosing to shop online.

(3) There are lots of convenience stores on Heping East Road.

(4) There are many art installations in parks and MRT stations.

2. Vs, various, numerous (unproductive).

(1) 多 followed by measures

- a. Many professors think the current education system needs changing.
- b. Many clothing styles are available in online stores.

3. Adv. (productive)

(1) primarily serving as an adverbial

- a. I already ordered pig knuckle noodles and eggs. When it comes, make sure to eat your fill.
- b. I still have a bit more to learn.
- c. I never thought we would meet again after 20 years. Let's keep in better touch from now on.

(2) 多 can also be used as an adverbial complement

- a. Eating hamburgers too often is bad for your health.
- b. Thank you. I'm feeling much better. After taking my medication I slept better than I did yesterday.
- c. For Xiao Ling, virtual relationships are much simpler than real-life relationships.

(3) 多 reduplicated, unproductive

- a. Teacher, please take special care of this student.
- b. You are very knowledgeable; I would like to learn from you.
- c. To learn Chinese well, you must practice, practice and practice.

IV. 白 *in vain, for nothing*

## Function:

1. (1) I've told you so many times and you still don't understand. I'm really wasting my breath.

- (2) Mom made a huge meal, but nobody came home to eat, so she basically made it for nothing.
  - (3) Turns out we don't need to turn in the report the teacher told us to write. Essentially we did it for nothing.
  - (4) He didn't know that school closed on account of a typhoon, and he went in for nothing.
  - (5) I didn't end up using those things that I bought on sale. I bought them in vain.
2. (1) Some restaurants get a lot of dine-and-dashers. It's such a pain for bosses.
  - (2) He hasn't paid rent for six months. The landlord said he's not going to let him mooch any longer.

## V. 總是 *always*

### Function:

- 1 Beginning Chinese learners always have trouble understanding the difference in the functions of 的 and 得.
- 2 Mrs. Wang always goes shopping at department stores when the anniversary sales are on.
- 3 That hot pot place uses really fresh seafood, so there are always people lined up at the door.
- 4 He has a very demanding job. Most days he only gets off at 9 o'clock in the evening.
- 5 When my friends and I go to the night market, we always have stinky tofu, pan-fried pork buns, and deep fried chicken.

## VI. The Various Meanings of the Verb Complement 下來

### Function:

1. Locational
  - (1) Mrs. Wang heard Mr. Wang call her from downstairs, so she walked down.
  - (2) That book is up on the shelf. Please take it down.

2. Temporal
  - (1) He started at this company ten years ago and has stayed on ever since. He's a director now.
  - (2) Drinking realgar wine and wearing spice sachets are Dragon Boat Festival traditions that have been passed down from generation to generation.
3. State
  - (1) After much deliberation my friend decided to stay.
  - (2) The artist captured the idyllic countryside scenery in a painting.

## VII. 當...的時候 *when, while, at the time of*

### Function:

- 1 When the opportunity comes, you definitely mustn't let it slip away.
- 2 Her figure is amazing. The first time I saw her, I mistook her for a model.
- 3 When someone is talking to you, you must listen carefully.
- 4 When he heard that he got the scholarship, he leapt for joy.
- 5 When enjoying a performance at the National Theater, be sure to turn off your cell phone.

## VIII. 反而 *on the contrary*

### Function:

- 1 Even after you have repeated yourself so many times, she still doesn't get it. On the contrary, she's even more confused than before.
- 2 She's naturally pretty, and make-up actually makes her less attractive.
- 3 The teacher didn't reproach me upon looking at my paper; on the contrary, she said I did a good job.
- 4 I don't feel tired after a workout; on the contrary, I have even more energy.
- 5 Black is in style among young people these days; on the contrary, it is the older generation who wears red.

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 災難報導

目標：能描述自己國家或世界上其他的國家發生過的災難。

任務：請學生於課前準備一些實際的例子，老師可直接給任務，如有人報告風災、水災、地震、空難、船難、颱風、龍捲風…，再向全班報告，報告可用「新聞報導」方式，報導內容包括人、事、時、地、物。將任務要求（人事時地物）融入播報內容。學生說明在哪裡發生過什麼災難？是什麼時候發生的？災難發生的原因是什麼？造成什麼影響和什麼問題？

### II. 如果明天是世界末日

目標：能根據主題表達自己對未來的想法。

任務：請學生說一說「如果明天是世界末日」，今天最想做什麼？為什麼想做這些事？

### III. 如何避免災害及應變

目標：能表達自己的想法，並說明原因。

任務：學習說明如何避免災害發生，災害發生時如何應變，如何逃避災難。學生分組互相訪問，如果發生災害，要帶那些東西？先填下面表格，選出救生包裡應該準備哪些東西，討論以後，同學互相提問題，並討論出結果。

救生包裡應該準備哪些東西？請在下面表格選「✓」應該準備的東西，並說明原因（「0」表示不重要的東西或沒有必要，「5」表示很重要或必要）

應該準備的東西	0	1	2	3	4	5	需要準備的原因
餅乾							
手電筒							
口哨 (whistle)							
口罩 (mask)							
藥品							
化妝品							
水							
現金							
其他 ( )							

綜合結論：

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Taiwan's Funeral Customs

After living in Taiwan for a long enough time, many foreigners come into contact with the local funeral culture, and it never fails to leave a lasting impression. According to custom, when someone passes away, family members of the deceased burn paper money in the mourning hall. They believe that this paper money can be used by the deceased in the after life.

In addition to paper money, there are many other burnable implements that are offered to ensure a good afterlife. Families can buy paper items of all kinds from the funeral parlor shop, ranging from smaller items like glasses, watches, and cell phones, to bigger ones like computers, houses, beds, fridges, TVs, stereo systems, cars, and scooters, everything one could possibly need.

Traditionally speaking, funerals in Taiwan also incorporate ‘professional mourners’, which are women hired specifically to weep and wail. It is said that, a long time ago, if an elder family member passed away, and their daughter was unable to come home in time for the funeral, she would have to hire a filial woman to wail on her behalf. Even today, this custom of substitute mourners is adhered to in Taiwan, where they are called 孝女白琴 (Xiao Nü Bai Qin), or Bai Qin the Filial Daughter. The name originates from 孝女白瓊 (Xiao Nü Bai Qiong), a character in the Taiwanese glove puppet play 雲州大儒俠 (The Scholar Swordsman), but the pronunciation of the last character of her name (Qiong) has evolved into the current form, “Qin”.

In traditional funerals, filial sons and daughters refer to the children of the deceased; they are to deliver the eulogy should an elder family member pass away. If the deceased has no children a funeral director acts as a substitute, while some families, even those with surviving children, will still hire a professional mourner to make the funeral seem more somber.



▲ People burn paper money and model houses for the deceased.



▲ Traditional funerals have professional mourners who weep and wail for the deceased on behalf of the family.

Present-day funeral processes are much simpler than those in the days of old. Friends and family go to the home of the deceased and offer their condolences by giving money in a white envelope, with the first number of the total amount always being odd. The grieving family returns the favor by giving a towel or handkerchief. At the end of a funeral guests are to leave quietly, and they are not supposed to turn around. Likewise, family of the deceased are also not supposed to say “see you again”, because death is a grievous thing, and not something anyone wants ‘again’.



▲ Other possible burnt offering include liquor, Mahjong, model vehicles, etc.

▲ Those offering condolences give the mourning family a white envelope containing an odd-numbered amount of money. The family gives them a towel in return.

### Self-Assessment Checklist

我能談談自己國家發生過的災害。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能說明災害發生的原因和災害發生的地區。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能和他人談論未來可能發生的災害。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能說明如何在災難發生時逃生。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

LESSON

7

第七課

大學生的事

College Student Matters

---

學習目標

主題：大學生活

- 能討論大學的生活規劃。
- 能討論感情的事。
- 能討論大學社團的活動。
- 能討論大學生對未來的事業規劃。





LESSON  
7

# 大學生的事

## College Student Matters

對話 Dialogue

07-01



- 博 文：學妹，要不要去社團辦公室？有幾個一年級的學弟要我教他們彈吉他。
- 玉 珍：我不能去，我晚上要打工，得趁下午有空時去圖書館寫報告，要不然就交不出來了。明天再去吧！
- 博 文：可是我明天白天有兩個家教，晚上跟女朋友約好了，根本沒有時間。
- 玉 珍：學長，你還真忙！欸！對了！你的畢業展做得怎麼樣了？
- 博 文：唉！進度已經落後了，教授一下說要這樣做，一下說要那樣做，害我改來改去，現在連二分之一都還沒完成。有的地方一連改了三次，教授還是覺得不滿意。

玉 珍：做畢業展真的很痛苦，雖然我兩年後才要做，我想我還是早一點開始準備，免得到時候來不及，畢不了業。

博 文：妳這樣想是對的，我現在也有點後悔沒有早一點開始準備，如果二、三年級的時候少約會，少玩一點，多念點書，現在大概會好一點。

玉 珍：可是學長，如果大學四年光念書，沒有參加社團，沒有交男女朋友，那念大學還有什麼意思呢？像學長你，又會念書，又會玩，跟女朋友的感情也很穩定，這才是大學生該做的事啊！不像我，到現在連個男朋友都沒有。

博 文：是啊！我二、三年級的時候也覺得一生就上一次大學，當然要談戀愛、玩個夠。不過如果時光可以倒流，有幾件事我會認真做。

玉 珍：哪幾件事？

博 文：例如加強我的語言能力，至少把一種外語學好一點。現在我的英文普普通通，西班牙文考試也都是低空飛過，如果回到二年級，我一定會努力把外語學好。

玉 珍：嗯，語言能力的確很重要。

博 文：另外，我也會積極地申請當交換學生，不管是英文環境還是西文環境，都有助於外語的訓練。

玉 珍：可是到外國一年，就會晚一年畢業。

博 文：這有什麼關係呢？一年在人的一生中只不過是幾十分之一，為了將來，多花一年也是值得的。

玉 珍：除了加強語言以外，還有呢？

博文：我會在寒暑假爭取到企業實習的機會。對一個大學生來說，進入職場實習，才能真正知道職場是什麼，也才知道「工作」是什麼。學妹，妳現在才二年級，現在開始還來得及！

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

博文：学妹，要不要去社团办公室？有几个一年级的学弟要我教他们弹吉他。

玉珍：我不能去，我晚上要打工，得趁下午有空时去图书馆写报告，要不然就交不出来了。明天再去吧！

博文：可是我明天白天有两个家教，晚上跟女朋友约好了，根本没有时间。

玉珍：学长，你还真忙！欸！对了！你的毕业展做得怎么样了？

博文：唉！进度已经落后了，教授一下说要这样做，一下说要那样做，害我改来改去，现在连二分之一都还没完成。有的地方一连改了三次，教授还是觉得不满意。

玉珍：做毕业展真的很痛苦，虽然我两年后才要做，我想我还是早一点开始准备，免得到时候来不及，毕不了业。

博文：妳这样想是对的，我现在也有点后悔没有早一点开始准备，如果二、三年级的时候少约会，少玩一点，多念点书，现在大概会好一点。

玉珍：可是学长，如果大学四年光念书，没有参加社团，没有交男女朋友，那念大学还有什么意思呢？像学长你，又会念书，又会玩，跟女朋友的感情也很稳定，这才是大学生该做的事啊！不像我，到现在连个男朋友都没有。

博文：是啊！我二、三年级的时候也觉得一生就上一次大学，当然要谈恋爱、玩个够。不过如果时光可以倒流，有几件事我会认真做。

- 玉 珍：哪几件事？
- 博 文：例如加强我的语言能力，至少把一种外语学好一点。现在我的英文普普通通，西班牙文考试也都是低空飞过，如果回到二年级，我一定会努力把外语学好。
- 玉 珍：嗯，语言能力的确很重要。
- 博 文：另外，我也会积极地申请当交换学生，不管是英文环境还是西文环境，都有助于外语的训练。
- 玉 珍：可是到外国一年，就会晚一年毕业。
- 博 文：这有什么关系呢？一年在人的一生中只不过是几十分之一，为了将来，多花一年也是值得的。
- 玉 珍：除了加强语言以外，还有呢？
- 博 文：我会在寒暑假争取到企业实习的机会。对一个大学生来说，进入职场实习，才能真正知道职场是什么，也才知道「工作」是什么。学妹，你现在才二年级，现在开始还来得及！

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



## People in the Dialogue

1	博文	Bówén	ㄅㄛˊ ㄨㄣˊ	a senior in college
2	玉珍	Yùzhēn	ㄩˋ ㄓㄣ	a sophomore in college

## Vocabulary

3	學妹	xué mèi	ㄒㄨㄛˊ ㄇㄟˋ	(N)	female lower classmate (see culture notes)
4	學弟	xué dì	ㄒㄨㄛˊ ㄉㄧˋ	(N)	male lower classmate
5	彈	tán	ㄊㄢˊ	(V)	to play (piano, guitar)
6	吉他	jítā	ㄐㄧˊ ㄊㄚ	(N)	guitar
7	交	jiāo	ㄐㄧㄠ	(V)	to submit, hand in
8	家教	jiājiào	ㄐㄧㄠ ㄐㄧㄠˋ	(N)	coach, tutor
9	學長	xuézhǎng	ㄒㄨㄛˊ ㄓㄤˇ	(N)	male upper classmate

10	還	hái	ㄏㄞˊ	(Adv)	to one's surprise
11	進度	jìndù	ㄐㄧˋㄉㄨˋ	(N)	progress
12	落後	luòhòu	ㄌㄨㄛˋ ㄏㄡˋ	(Vp)	to fall behind, lag
13	完成	wánchéng	ㄨㄢˊ ㄔㄥˊ	(Vpt)	to complete
14	一連	yīlián	ㄧ ㄌㄧㄢˊ	(Adv)	in a row, in succession
15	約會	yuēhuì	ㄩㄝˋ ㄏㄨㄟˋ	(V-sep)	to make a date/appointment
16	一生	yìshēng	ㄧˋ ㄕㄥ	(N)	(for) one's life
17	時光	shíguāng	ㄕㄨˊ ㄍㄨㄤ	(N)	time
18	倒流	dàoliú	ㄉㄠˋ ㄌㄧㄡˊ	(Vp)	to flow backward
19	加強	jiāqiáng	ㄐㄧㄞ ㄑㄩㄥˊ	(V)	to strengthen
20	至少	zhìshǎo	ㄓì ㄕㄨㄛˋ	(Adv)	at least
21	訓練	xùnliàn	ㄒㄩㄣˋ ㄌㄧㄢˋ	(N/V)	training; to train
22	外國	wàiguó	ㄨㄞˋ ㄍㄨㄛˊ	(N)	other countries, abroad, foreign
23	爭取	zhēngqǔ	ㄓㄥ ㄑǔ	(V)	to vie for, compete for
24	實習	shíxí	ㄕㄨˊ ㄒㄧˊ	(Vi)	to intern

### Phrases

25	二分之一	èrfēn zhīyī	ㄦˋ ㄈㄣ ㄓㄧ ㄩ ㄧ	1/2
26	一下... 一下...	yíxià...yíxià...	ㄧˋ ㄒㄩㄚˋ ... ㄧˋ ㄒㄩㄚˋ ...	measure phrase, describing fast-changing alternating scenes of two activities
27	到時候	dào shíhòu	ㄉㄠˋ ㄕㄨˊ ㄏㄡˋ	at that time, when the time comes
28	談戀愛	tán liànài	ㄊㄢˊ ㄌㄧㄢˋ ㄞˋ	to be in love, go steady (said of dating couples)
29	低空飛過	dīkōng fēiguò	ㄉㄧ ㄎㄨㄥ ㄈㄟ ㄍㄨㄛˋ	barely managed to pass (a test, course)
30	有助於	yǒuzhùyú	ㄩˋ ㄓㄨˋ ㄩˊ ㄩˊ	to help in something, be beneficial to something
31	寒暑假	hánshǔ jià	ㄏㄢˊ ㄕㄨˋ ㄐㄧㄚˋ	winter and summer vacations

## 短文 Reading

07-03

## 暗戀

何雅婷最近注意到同學玉珍上課時不太專心，目光總是跟著男同學何清源移動，於是雅婷下課後找了玉珍一起吃飯。原來玉珍因為暗戀同學何清源而非常煩惱。其實她在開學的第一天，就對何清源一見鍾情了。

何清源是學校的風雲人物，不但擔任學生會的會長，還是籃球校隊隊員，長得高大、帥氣。他有一雙迷死人的眼睛，個性開朗、活潑。有他在的地方就笑聲不斷。玉珍總是會忍不住注意清源的一舉一動。連在夢裡清源對她微笑，也會讓她一整天心情都很好。



情人節的前一天，玉珍親手做了巧克力，想送給清源。結果當天看見清源桌上已經放了一大堆的巧克力，於是玉珍就把巧克力收了起來。雅婷建議玉珍去向清源告白，可是玉珍不敢。她覺得像清源這樣的萬人迷，怎麼可能喜歡這麼普通的自己？去告白只是讓自己受傷而已。

看到玉珍這樣，雅婷很想幫她，於是，雅婷去找清源的好朋友林榮華。她聽榮華說，清源有一個交往不久的女朋友，那個女生是中文系的系花。幾個月前，清源開始追那個女生，每天打電話、傳簡訊、寫情書給她。剛開始，那個女生的態度很曖昧，讓清源弄不清楚。過了一個多月，那個女生終於答應跟他交往！他開心得不得了。

就這樣，清源跟女朋友甜甜蜜蜜地交往了兩、三個月。過了不久，清源發現，約會的時候，女朋友對他的態度沒有原來那麼溫柔了，動不動就生氣，傳給她的訊息也常常已讀不回。有時候清源看見女朋友跟其他男生有說有笑，讓他忌妒死了，很沒有安全感。要是清源為了這樣的事情生氣，女朋友就說他太容易吃醋了。他們吵架往往都是為了這樣的事情。有一次，榮華看見清源的女朋友跟一

個男生手牽手散步，還看見那個男的吻了她。榮華想：「難道她劈腿了？糟糕！我該不該告訴清源呢？」

聽到這裡，雅婷打算馬上去告訴玉珍，讓玉珍趁這個機會把清源搶過來。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

#### 暗恋

何雅婷最近注意到同学玉珍上课时不太专心，目光总是跟着男同学何清源移动，于是雅婷下课后找了玉珍一起吃饭。原来玉珍因为暗恋同学何清源而非常烦恼。其实她在开学的第一天，就对何清源一见钟情了。

何清源是学校的风云人物，不但担任学生会的会长，还是篮球校队队员，长得高大、帅气。他有一双迷死人的眼睛，个性开朗、活泼。有他在的地方就笑声不断。玉珍总是会忍不住注意清源的一举一动。连在梦里清源对她微笑，也会让她一整天心情都很好。

情人节的前一天，玉珍亲手做了巧克力，想送给清源。结果当天看见清源桌上已经放了一大堆的巧克力，于是玉珍就把巧克力收了起来。雅婷建议玉珍去向清源告白，可是玉珍不敢。她觉得像清源这样的万人迷，怎么可能喜欢这么普通的自己？去告白只是让自己受伤而已。

看到玉珍这样，雅婷很想帮她，于是，雅婷去找清源的好朋友林荣华。她听荣华说，清源有一个交往不久的女朋友，那个女生是中文系的系花。几个月前，清源开始追那个女生，每天打电话、传简讯、写情书给她。刚开始，那个女生的态度很暧昧，让清源弄不清楚。过了一个多月，那个女生终于答应跟他交往！他开心得不得了。

就这样，清源跟女朋友甜甜蜜蜜地交往了两、三个月。过了不久，清源发现，约会的时候，女朋友对他的态度没有原来那么温柔了，动不动就生气，传给她的讯息也常常已读不回。有时候清源看见女朋友跟其他男生有说有笑，让他忌妒死了，很没有安全感。要是清源为了这样的事情生气，女朋友就说他太容易吃醋了。他们吵架往往都是为了这样的事情。有一次，荣华看见清源的女朋友跟一个男生手牵手散步，还看见那个男的吻了她。荣华想：「难道她劈腿了？糟糕！我该不该告诉清源呢？」

听到这里，雅婷打算马上去告诉玉珍，让玉珍趁这个机会把清源抢过来。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



## Vocabulary

1	暗戀	ànlàn	カ ヲ	(V)	to have a crush on someone
2	目光	mùguāng	目 ノ 光	(N)	eyes, gaze
3	移動	yídòng	一 ノ カ ズ	(Vi)	to move
4	於是	yúshì	レ ハ	(Conj)	so, whereupon
5	原來	yuánlái	レ ハ カ ラ	(Adv)	the truth is
6	煩惱	fánnǎo	レ ヲ ウ ズ ル	(Vs)	to be troubled, vexed
7	擔任	dānrèn	カ ヲ ウ ケ ル	(V)	to hold the post of
8	學生會	xuéshēnghuì	レ ノ カ ズ ノ カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(N)	student union (會 -huì, organization)
9	會長	huìzhǎng	レ ノ カ ズ ノ カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(N)	president of an association, club etc...(長 -zhǎng, head)
10	校隊	xiàoduì	レ ノ カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(N)	school team
11	隊員	duìyuán	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(N)	team member (員 -yuán, member, person)
12	高大	gāodà	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(Vs)	tall and big, bulky
13	帥氣	shuàiqì	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(Vs)	dashing, handsome
14	雙	shuāng	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(M)	a pair of
15	開朗	kāilǎng	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(Vs)	cheerful
16	微笑	wéixiào	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(Vi)	to smile
17	情人節	qíng rén jié	カ ズ ノ カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(N)	Valentine's Day (節 -jié, holiday, day)
18	親手	qīnshǒu	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(Adv)	personally, with one's own hands
19	巧克力	qiǎokèlì	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(N)	chocolate
20	當天	dāngtiān	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(N)	that day
21	堆	duī	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(M)	a pile of
22	向	xiàng	レ ノ カ ズ	(Prep)	to
23	告白	gàobái	カ ズ ノ カ ズ	(Vi)	to confess



24	萬人迷	wànrénmí	万人迷	(N)	heartthrob (迷 -mí, charmer)
25	交往	jiāowǎng	交往	(Vi)	to go steady, to date
26	系花	xìhuā	系花	(N)	department beauty, the most beautiful girl in a department
27	追	zhuī	追	(V)	to chase, woo
28	情書	qíngshū	情書	(N)	love letter
29	態度	tàidù	態度	(N)	attitude
30	曖昧	àimèi	曖昧	(Vs)	ambiguous (about one's relationship)
31	甜蜜	tiánmì	甜蜜	(Vs)	sweet
32	溫柔	wēnróu	溫柔	(Vs)	tender
33	訊息	xùnxí	訊息	(N)	message
34	忌妒	jìdù	忌妒	(Vst)	to be jealous
35	安全感	ānquángǎn	安全感	(N)	the feeling of security (感 -gǎn, sense/feeling of)
36	吃醋	chīcù	吃醋	(Vp-sep)	to be jealous
37	吵架	chǎojià	吵架	(V-sep)	to quarrel, fight, argue
38	牽	qiān	牽	(V)	to hold
39	吻	wěn	吻	(V)	to kiss
40	劈腿	pītuǐ	劈腿	(Vp-sep)	to two-time
41	糟糕	zāogāo	糟糕	(Ptc)	oh no, how terrible, what bad luck!

### Names

42	何清源	Hé Qīngyuán	何清源		a male college student
43	林榮華	Lín Rónghuá	林榮華		a male college student

### Phrases

44	一見鍾情	yíjiàn zhōngqíng	一見鍾情		love at first sight
45	一舉一動	yìjǔ yídòng	一舉一動		every move

- 46 前一天 qián yì tiān 前一 天 the day before
- 47 已讀不回 yǐdú bùhuí 已 讀 不 回 read without reply

## 文法 Grammar

### I. 還 to my surprise 07-05



**Function:** This adverb expresses the speaker's surprise at something.

- ① 我的鄰居太熱情了，我還真不習慣。
- ② 昨天的火鍋還真辣，害我肚子很不舒服。
- ③ 昨晚的地震搖得還真厲害，把我嚇了一大跳。
- ④ 他每天都要運動一個小時，習慣還滿好的！
- ⑤ 我以為博文吉他彈得不好，其實他彈得還滿不錯的。

**Usage:** 還 is often followed by an adverb of degree, such as 真 and 滿 (蠻). See examples above.

### 練習 Exercise

Give comments on the facts given below, using the adverb 還.

- ① 你要朋友趕快到學校來，你想他大概需要 20 分鐘，可是他十分鐘就到了。你會怎麼對他說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 你本來以為一個朋友不會做飯，有一天他請你吃他做的菜，沒想到他做的菜很好吃。你會怎麼對他說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 你朋友每天出門以前都要先上網看看今天運氣好不好，如果不好，他就不出門了。你會怎麼對他說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。

- 4 月底到了，你收到銀行寄來的信用卡帳單，發現這個月花了好多錢。你會怎麼說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。

- 5 你在台北市找房子，發現台北的房租都不便宜。你會怎麼說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。

## II. Alternating Events with 一下…一下… 07-06



**Function:** 下 is a verbal measure, referring to very brief moments in time. This pattern describes the speaker's slight displeasure at fast-changing scenes, of usually two activities.

- 1 你別一下吃熱的，一下吃冰的，肚子會不舒服喔！
- 2 這個地方天氣還真怪，一下冷，一下熱。
- 3 我女朋友一下要我陪她去看電影，一下要我陪她去逛夜市，她到底想去哪裡？
- 4 感冒的時候一下咳嗽，一下流鼻水，真不舒服。
- 5 你一下寫功課，一下跟朋友玩，功課當然寫不完。

**Usage:** 一下 as combined, serves like an adverb. As illustrated above, it does not connect events in negation.

### 練習 Exercise

Complete the following with the pattern 一下…一下….

- 1 \_\_\_\_\_，是一個很不好的習慣。
- 2 那個人坐在路邊\_\_\_\_\_，大家都不敢從他旁邊走過去。
- 3 第一次做飯真緊張，\_\_\_\_\_，媽媽看得也跟著緊張起來了。

- 4 妳\_\_\_\_\_，到底誰才是妳男朋友啊？
- 5 這個小孩在上課的時候，\_\_\_\_\_，  
老師不得不請他的父母到學校來談一談。

### III. Various Fractions with A 分之 B 07-07



**Function:** A = dividend, B = divisor.

- 1 這本書我差不多還有五分之一沒看，大概再一天就可以看完。
- 2 我的薪水的三分之一得付房租。
- 3 因為地震，這個地方有二分之一的住宅停電。
- 4 就算有高學歷也不一定百分之百找得到好工作。
- 5 我女朋友如果看到我跟別的女生有說有笑百分之百會吃醋。

**Usage:** When the dividend is one hundred, one thousand, or ten thousand, the fraction is pronounced starting simply with bǎi (百), qiān (千), or wàn (萬), respectively. Therefore, 4% is pronounced bǎifēn zhīsì (百分之四), as opposed to \*yībǎifēn zhīsì (\*一百分之四). When both dividend and divisor are one hundred, it is pronounced bǎifēn zhībǎi (百分之百), which is also a way of expressing certainty.

#### 練習 Exercise

Please use a fraction in the form of A 分之 B when responding the following questions.

- 1 你的房租是全部生活費的幾分之幾？

\_\_\_\_\_。

- 2 一個人一生大概有幾分之幾的時間在睡覺？

\_\_\_\_\_。

3 你一天用幾分之幾的時間來念書？

\_\_\_\_\_。

4 你們班的女同學是全班的幾分之幾？

\_\_\_\_\_。

5 中國人口差不多是世界人口的幾分之幾？

\_\_\_\_\_。

#### IV. 一連 *without interruption, in rapid succession* 07-08



**Function:** The adverb 一連 refers to the duration of an activity without interruption (2, 3), or to the occurrence of events in rapid succession (1, 4, 5).

- 1 學生一連問了五個問題，老師聽到第五個已經忘了第一個了。
- 2 我已經一連三天沒睡覺了，都快生病了。
- 3 昨天她一連工作了十六個小時，回家的時候已經半夜一點了。
- 4 最近一連來了兩個大颱風，上一個來的時候，壞了的東西還來不及恢復，這一個就來了。
- 5 為了找一本很舊的書，他一連問了好幾家書店，最後才在一家舊書店找到。

#### Usage:

1. 一連 is always followed by a number phrase (五個…, 三天, 十六個小時, etc.).  
See examples above.
2. When the verb is negated, the number phrase is moved to directly after 一連.  
See 2 above.
3. 一口氣 vs. 一連  
一連 allows for interruption in between successive actions and events. 一口氣 does not allow for interruption.

## 練習 Exercise

Please rephrase the following sentences by using 一連.

- ① 你朋友今天心情很不好，到你家找你，他邊哭邊喝酒，喝了六瓶啤酒，還要喝，你覺得他已經喝太多了。你會對他說什麼？

→ \_\_\_\_\_。

- ② 有一個人開車開得太快，看到一隻狗，想停卻停不下來，先撞到一輛汽車，又撞到第二輛汽車，然後又撞到第三輛，才停下來。

→ \_\_\_\_\_。

- ③ 你朋友很喜歡一個小姐，他每天寫情書給她，寫了一百天，那位小姐才願意跟他見面。

→ \_\_\_\_\_。

- ④ 有一個活動，每年都舉行，今年已經是第五十年了。

→ \_\_\_\_\_。

- ⑤ 你等 74 號公車等了好久，公車都沒來。等了半個鐘頭，公車終於來了，後面還來了兩輛 74 號公車。

→ \_\_\_\_\_。

## V. To Have a Full Dosage of an Activity V 個夠



07-09



英譯 p.168

**Function:** This pattern expresses one's great satisfaction in being able to indulge in some activity.

- ① 好久沒去 KTV 唱歌了，這次去我要唱個夠。
- ② 聽說下個禮拜百貨公司開始打折，我要去買個夠。
- ③ 我住在學校宿舍，好久才能吃一次媽媽做的菜，每次回家都想吃個夠。

- ④ 沒關係！讓他罵個夠吧。罵夠了，他就不會那麼生氣了。
- ⑤ 這星期三晚上十點以後，啤酒打折，我跟朋友要去喝個夠。

**Usage:**

1. This pattern is more often used to refer to future activities than to past activities.
2. This pattern is an instance of the general construction “action 個 state” e.g., “吃個飽”, “看個高興”, “玩個痛快”.
3. This pattern cannot be used in the negative, e.g., \*吃個不夠、吃個不飽.

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following sentences by using V 個夠.

- ① 大明為了準備考試，已經一連好幾天都只睡三個鐘頭了，他說考完試一定要\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 週末的時候故宮博物院有很多人，今天不是假日，我可以好好地\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 我們好久沒見面了，好不容易見面了，今天我們可以\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 雖然我現在錢還沒存夠，不能去外國玩，但是等我存夠了錢，我就要去\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 媽媽一不在家，弟弟妹妹就在床上跳來跳去。他們說平常媽媽都不讓他們在床上跳，他們要趁現在\_\_\_\_\_。

**VI. 有助於 *be conducive to***  07-10

 英譯 p.168

**Function:** This pattern specifies that something or some event is helpful in or conducive to the realization of something else.

- ① 有些人認為讓孩子去打工有助於訓練他們獨立。
- ② 有人說整型有助於改善人際關係。
- ③ 多吃蔬菜、水果有助於身體健康。
- ④ 媽媽說魚湯有助於傷口的恢復。
- ⑤ 有人說多打籃球有助於長高，你認為呢？

**Usage:** This pattern is rather formal. Its colloquial counterpart is 對...有幫助, e.g., 好的教育對提高國家競爭力有幫助。(colloquial)

### 練習 Exercise

Please specify what contributes to the implementation of the following goals.

- ① \_\_\_\_\_ 有助於外語的訓練。
- ② \_\_\_\_\_ 有助於地方的發展。
- ③ 在大學時 \_\_\_\_\_ 有助於提高將來找工作的競爭力。
- ④ \_\_\_\_\_ 有助於減輕壓力。
- ⑤ \_\_\_\_\_ 有助於改善環境。

## VII. 於是... *thus, consequently...* 07-11



**Function:** 於是 is an  $S_2$  conjunction, connecting a course of action (effect) motivated by the fact (cause) given in  $S_1$ .

- ① 媽媽看小明對音樂很有興趣，於是讓他去學鋼琴。
- ② 小林覺得這家公司的薪水太低，於是決定換工作。
- ③ 今天我要開車去台中，上網查詢路況，發現高速公路正在塞車，於是我決定不走高速公路。
- ④ 因為小華成績太差了，於是媽媽決定幫他請個家教。
- ⑤ 上個星期才買的手機壞了，於是我拿到手機店要他們換新的給我。



**Usage:** 於是 vs. 所以

所以 is used in a pure cause/effect relationship. With 於是, S<sub>2</sub> is motivated rather than caused by S<sub>1</sub>. 於是 suggests next in temporal sequence. e.g.,

因為颱風來了，所以 / \*於是房子有好幾個地方壞了，於是 / \*所以我們請人來修理房子。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 於是 sentences.

- 1 孩子不吃飯，於是\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 我這次考試的成績非常好，於是\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 這個候選人怕自己選不上，於是\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 \_\_\_\_\_，於是決定跟他分手。
- 5 \_\_\_\_\_，於是我把錢借給他。

## VIII. 向 to, toward 07-12

 英譯 p.169

**Function:** Directional preposition 向 indicates the target (either person or object) of an action. Often 向 can be replaced by 跟. 向 is used mostly in writing.

- 1 雅婷建議玉珍去向清源告白，可是玉珍不敢。
- 2 我想向那家公司爭取實習的機會。
- 3 她居然敢向比她厲害的人挑戰。
- 4 警察向民眾說明塞車的原因。
- 5 新郎新娘向參加婚禮的人敬酒。

**Usage:**

1. 向 can be followed by a directional word, such as 前, 後, 左, 右, 東, 南, 上, 下, etc. to express the direction of an action, but cannot be substituted by 跟 in such a structure.

- (1) 站在那棟房子前，向前看，會看到一條河；向後看會看到一座山。
- (2) 司機先生，請在下一個路口向右轉。

2. When 向 follows a verb, said verb is usually monosyllabic. This pattern is used mostly in formal language.

- (1) 臺灣大部分的河都流向大海。
- (2) 派對上來了一個美女，大家的目光都轉向她。

### 練習 Exercise

Please properly insert 向 into the following sentences by choosing ① or ②.

- ① 老師總是說 ① 小明很用功，我們應該 ② 他學習。
- ② 我想 ① 你請教 ② 一件事。
- ③ 演講者 ① 大家強調平時準備 ② 救生包的重要性。
- ④ 美美 ① 老闆抱怨 ② 店員的服務態度不好。
- ⑤ 我 ① 上週 ② 網路書店訂購的書，到現在還沒收到。
- ⑥ 有些鳥到了冬天會 ① 南飛，找 ② 溫暖的地方。這種鳥就叫做「候鳥」。
- ⑦ 抗議的人 ① 老闆的辦公室走 ② 去。
- ⑧ 表演快開始了， ① 大家都 ② 音樂廳移動。

### 語法例句英釋

### Grammar Examples in English

#### I. 還 *to my surprise*

##### Function:

- ① My neighbors are a little too welcoming, and I'm really not used to it.
- ② The hot pot we had yesterday was very spicy, so much so that it gave me a stomach ache.
- ③ The earthquake last night shook something fierce and scared me half to death.
- ④ He exercises for an hour every day. What a great routine!
- ⑤ I thought Bowen was lousy at guitar, but it turns out he's actually pretty good.

#### II. Alternating Events with 一下... 一下...

##### Function:

- ① Don't eat hot and cold foods in such close succession like that. You'll get a stomach ache.
- ② The weather here is rather unpredictable; one moment it's cold, the next it's hot.
- ③ My girlfriend wants me to go with her to the movies one moment, then to the night market the next. I have no idea where she actually wants to go.

- 4 Having a cold is terrible, constantly coughing and having a runny nose.
- 5 If while you are doing your homework, you chat with your friends every few minutes, of course it will never get done.

### III. Various Fractions with A 分之 B

- 1 I have about  $\frac{1}{5}$  of this book left, which I will probably be able to finish after one more day of reading.
- 2  $\frac{1}{3}$  of my income goes to rent.
- 3 Half of the residences here had a power outage because of the earthquake.
- 4 The highly educated don't have a 100% guarantee of finding a job.
- 5 If my girlfriend sees me talking and laughing with other girls, she will definitely get jealous.

### IV. 一連 *without interruption, in rapid succession*

#### Function:

- 1 The students fired off five questions right in a row, and after hearing the fifth, the teacher forgot what the first one was.
- 2 It's been three full days since I've slept. I am going to be sick.
- 3 She worked for 16 hours straight yesterday, and by the time she got home it was already 1 o'clock in the morning.
- 4 The last two typhoons came in rapid succession. There wasn't enough time to fix the damages from the first before the second one landed.
- 5 He inquired at one bookstore after another, looking for a really old book, until finally he found it at a vintage bookstore.

### V. To Have a Full Dosage of an Activity V 個夠

#### Function:

- 1 I haven't done KTV in ages, and this time I'm going to sing my heart out.

- 2 I heard that sales are on next week at the department stores. I'm going to spend, spend, spend!
- 3 Living in dorm, I don't get to eat Mom's home cooking very often, so whenever I go home, I really want to stuff my face.
- 4 It's OK. Just let him get it all out. That way he will be able to cool off.
- 5 This Wednesday, beers are half off after 10 o'clock. My friends and I are going to drink to our heart's content.

### VI. 有助於 *be conducive to*

#### Function:

- 1 Some people think that having children do part-time job helps them to be independent.
- 2 Some people say that cosmetic surgery is conducive to better interpersonal relationships.
- 3 Eating fruits and vegetables is conducive to good health.
- 4 Mom says that having fish soup helps speed up recovery time for wounds.
- 5 Some people say that playing basketball is conducive to growing taller. What do you think?

### VII. 於是... *thus, consequently...*

#### Function:

- 1 Mom noticed Xiaoming taking an interest in music, so she enrolled him in piano lessons.
- 2 Xiao Lin thought the pay at this company was too low, so he changed jobs.
- 3 I'm driving to Taichung today. But when I checked the road conditions online, it showed that the highway is congested. So I decided to take a different route.
- 4 Xiaohua's marks are so bad that his mom decided to hire a tutor.
- 5 The cell phone I bought just last week stopped working, so I took it back and had them replace it.

VIII. 向 *to, toward***Function:**

- 1 Ya-ting suggested that Yu-zhen express her true feelings to Qing-yuan, but Yu-zhen doesn't dare.
- 2 I intend to vie for an internship placement with that company.
- 3 She had the guts to challenge her superior.
- 4 Police explained the reasons behind the congested traffic to the public.
- 5 The bride and groom toasted to the attendees.

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

## I. 你該獨立了

目標：對孩子什麼時候可以開始獨立生活，表達自己的意見，並說明原因。

任務：先說明自己什麼時候開始負擔自己的生活費。如果你是父母，你會讓你的孩子什麼時候開始獨立生活？為什麼？

## II. 大明的理想

目標：根據議題，說明選擇的優缺點。

任務：大明是大學法律系二年級的學生，他喜歡音樂，是學校裡的熱門音樂社的社長。大明覺得學校裡的東西越念越沒有意思，而且他將來也不打算往法律的路發展，他想走的路是音樂，再念下去只是浪費時間。大明告訴父母他想休學，專心玩音樂，往音樂的路發展。父親對大明這樣的決定非常生氣，認為大明只是因為不想用功念書，就說想玩音樂。將學生分成兩組，用以下的情形進行辯論：

正方主張「大明應該好好地把法律系念完」

反方主張「大明應該休學往自己的理想前進」

### III. 大學生常做的事

目標：能寫下別人的意見，並說明統計的結果。

任務 1：請學生問三個同學將意見填入表中，最後再提出三個大家認為大學生應該做的事前三名。

任務 2：根據班上學生國籍的不同，再進一步討論不同國籍的學生常做的事，是否跟文化有關。

	姓名 / 國籍	大學生常做的事一	大學生常做的事二	大學生常做的事三
1				
2				
3				

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Referring to Classmates

In Taiwan, the terms “學長、學姊、學弟、學妹” indicate which year fellow students enrolled in school relative to yourself. For example, you would refer to male classmates who enrolled prior to you as “學長”, whereas they would call you “學弟” or “學妹”, depending on your gender. This is independent of actual age. Similarly, “學長” and “學弟” are used in the military as terms to differentiate order of enlistment relative to a given year.



▲ It is a custom to refer to fellow schoolmates as 學長, 學姊, 學弟, 學妹 based on their relative seniority. 《聯合報》李蕙君／攝影

### Swarming

Swarming refers to the phenomenon of a sudden surge in the public interest of a certain material thing. Swarming is usually sparked by some sort of incident, and then disseminated by the media or on the internet, which subsequently influences people’s behaviors and decisions. The Taiwanese have a thing for lining up, whether for egg tarts, donuts, ramen, Hello Kitty, or Black Thunder chocolate bars; if it’s popular, they’ll line up for it. The line-up craze started in the 1990s with Portuguese-style egg tarts, and now when Taiwan popularizes anything such that it balloons into a bubble, and eventually bursts, it is referred to as “The Egg Tart Effect”.



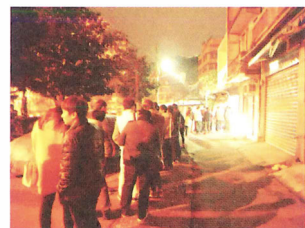
▲ 《聯合報》陳雨鑫／攝影

Swarming is very conspicuous in Taiwan; it only takes one news piece and a short online video or article to incite a fad. When something circling around the internet gets a media report, everybody knows about it, and swarming intensifies. In Taiwan, swarming occurs most often in the food industry, and many foods have become all the rage simply after an online blurb generated discussion and a subsequent report was carried out. In fact, most people only need to see a line to get in line, blindly following what everyone else is doing. This phenomenon is not limited to food either. Many other industries also experience swarming.



▲ 《聯合報》林伯東／攝影

From the average person’s perspective, there are psychological aspects to chasing trends and blindly following others, ones of ‘self-protection, fear of exclusion, and anxiety about being the odd man out’. The advertisements on TV are not subtle either. When you hear “So-and-so is the people’s choice!” it prompts you to think, ‘everyone else is doing it, so I should too’, capturing perfectly the psychological weakness of ‘following the crowd’.



▲ 《聯合報》吳淑君／攝影

▲ The swarming phenomenon happens a great deal when people become interested in a popular game such as Pokemon Go, or a new store’s grand opening. People don’t even mind lining up at any time of day or night to get a famous product.



## Self-Assessment Checklist

我能討論大學的生活規劃。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能討論感情的事。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能討論大學社團的活動。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能討論大學生對未來的事業規劃。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

LESSON

# 8

第八課

## 他們的選擇

Their Choice

---

### 學習目標

主題：社會現象

- 能談論自己國家目前家庭結構的狀況。
- 能討論傳統觀念與現在觀念的不同。
- 能和朋友討論少子化、老化的問題。
- 能說出自己國家對生育所推行的政策。





LESSON  
8

# 他們的選擇

## Their Choice

對話 Dialogue

08-01



王麗華：魯亞，來公園散步嗎？

魯亞：麗華，好久不見，我在圖書館坐太久了，出來走一走。

王麗華：最近在忙什麼？論文寫完了嗎？

魯亞：論文寫得差不多了，妳呢，在忙什麼？

王麗華：我姐姐上個月生了個兒子，有時候我會去幫她照顧一下孩子。

魯亞：恭喜恭喜，那麼妳當阿姨嘍。

王麗華：是啊！沒想到我居然這麼快就當阿姨了。

魯亞：對了，有一件事我一直覺得很不可思議，但是又不好意思問。

王麗華：有話直說吧，反正我們那麼熟了，就算你說錯了，我也不會生氣的。

魯亞：我常來公園散步，不只看過一次娃娃推車裡坐著的並不是小孩，而是一隻狗。台灣人瘋了嗎？

王麗華：哈！哈！哈！那是因為現在不少台灣人覺得養孩子又花錢又辛苦，結了婚不生小孩的人，就會考慮養寵物代替小孩；至於不婚的人因為獨自一人生活，難免會覺得孤單寂寞，因此就想養寵物陪伴。你常看到狗坐娃娃車的事就不足為奇了。

魯亞：養一個孩子所需要的費用當然遠遠超過養一隻狗，但是你們不是有傳宗接代的觀念嗎？

王麗華：年輕的一代不願意像父母一樣被婚姻及家庭束縛，更喜歡追求自由，過著無拘無束的生活；老一輩的人倒是還有這種觀念。

魯亞：難道政府沒有推行什麼政策來鼓勵生育嗎？

王麗華：雖然政府提出了一些補助生育的政策，但是一般人還是覺得補助得不夠，所以寧可選擇不生孩子。

魯亞：那麼，台灣以後會不會到處都只看得到老人呢？

王麗華：很多夫婦就算願意生孩子，大多數也只生一個，現在很多孩子都是獨生子或獨生女。

魯亞：中國以前施行「一胎化政策」，大部分的家庭也只有一個孩子。

王麗華：是啊，結果很多父母都把孩子寵壞了。孩子少對很多職業的影響也很大，像老師、婦產科醫生等。

魯亞：難怪我的朋友最近失業了。她本來在補習班教英文，可是老闆告訴她，最近學生越來越少，所以不得不結束營業。這下子她得另外再找工作了。

## 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

王丽华：鲁亚，来公园散步吗？

鲁亚：丽华，好久不见，我在图书馆坐太久了，出来走一走。

王丽华：最近在忙什么？论文写完了吗？

鲁亚：论文写得差不多了，妳呢，在忙什么？

王丽华：我姐姐上个月生了个儿子，有时候我会去帮她照顾一下孩子。

鲁亚：恭喜恭喜，那么妳当阿姨喽。

王丽华：是啊！没想到我居然这么快就当阿姨了。

鲁亚：对了，有一件事我一直觉得很不可思议，但是又不好意思问。

王丽华：有话直说吧，反正我们那么熟了，就算你说错了，我也不会生气的。

鲁亚：我常来公园散步，不只看过一次娃娃推车里坐着的并不是小孩，而是一只狗。台湾人疯了吗？

王丽华：哈！哈！哈！那是因为现在不少台湾人觉得养孩子又花钱又辛苦，结了婚不生小孩的人，就会考虑养宠物代替小孩；至于不婚的人因为独自一人生活，难免会觉得孤单寂寞，因此就想养宠物陪伴。你常看到狗坐娃娃车的事就不足为奇了。

鲁亚：养一个孩子所需要的费用当然远远超过养一只狗，但是你们不是有传宗接代的观念吗？

王丽华：年轻的一代不愿意像父母一样被婚姻及家庭束缚，更喜欢追求自由，过着无拘无束的生活；老一辈的人倒是还有这种观念。

鲁亚：难道政府没有推行什么政策来鼓励生育吗？

王丽华：虽然政府提出了一些补助生育的政策，但是一般人还是觉得补助得不够，所以宁可选择不生孩子。

鲁亚：那么，台湾以后会不会到处都只看得到老人呢？

王丽华：很多夫妇就算愿意生孩子，大多数也只生一个，现在很多孩子都是独生子或独生女。

鲁亚：中国以前施行「一胎化政策」，大部分的家庭也只有一个孩子。

王丽华：是啊，结果很多父母都把孩子宠坏了。孩子少对很多职业的影响也很大，像老师、妇产科医生等。

鲁亚：难怪我的朋友最近失业了。她本来在补习班教英文，可是老板告诉她，最近学生越来越少，所以不得不结束营业。这下子她得另外再找工作了。

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



## People in the Dialogue

1	王麗華	Wáng Lihuá	王 麗 華	a woman from Taiwan
2	魯亞	Lǔ Yǎ	魯 亞	a man from Turkey

## Vocabulary

3	論文	lùnwén	論 文	(N)	thesis, dissertation, scholarly article
4	反正	fǎnzhèng	反 正	(Adv)	in any case
5	不只	bùzhǐ	不 只	(Adv)	not only
6	哈	hā	哈	(Ptc)	ha
7	代替	dàitì	代 替	(V)	to substitute, to be in place of
8	獨自	dúzì	獨 自	(Adv)	alone, by oneself
9	難免	nánmiǎn	難 免	(Adv)	inevitably, hard to avoid
10	費用	fèiyòng	費 用	(N)	costs, expense
11	觀念	guānniàn	觀 念	(N)	concept, notion
12	代	dài	代	(N)	generation
13	婚姻	hūnyīn	婚 姻	(N)	marriage
14	束縛	shùfú	束 縛	(V)	to be fettered by, bound by, shackled by
15	追求	zhuīqiú	追 求	(V)	to pursue
16	倒是	dàoshì	倒 是	(Adv)	on the other hand
17	推行	tuīxíng	推 行	(V)	to promote
18	生育	shēngyù	生 育	(V/N)	to have babies; reproduction, childbirth
19	補助	bǔzhù	補 助	(V/N)	to subsidize; subsidy, allowance
20	老人	lǎorén	老 人	(N)	old people, seniors
21	夫婦	fūfù	夫 婦	(N)	husband and wife, couple (夫 -fū, man; 婦 -fù, woman)

22	獨生子	dúshēngzǐ	獨 子	(N)	only child (male)
23	寵	chǒng	寵	(Vst)	to spoil (somebody)
24	職業	zhíyè	職 業	(N)	occupation, profession
25	婦產科	fùchǎnkē	婦 產 科	(N)	obstetrics and gynecology, OB/GYN (婦 -fù, woman; 產 -chǎn, produce; 科 -kē, department)
26	失業	shīyè	失 業	(Vp)	to lose one's job, to become unemployed
27	補習班	bǔxíbān	補 習 班	(N)	cram school (補習 bǔxí, supplement studies; 班 -bān, class)

### Phrases

28	不可思議	bùkě sīyì	不 可 思 議		hard to comprehend, beyond logic, unbelievable
29	有話直說	yǒuhuà zhíshuō	有 話 直 說		to be frank, don't hold anything back, spit it out
30	娃娃推車	wáwa tuīchē	娃 娃 推 車		baby carriage
31	不足為奇	bùzú wéiqí	不 足 為 奇		nothing strange, not surprising at all
32	遠遠	yuǎnyuǎn	遠 遠		by far
33	傳宗接代	chuánzōng jiēdài	傳 宗 接 代		carry on the family line
34	無拘無束	wújiū wúshù	無 拘 無 束		carefree, free, do as one pleases
35	老一輩	lǎoyībèi	老 一 輩		the older generation
36	一胎化政策	yītāihuà zhèngcè	一 胎 化 政 策		One Child Policy
37	這下子	zhèxiàzi	這 下 子		as a consequence

## 短文 Reading



08-03

## 不婚、不生的家庭現象

不知道從什麼時候起，台灣已成為全球生育率最低的國家之一。越來越多的人不結婚，他們覺得寧缺勿濫，只要合不來就分手。結了婚的人動不動就離婚，哪裡會考慮生兒育女這件事呢？另外值得注意的是，學歷越高者，生育的孩子越少，結婚年齡和生育的年齡也較大。



不婚、不生也使不少行業受到重大影響，不少幼稚園及學校都因為招生困難，只好不斷地減班。沒想到台灣人這種不婚不生的現象居然也影響到了白如玉。昨天補習班的林老闆告訴她，補習班將營業到這個月底。因為「少子化」的關係，這幾年很多連鎖的兒童美語補習班都倒閉了，更何況他這個小補習班呢？

除了補習班無法繼續經營下去以外，林老闆更擔心的是台灣的未來。年輕人看不到遠景，只想過著獨善其身的生活。社會上沒有足夠的年輕人加入，經濟的發展更是停滯不前。人口老化，也給社會帶來很大的負擔。目前政府針對「少子化」提出的辦法，包括多項鼓勵生育的措施。從未婚生子減稅、延長產假、改善托育環境到第三胎每個月可領三千元直到孩子成年等。

要鼓勵生育，給錢並不是一個好辦法，除非政府能針對整體環境來改善，否則婦女還是不會有生育的意願。以前祖父母能幫忙照顧孫子、孫女，但是現代人晚婚、晚生育，同時要照顧老一代和新一代，要負擔的責任更重，因此就更不願意生育了。政府雖然提出了不少政策，但是實現這些政策的預算常需要幾十億元，對國家財政是另一項沉重的負擔。政府如何有效改善台灣婦女生育的環境，正考驗著政府的智慧。

課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

不婚、不生的家庭现象

不知道从什么时候起，台湾已成为全球生育率最低的国家之一。越来越多的人不结婚，他们觉得宁缺勿滥，只要合不来就分手。结了婚的人动不动就离婚，哪里会考虑生儿育女这件事呢？另外值得注意的是，学历越高者，生育的孩子越少，结婚年龄和生育的年龄也较大。

不婚、不生也使不少行业受到重大影响，不少幼稚园及学校都因为招生困难，只好不断地减班。没想到台湾人这种不婚不生的现象居然也影响到了白如玉。昨天补习班的林老板告诉她，补习班将营业到这个月底。因为「少子化」的关系，这几年很多连锁的儿童美语补习班都倒闭了，更何况他这个小补习班呢？

除了补习班无法继续经营下去以外，林老板更担心的是台湾的未来。年轻人看不到远景，只想过着独善其身的生活。社会上没有足够的年轻人加入，经济的发展更是停滞不前。人口老化，也给社会带来很大的负担。目前政府针对「少子化」提出的办法，包括多项鼓励生育的措施。从未婚生子减税、延长产假、改善托育环境到第三胎每个月可领三千元直到孩子成年等。

要鼓励生育，给钱并不是一个好办法，除非政府能针对整体环境来改善，否则妇女还是不会有生育的意愿。以前祖父母能帮忙照顾孙子、孙女，但是现代人晚婚、晚生育，同时要照顾老一代和新一代，要负担的责任更重，因此就更不愿意生育了。政府虽然提出了不少政策，但是实现这些政策的预算常需要几十亿元，对国家财政是另一项沉重的负担。政府如何有效改善台湾妇女生育的环境，正考验着政府的智慧。

生詞二 Vocabulary II



08-04

Vocabulary

1	已	yǐ	一	(Adv)	already (formal)
2	生育率	shēngyùlǜ	孕 率	(N)	birth rate (率 -lǜ, rate)
3	離婚	líhūn	离 婚	(Vp-sep)	to get divorced

4	年齡	niánlíng	年 齡	(N)	age
5	較	jiào	較	(Adv)	comparatively more (formal)
6	使	shǐ	使	(Vst)	to cause
7	行業	hángyè	行 業	(N)	businesses, walks of life
8	重大	zhòngdà	重 大	(Vs)	enormous, heavy
9	幼稚園	yòuzhìyuán	幼 稚 園	(N)	kindergarten
10	招生	zhāoshēng	招 生	(Vi)	to recruit students, find students
11	減班	jiǎnbān	減 班	(Vp-sep)	to reduce enrollments
12	將	jiāng	將	(Adv)	will soon
13	少子化	shǎozǐhuà	少 子 化	(Vp)	low birth rate (少, few; 子, children; 化 -huà, -ize, suffix indicating transformation)
14	連鎖	liánsuǒ	連 鎖	(Vs-attr)	chain, franchise
15	兒童	értóng	兒 童	(N)	child(ren)
16	美語	Měiyǔ	美 語	(N)	(American) English
17	倒閉	dǎobì	倒 閉	(Vp)	to go out of business
18	何況	hékuàng	何 況	(Adv)	much less, let alone
19	無法	wúfǎ	無 法	(Adv)	to be unable to
20	未來	wèilái	未 來	(N)	future
21	遠景	yuǎnjǐng	遠 景	(N)	future prospects
22	足夠	zúgòu	足 夠	(Vs)	enough
23	加入	jiārù	加 入	(V)	to enter, join
24	老化	lǎohuà	老 化	(Vp)	aging
25	針對	zhēnduì	針 對	(Prep)	aimed at, directed at
26	項	xiàng	項	(M)	item
27	措施	cuòshī	措 施	(N)	measure
28	減稅	jiǎnshuì	減 稅	(V-sep)	to reduce taxes, tax break



29	延長	yáncháng	延 長	(V)	to extended, make longer
30	產假	chǎnjià	產 假	(N)	maternity leave
31	托育	tuōyù	托 育	(N)	childcare
32	胎	tāi	胎	(N)	embryo, birth, child
33	領	lǐng	領	(V)	to receive, withdraw (money)
34	元	yuán	元	(N)	dollar (or other currency)
35	成年	chéngnián	成 年	(Vp)	to come to age, enter adulthood
36	除非	chúfēi	除 非	(Conj)	unless
37	整體	zhěngtǐ	整 體	(N)	overall
38	否則	fǒuzé	否 則	(Conj)	otherwise
39	婦女	fùnǚ	婦 女	(N)	woman
40	意願	yìyuàn	意 願	(N)	intention
41	祖父母	zǔfùmǔ	祖 父 母	(N)	paternal grandparents
42	孫女	sūnnǚ	孫 女	(N)	granddaughter
43	重	zhòng	重	(Vs)	heavy
44	預算	yùsuàn	預 算	(N)	budget
45	財政	cáizhèng	財 政	(N)	finance
46	沉重	chénzhòng	沉 重	(Vs)	heavy
47	有效	yǒuxiào	有 效	(Vs)	effective
48	正	zhèng	正	(Adv)	during the process of
49	考驗	kǎoyàn	考 驗	(V)	to test out
50	智慧	zhìhuì	智 慧	(N)	wisdom

### Phrases

51	之一	zhīyī	之 一		one of
52	寧缺勿濫	níngquē wùlàn	寧 缺 勿 濫		not settle for less than perfect
53	合不來	hébùlái	合 不 來		not get along
54	生兒育女	shēng'ér yùnǚ	生 兒 育 女		to have and raise children

- |    |      |                |         |  |
|----|------|----------------|---------|--|
| 55 | 獨善其身 | dúshàn qíshēn  | カ、ク、ク、ク | to look out only for oneself, be self-centered |
| 56 | 停滯不前 | tíngzhì bùqián | 去、去、去、去 | in stagnation                                  |

## 文法 Grammar

### I. 反正 *at any rate, anyway* 08-05

 英譯 p.191

**Function:** 反正 is an S<sub>2</sub> adverb, giving concession to or acceptance of a fact that cannot be altered.

- ① 不管你有沒有意願，反正我們已經決定要這麼做了。
- ② 不管你跟他合得來合不來，反正你們得一起工作。
- ③ 你加入不加入沒關係，反正我們自己做也沒問題。
- ④ 不相信風水就算了，反正信不信由你。
- ⑤ 我還沒開始準備畢業展，反正還來得及啊。

**Usage:** 反正 often combines with 不管 or 無論 in S<sub>1</sub>, e.g.,

1. 不管你怎麼說，反正我都不會答應。
2. 無論政府的財政預算夠不夠，反正都要有更好的鼓勵生育措施才對。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 反正 sentences.

- ① 從事哪一個行業不重要，反正\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 這學期的成績能低空飛過就好了，反正\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 不能傳宗接代也沒關係，反正\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 沒關係，有話直說吧，反正\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 不要嫌麻煩，不管會不會發生地震，反正\_\_\_\_\_。

II. 不只 *not merely, exceeding*  08-06

 英譯 p.191

**Function:** The adverb 不只 means (1) 'not merely, exceeding', when modifying a noun. (2) 'not only', when modifying a sentence, associated with 也, an S<sub>1</sub> adverb.

- ① 這項政策已經施行了不只五年了。
- ② 最近教授一定很忙，因為不只我一個人找他寫推薦信。
- ③ 現在不只結婚的人比較少，結婚的年齡也比較晚。
- ④ 最近不只幼稚園招生困難，不少兒童美語補習班也倒閉了。
- ⑤ 這件事不只考驗他的智慧，也考驗他的信用。

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following 不只 sentences.

- ① 目前台灣社會不只碰到少子化的問題，也\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 我爺爺不只\_\_\_\_\_，而且現在身體還很健康。
- ③ 他的報告不只\_\_\_\_\_，但是教授還是不滿意。
- ④ 在政府推行的這個新政策下，這些老人不只可領  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 他跟女朋友不只分手過\_\_\_\_\_。

III. 難免 *inevitably, it is only natural that*  08-07

 英譯 p.191

**Function:** 難免 is an adverb, indicating that a situation is inevitable, that it cannot be helped or avoided.

- ① 很多學生好不容易考上了大學，難免想玩個夠，不想念書。
- ② 有時候媒體的報導難免會有問題，所以大家要想一想，不能完全相信。
- ③ 張先生夫婦都失業了，難免會讓人擔心他們的未來。

- ④ 年輕的一代已沒有傳宗接代的觀念了，但老一輩的人難免還有這種想法。
- ⑤ 由於「少子化」的關係，那家兒童美語補習班難免也受到了影響。

**Usage:** 難免 is rather versatile syntactically, unlike most adverbs, e.g.,

1. 剛開始學中文時，難免會覺得很難。
2. 剛開始學中文時，寫錯字是難免的。
3. 雖然他的脾氣好，但對這件事也難免（會）生氣。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 難免 clauses.

- ① A: 怎麼辦？這幾次我的西班牙文考試都低空飛過。  
B: 沒關係，有時候難免\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A: 你不是已經離開業務部門了嗎？怎麼還要加班啊？  
B: 現在的確比較輕鬆，但難免\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A: 只要隨時做好準備，萬一發生地震就知道怎麼應變了。  
B: 我的國家沒有地震，我難免\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ A: 你不是快結婚了嗎？怎麼看起來焦慮不安的樣子？  
B: 我已經過慣了無拘無束的生活，結婚以後難免\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ A: 你不必擔心，現在晚婚的人多得很。  
B: 因為我想生孩子，所以難免\_\_\_\_\_。

IV. 倒是 *on the other hand*  08-08

 英譯 p.192

**Function:** 倒是 is an S<sub>2</sub> adverb, which presents a view that differs from one previously stated.

- ① 不少人認為目前經濟停滯不前，我倒是覺得並沒有那麼嚴重。
- ② 我覺得連鎖咖啡店的咖啡不錯，我朋友倒是覺得小咖啡館的比較好喝。
- ③ 你常說遠距教學不是個好方法，那些學生倒是覺得很不錯。
- ④ 美國人認為減稅對經濟發展有幫助。對這件事北歐人倒是有不同的看法。
- ⑤ 現代年輕人雖然不太迷信，但倒是相信風水。

**Usage:**

1. The ‘是’ in 倒是 is often optional, e.g.,  
有的家長認為念書時不要談戀愛，免得影響成績，我倒認為談戀愛有助於學習。
2. 倒是 often combines with conjunctions like 但是 or 不過, e.g.,  
這學期我擔任學生會會長，每天忙得不得了，不過倒是交到了不少好朋友。

**練習 Exercise**

Please respond by using 倒是 to put forward a different view or a different approach.

- ① A: 進度落後了怎麼辦，是不是要教快一點？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A: 很多父母寒暑假時都讓孩子去學英文、電腦等。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A: 妳怎麼會暗戀他呢？他又不高大，又不帥氣。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

- 4 A: 現在大家都很討厭那個劈腿的明星。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 你何必買那麼貴的包包，要是你喜歡那個牌子的話，買仿冒品就好了。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

V. 這下子 *that being the case, as a consequence*  08-09



**Function:** This phrase is used in  $S_2$  and states that  $S_2$  follows naturally from  $S_1$ .

- 1 那家美語補習班倒閉了，這下子我得找新的補習班學英文了。
- 2 政府為了鼓勵生育，決定延長產假和改善托育環境，這下子應該可提高生育率了吧？
- 3 他覺得寧缺勿濫，只要合不來就分手，這下子更難結婚了。
- 4 聽說公司決定下個月開始裁員，這下子我們都可能失業。
- 5 哇！沒想到受到連續劇的影響，來買雞排的人越來越多，這下子我們可發財了。

**Usage:** This is a highly colloquial phrase, pronounced in low intonation, used in conversations only.

**練習 Exercise**

Please give possible consequences to the A utterances below.

- 1 A: 我的父母說，我已經大學畢業了，他們不再給我錢了。  
B: 這下子你\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 我打算明年春天到外國去當一年交換學生。  
B: 我們班明年春天要辦畢業旅行，這下子\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 糟糕，這部電影是限制級的，我還不到 18 歲，怎麼辦？  
B: 這下子\_\_\_\_\_。

- 4 A: 唉!我居然錯過了雲門舞集在台北的演出。  
B: 這下子\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 沒想到他們要把我的畫放在學校的展覽館裡。  
B: 這下子\_\_\_\_\_。

## VI. Verb Complement 來 *personable* 08-10



**Function:** When 來 is used as a non-directional complement, it conveys rapport, with V 得來 expressing good rapport and V 不來 the contrary.

- 1 他跟網友才見了一次面就覺得兩人很合得來，還約了下次一起去看電影。
- 2 我想我跟不愛乾淨的人一定合不來。
- 3 他們很聊得來，尤其是一聊到吉他就聊個沒完。
- 4 跟談不來的人說話，就連說一句話也嫌多。
- 5 別打擾他，他難得跟別人聊得來，你等一下再來找他吧。

**Usage:** The complement 來 can only be used in the potential mode, and only such verbs as 談, 合, 聊, and 處 can occur in this usage.

### 練習 Exercise

Please respond to the A utterances below by using V 得來 / V 不來.

- 1 A: 怎麼了?你不是去約會嗎?怎麼那麼早就回來了?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 為什麼他常跟同事發生糾紛?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 你的室友要搬家?你們合不來嗎?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

④ A：聽說男女朋友一起去旅行的話，就可以知道適不適合在一起了。

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

⑤ A：你們在聊什麼？怎麼聊得那麼高興？

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

## VII. 何況 *let alone, no need to mention* 08-11

 英譯 p.192

**Function:** The adverb 何況 states that if a previous statement is true, how about the next NP or S.

- ① 連膽子那麼大的人都怕，更何況我這個膽子小的人？
- ② 你那麼年輕都走不動了，更何況我這個銀髮族？
- ③ 光布置一個小房間就花了那麼多時間，何況布置那麼大的客廳呢？
- ④ 在現實生活中，他們都會批評你，何況在網路的世界裡呢？
- ⑤ 再大的困難我們都可以解決，更何況這一點小事？

### Usage:

1. 更 is often placed in front of 何況, see (1, 2 and 5) above.
2. 何況 often follows a 連...都...pattern (even that is true) in the initial sentence, e.g.,
  - (1) 連那些藝術家都看不懂，更何況我呢？
  - (2) 連你學了十年的小提琴都不敢表演了，更何況我才學了一年？
  - (3) 連我都覺得穿這種衣服不足為奇，更何況你這種追求流行的人？



### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 何況 clauses.

- 1 連我的中國朋友也不知道「風水」這個詞是誰第一個提出來的，何況\_\_\_\_\_？
- 2 他結婚以前養家的負擔就很沈重，何況\_\_\_\_\_？
- 3 這項減稅措施對生育的決定很重要，更何況\_\_\_\_\_？
- 4 那家賣月餅的店平常生意就很好，何況是\_\_\_\_\_呢？
- 5 連經濟條件像你這麼好的人都不願意生育，何況\_\_\_\_\_呢？

### VIII. 否則 *otherwise* 08-12

 英譯 p.192

**Function:** 否則 is an  $S_2$  conjunction, meaning “otherwise”. The whole sentence has the meaning that  $S_1$  must be true; otherwise,  $S_2$ , which is undesirable, would prevail.

- 1 我今年底必須把論文寫完，否則春節時沒辦法出國旅行。
- 2 除非你願意改變你的觀念，否則我們無法錄取你。
- 3 政府必須有效改善台灣婦女生育的環境，否則無法提高生育率。
- 4 你得改變你獨善其身的想法，否則老了以後會覺得孤單寂寞。
- 5 面試以前，你一定要對這個職業有足夠的了解，否則不容易被錄取。

**Usage:** In this pattern,  $S_1$  can be preceded by 除非, e.g.,

1. 除非你這個問題是針對成年者，否則未成年者大概沒有能力了解。
2. 除非不必打扮、不必穿正式的服裝，否則我不想去參加他的婚禮。
3. 除非你不再抱怨，否則以後我不跟你去旅行了。

## 練習 Exercise

Please finish the following sentences by adding an undesirable consequence to the situation presented.

- 1 這次一定得請孩子的祖父母幫忙，否則\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 民眾希望政府能趕快提出有效的措施，否則\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 經濟不能再停滯不前了，否則\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 他們一定是因為年齡的關係而分手，否則\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 除非政府讓年輕人看到遠景，否則\_\_\_\_\_。

## 語法例句英譯

## Grammar Examples in English

I. 反正 *at any rate, anyway*

## Function:

- 1 It doesn't matter if you want to or not. Anyway we've all decided that this is how it's going to be done.
- 2 It doesn't matter if you two get along or not. Anyway you have to work together.
- 3 You can choose whether or not to help. At any rate we can take care of it ourselves.
- 4 That's fine if you don't believe in Feng Shui, and it's your decision to make anyway.
- 5 I haven't started on my graduation project yet. Anyway I still have time.

II. 不只 *not merely, exceeding*

## Function:

- 1 This policy has been in implementation for over five years already.
- 2 My professor has been busy lately. I'm not the only one looking for a recommendation letter.
- 3 Not only are fewer people getting married these days, they are waiting longer to do so too.

- 4 Enrollment isn't only low for kindergartens. Lots of English cram schools for kids have had to close.
- 5 This is not only a test of his intellect. It's also a test of his credibility.

III. 難免 *inevitably, it is only natural that*

## Function:

- 1 Lots of students work extremely hard to get into university. Once they do, it's unavoidable that they'll want to let loose instead of studying.
- 2 Errors in media reports are not always avoidable, so we ought to be discerning and not believe everything we hear.
- 3 Mr. Zhang and his wife both lost their jobs. That people are concerned for their future is inevitable.
- 4 The younger generation may not be concerned with carrying on the family line, but among the elderly this way of thinking cannot be helped.
- 5 It is inevitable that the declining birth rate impacts children's cram schools.

#### IV. 倒是 *on the other hand*

##### Function:

- 1 Many people think that the economy is at a stand still, but I happen to think it's not that bad.
- 2 I think that the coffee in chain store cafes isn't that bad, but my friend prefers the coffee in independent shops.
- 3 You often say that distance learning isn't a good method of teaching, but those students seem to think it's great.
- 4 Americans think that tax cuts help stimulate economic development, but Scandinavians hold a different viewpoint.
- 5 The younger generation is not really superstitious, but they happen to believe in Feng Shui.

#### V. 這下子 *that being the case, as a consequence*

##### Function:

- 1 That English cram school shut down. Now I have to find a new one to go study at.
- 2 The government is encouraging population growth by extending maternity leave and improving child care, and this should effectively raise birth rates, right?
- 3 He would rather have nothing at all than something less than ideal, so he breaks up at the first sight of incompatibility. How's he ever going to get married like that?
- 4 I hear that the company will be cutting staff next month, and we might all be out of a job!
- 5 Wow, I never thought that people could be so swayed by a TV series. More and more people are lining up to buy chicken cutlets, and at this rate we're going to make a killing!

#### VI. Verb Complement 來 *personable*

##### Function:

- 1 He only met his online friend once but thought they got along famously. He even arranged for them to meet a second time at

the movies.

- 2 I don't think I would get along with someone who is messy.
- 3 They really hit it off, and once they got onto guitars, they talked forever.
- 4 It's hard talking to someone with whom you just don't click. Even a single sentence can feel like a lot of work.
- 5 Don't bother him. It's rare that he gets to talk like this with someone. Come back in a bit.

#### VII. 何況 *let alone, no need to mention*

##### Function:

- 1 Even people who have guts get afraid, let alone someone as timid as me.
- 2 Even someone as young as you can't keep walking, never mind someone with grey hair like me.
- 3 Decorating even a small room takes lots of time, never mind a big living room.
- 4 Even in real life they'll criticize you, let alone on the internet.
- 5 We could easily tackle a bigger problem yet, let alone this small one.

#### VIII. 否則 *otherwise*

##### Function:

- 1 I've got to finish my thesis by the end of the year; otherwise, I won't be able to go traveling abroad over Chinese New Year.
- 2 Unless you change your mentality, we will not be able to accept you.
- 3 The Taiwan government must improve the circumstances surrounding raising children; otherwise, birth rates will never rise.
- 4 You have to change your self-righteous way of thinking; otherwise, you'll grow up to be very lonely.
- 5 Before an interview, make sure you understand the position; otherwise, it'll be hard to get the job.

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 我不想結婚、生子

目標：學習如何表達自己的看法和如何表達反對及拒絕的說法。

任務：讓學生分組扮演媽媽和女兒兩人，並在班上扮演對話的內容。





故事：王麗華是個獨生女，今年已三十歲了，她的父母希望她早日結婚生子，也有意願幫她照顧孩子，但王麗華不想受到婚姻的束縛，也不想生兒育女。

### II. 你想養哪一種寵物？

目標：能透過討論和訊息交換，提出調查結果，並說明原因。

任務：學生先兩人一組，完成後再找別的同学兩人一組，問問同學想養和不想養哪一些寵物？寫上同學的名字，並在項目中打「✓」，且要說出為什麼想養或不想養這些寵物？訪談結束後請全班整理出最想養和最不想養的寵物。

寵物	名字	想養	不想養	為什麼
1 狗 				
2 貓 				
3 金魚 				
4 鳥 				
5 天竺鼠 				

6 蜥蜴					
7 兔子					
8 迷你豬					
9 蛇					
10 烏龜					
11 其他					

最想養的寵物：\_\_\_\_\_ 最不想養的寵物：\_\_\_\_\_

### III. 你同不同意養寵物

目標：能了解別人的觀點，並根據討論的內容，選出最好的一組。

任務：有的人喜歡養寵物，有的人不喜歡。全班分成兩組或多組進行辯論

A 組是正方：認為養寵物有很多優點

B 組是反方：不同意養寵物，說說養寵物的缺點

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Ghost Weddings: After Death Do Us Not Part

A 冥婚 (míng hūn, Ghost Wedding), also called nether wedding, spirit wedding, or soul wedding, is a tradition in some East Asian cultures. Ghost weddings occur when both parties of an engaged couple die or a yet-to-be betrothed daughter meets an early demise, and the parents, out of love and commemoration, still want to carry out a wedding for the deceased.

Ghost weddings in Taiwan are called 娶神主 (Qu Shen Zhu), meaning ‘to take a spirit bride’, and differ in form from the ancient Chinese version. In Taiwan, the purpose of the custom is to find a home for departed, unmarried females, but there is no such custom for males, and no need for joint funerals. Ghost weddings, then, happen when the male dies, and marries an already deceased woman, hence ‘taking a spirit bride’. In so doing the unmarried female has a home to go to, one where she will be forever revered. Ghost weddings are rather mysterious and altogether quite bizarre, but ultimately reflect the thought that females deserve to be provided for. Parents cannot bear to see their daughters without a place to call home, without someone to venerate them, so even after death they want to find them a final resting place. Before they are born and after they die, parent’s love for their daughter is unchanging. It is upon an ethic of affection and parent-child love that real meaning of a ghost wedding lies.



▲ Ghost weddings are held for deceased couples or in order to marry a spirit bride. 《聯合報》丁志寬／攝影

## Outdoor Feasts

Almost any celebration in Taiwan is reason for an outdoor dinner party. Whether it is a wedding, funeral, house warming for new neighbors, company year-end and Chinese New Year (CNY) dinners, religious festivals at the temple, or local elections, friends, family, and neighbors all get invited to celebrate over a meal. These dinner parties are usually held under a large tent that is set up on the side of a road, in a square near a temple, on school sports grounds, or in local activity centers. A kitchen range is brought out, as is a table full of food that is cooked on-site and served for everyone in attendance to enjoy.

This type of dinner party started in the 1970s and reached a peak in the 1980s. As there are minimal rental fees involved, expenditures are saved for the food, and the hosts do their utmost to satisfy their guests using affordable and authentic ingredients.



▲ 《聯合報》張雅婷／攝影



▲ 《聯合晚報》胡經周／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》林敬家／攝影

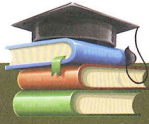


▲ 《聯合報》蘇木春／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》吳淑玲／攝影

▲ Outdoor feasts in large tents on the roadside are often held during elections, the Chinese New Year, weddings or religious festivals, etc. Chefs labor to prepare a feast for all who come.



## Self-Assessment Checklist

我能談論自己國家目前家庭結構的狀況。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能討論傳統觀念與現在觀念的不同。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能和朋友討論少子化、老化的問題。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能說出自己國家對生育所推行的政策。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%





*note*



LESSON

9

第九課

## 再談台灣故事

More on the Story of Taiwan

---

學習目標

主題：歷史

- 能介紹自己國家的歷史。
- 能說出歷史上發生的事件及有名的地方。
- 能談論歷史事件的影響及改變。
- 能說一個完整的故事。



# 再談台灣故事

LESSON

9

## More on the Story of Taiwan

對話 Dialogue

09-01



(在台北東區)

高來恩：哇！台北東區好熱鬧啊！

李文麗：以前這裡可不是熱鬧的地方，一百年前這裡還是鄉下，沒什麼人住。

高來恩：台灣以前最熱鬧的地方在哪裡？

李文麗：台灣的政治、經濟中心是從南往北逐漸發展的。以前有三個最熱鬧的地方，一是台南，二是鹿港，三是艋舺。

高來恩：我去過台南，我知道差不多四百年前，荷蘭人曾經把台灣當做亞洲的貿易據點。台南有不少古蹟，赤崁樓就是荷蘭人統治台灣時，在台南建造的，那是家喻戶曉的觀光景點。鹿港和艋舺在哪裡？

李文麗：鹿港是以前台灣中部最繁榮的港口，據說河邊經常有鹿群出現，也有人說是因為港的形狀像鹿角，人們便稱這個地方「鹿港」。

高來恩：台灣以前有很多鹿嗎？

李文麗：以前台灣中部滿山遍野到處可以看到鹿。

高來恩：為什麼現在在台灣看不到鹿，只有在動物園才看得到？

李文麗：聽說後來有人為了賣鹿皮賺錢，不知殺了多少鹿，在這種情形下，鹿的數量就減少了。

高來恩：鹿港有什麼值得參觀的景點嗎？

李文麗：鹿港的風光已經成為歷史，可是留下了許多古蹟，那裡的寺廟和民宅都是古色古香的，非常值得參觀。

高來恩：那裡有什麼好吃的東西？

李文麗：鹿港有一些傳統點心和小吃，像綠豆糕、牛舌餅和蚵仔煎，都讓人垂涎三尺。

高來恩：哦，那麼好吃嗎？我真想嚐嚐看。再來，該介紹一下「艋舺」在哪裡了！

李文麗：「艋舺」，在台灣北部淡水河邊，是台北最早發展的地方，差不多兩百年前是它最興盛的時期，現在叫「萬華」。因為當時淡水河上都是獨木舟——獨木舟是一種小船，原住民稱獨木舟為「艋舺」，大家就把這個地方叫「艋舺」。

高來恩：我還是不懂為什麼「艋舺」現在叫「萬華」？

李文麗：以前原住民用獨木舟從淡水河載運農產品來賣，日本人統治台灣的時候，因「艋舺」的台語發音與日語「萬華」(Manka)相似，所以改名「萬華」，現在台語還是叫「艋舺」(Bangkah)。

高來恩：原來是這樣啊！那萬華有什麼可看的地方嗎？

李文麗：雖然萬華沒落了，卻依然保留了許多古蹟、寺廟、老街，都值得去看看，會讓人覺得好像回到過去。路邊也有很多傳統美食，觀光客都喜歡去那裡。下次我們一起去吧！

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

(在台北东区)

高來恩：哇！台北东区好热闹啊！

李文麗：以前这里可不是热闹的地方，一百年前这里还是乡下，没什么人住。

高來恩：台湾以前最热闹的地方在哪里？

李文麗：台湾的政治、经济中心是从南往北逐渐发展的。以前有三个最热闹的地方，一是台南，二是鹿港，三是艋舺。

高來恩：我去过台南，我知道差不多四百年前，荷兰人曾经把台湾当做亚洲的贸易据点。台南有不少古迹，赤崁楼就是荷兰人统治台湾时，在台南建造的，那是家喻户晓的观光景点。鹿港和艋舺在哪里？

李文麗：鹿港是以前台湾中部最繁荣的港口，据说河边经常有鹿群出现，也有人说是因为港的形状像鹿角，人们便称这个地方「鹿港」。

高來恩：台湾以前有很多鹿吗？

李文麗：以前台湾中部满山遍野到处可以看到鹿。

高來恩：为什么现在在台湾看不到鹿，只有在动物园才看得到？

李文麗：听说后来有人为了卖鹿皮赚钱，不知杀了多少鹿，在这种情形下，鹿的数量就减少了。

高來恩：鹿港有什么值得参观的景点吗？

李文麗：鹿港的风光已经成为历史，可是留下了许多古迹，那里的寺庙和民宅都是古色古香的，非常值得参观。

- 高来恩：那里有什么好吃的东西？
- 李文丽：鹿港有一些传统点心和小吃，像绿豆糕、牛舌饼和蚵仔煎，都让人垂涎三尺。
- 高来恩：哦，那么好吃吗？我真想尝尝看。再来，该介绍一下「艋舺」在哪里了！
- 李文丽：「艋舺」，在台湾北部淡水河边，是台北最早发展的地方，差不多两百年前是它最兴盛的时期，现在叫「万华」。因为当时淡水河上都是独木舟—独木舟是一种小船，原住民称独木舟为「艋舺」，大家就把这个地方叫「艋舺」。
- 高来恩：我还是不懂为什么「艋舺」现在叫「万华」？
- 李文丽：以前原住民用独木舟从淡水河载运农产品来卖，日本人统治台湾的时候，因「艋舺」的台语发音与日语「万华」(Manka)相似，所以改名「万华」，现在台语还是叫「艋舺」(Bangkah)。
- 高来恩：原来是这样啊！那万华有什么可看的地方吗？
- 李文丽：虽然万华没落了，却依然保留了许多古迹、寺庙、老街，都值得去看看，会让人觉得好像回到过去。路边也有很多传统美食，观光客都喜欢去那里。下次我们一起去吧！

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I

09-02

## Vocabulary

1	逐漸	zhújiàn		(Adv)	gradually
2	據點	jùdiǎn		(N)	base, stronghold
3	統治	tǒngzhì		(V)	to rule, govern
4	景點	jǐngdiǎn		(N)	scenic site
5	繁榮	fánróng		(Vs)	prosperous
6	港口	gǎngkǒu		(N)	harbor, port
7	據說	jùshuō		(V)	it is said
8	鹿	lù		(N)	deer
9	鹿群	lùqún		(N)	herd of deer (群 -qún, group, crowd)
10	形狀	xíngzhuàng		(N)	shape

11	鹿角	lùjiǎo	カ、 ㄌㄨˋ ㄓㄧㄠˇ	(N)	deer antlers
12	便	biàn	ㄅㄧㄢˋ	(Adv)	accordingly
13	稱	chēng	ㄔㄥ	(V)	to call
14	動物園	dòngwùyuán	ㄉㄨㄥˋ ㄨㄛˋ ㄩㄢˊ	(N)	zoo
15	皮	pí	ㄆㄧˊ	(N)	skin, hides
16	殺	shā	ㄕㄚ	(V)	to kill
17	數量	shùliàng	ㄕㄨˋ ㄌㄧㄤˋ	(N)	number, quantity
18	風光	fēngguāng	ㄈㄥ ㄍㄨㄤ	(N)	glory
19	民宅	mínzhái	ㄇㄧˊ ㄓㄞˊ	(N)	home, people's residence
20	蚵仔煎	ézǐjiān	ㄝˊ ㄗㄞˊ ㄐㄧㄢ	(N)	oyster omelet
21	哦	ó	ㄝˊ	(Ptc)	an interjection indicating concurrence accepting what has been presented
22	該	gāi	ㄍㄞ	(Vaux)	should, ought to (formal)
23	興盛	xīngshèng	ㄒㄩㄥ ㄕㄥˋ	(Vs)	flourishing
24	時期	shíqí	ㄕㄨˊ ㄑㄧˊ	(N)	period, age
25	獨木舟	dúmùzhōu	ㄉㄨˋ ㄨˋ ㄓㄠ	(N)	canoe
26	為	wéi	ㄨㄟˊ	(Vst)	as
27	載運	zàiyùn	ㄗㄞˋ ㄩㄣˋ	(V)	to transport
28	改名	gǎimíng	ㄍㄞˋ ㄇㄧㄥˊ	(V-sep)	to legally change one's names
29	相似	xiāngsì	ㄒㄩㄥ ㄕㄧˋ	(Vs)	similar
30	沒落	mòluò	ㄇㄛˋ ㄌㄨㄛˋ	(Vp)	to decline, wane
31	依然	yīrán	ㄧ ㄣˊ	(Adv)	still
32	保留	bǎoliú	ㄅㄞˋ ㄌㄩˊ	(V)	to remain intact, preserve

### Names

33	鹿港	Lùgǎng	カ、 ㄌㄨˋ ㄍㄤˇ	Lugang
34	艋舺	Měngjiǎ	ㄇㄥˋ ㄓㄚˊ	Mengjia (Mangka)
35	淡水河	Dànshuǐ Hé	カ、 ㄉㄢˋ ㄕㄨㄟˋ ㄕㄝˊ	Tamsui River (河 -hé, river)

36	萬華	Wànhuá	ㄨㄢˋ ㄏㄨㄚˊ	Wanhua
37	台語	Táiyǔ	ㄊㄞˊ ㄩˇ	Taiwanese (a Southern Min dialect)
38	日語	Rìyǔ	ㄖˋ ㄩˇ	Japanese (language)

### Phrases

39	家喻戶曉	jiāyù hùxiǎo	ㄐㄧㄞˊ ㄩˋ ㄏㄨˋ ㄒㄩㄢˇ ㄒㄩㄢˇ	widely known
40	滿山遍野	mǎnshān biànyě	ㄇㄢˇ ㄕㄨㄢ ㄅㄧㄢˋ ㄩㄝˇ	all over the mountains and plains
41	古色古香	gǔsè gǔxiāng	ㄍㄨˇ ㄕㄨˋ ㄍㄨˇ ㄒㄩㄤ	to have an antique air, quaint, classical in style
42	綠豆糕	lǜdòu gāo	ㄌㄨˋ ㄉㄡˋ ㄍㄠ	mung-bean cake
43	牛舌餅	niúshé bǐng	ㄋㄧㄡˊ ㄕㄨㄛˊ ㄅㄧㄥˋ	ox-tongue biscuit
44	垂涎三尺	chuíxián sānchǐ	ㄔㄨㄟˊ ㄒㄩㄢˊ ㄕㄨㄢˋ ㄔㄩˇ	to salivate over, make one's mouth water

### 短文 Reading



#### 落地生根

老張在身強體壯的年紀去當兵，後來離鄉背井，飄洋過海，隨著蔣介石的軍隊來到了台灣，根據台灣的人口資料，1949年從中國大陸到台灣來的人口數目，差不多是一百多萬，大約佔當時台灣人口的百分之十三。自從1949年以後，台灣和中國將近四十年沒有任何往來，因此改變了老張的命運。



剛來台灣的時候，老張以為過不了幾年就能回去。他雖然思念家人，卻一直無法回老家，連通信也不可以，家人毫無音訊。過了幾年他離開軍隊，靠賣麵過生活。遠離了父母親與妻子，朝思暮想，等待了二十多年還是不能回去，他想大概永遠都回不去了。他覺得



很孤單，經過朋友的介紹，在台灣又娶了一個太太，生了兩個女兒。沒想到來台四十年後政府開放探親，他終於可以回去看親人了。他到處打聽家人的消息，才知道父母親和妻子早已在文化大革命時過世了。當他聽到這個消息，不禁流下淚來。

他終於回去見到了離開家鄉時尚未出世的兒子。兒子的童年沒有爸爸，靠親戚過日子，吃了很多苦。老張看著第一次見面時已經四十歲的兒子，他的心裡既高興又傷心。雖然老張為兒子買了很多東西，並且留下一筆錢，但是兒子仍然不能原諒父親，他怪父親沒有盡到做父親的責任。這究竟是誰的錯？誰了解他們內心的痛苦和創傷？老張帶著遺憾回台灣了。

老張說：「生活在沒有戰爭的時代，要好好珍惜。我這一輩子最精華的時間不是在打仗就是在逃難，吃的苦實在太多。我已經習慣這裡的生活，不打算回去了，台灣就是我的家鄉，我算是落地生根了。」恐懼不安的歲月過去了，老張在這裡找到了平靜。許多跟老張有一樣遭遇的老兵，都有一段刻骨銘心的故事。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

#### 落地生根

老张在身强体壮的年纪去当兵，后来离乡背井，飘洋过海，随着蒋介石的军队来到了台湾，根据台湾的人口资料，1949年从中国大陆到台湾来的人口数目，差不多是一百多万，大约占当时台湾人口的百分之十三。自从1949年以后，台湾和中国将近四十年没有任何往来，因此改变了老张的命运。

刚来台湾的时候，老张以为过不了几年就能回去。他虽然思念家人，却一直无法回老家，连通信也不可以，家人毫无音讯。过了几年他离开军队，靠卖面过生活。远离了父母亲与妻子，朝思暮想，等待了二十多年还是不能回去，他想大概永远都回不去了。他觉得很孤单，经过朋友的介绍，在台湾又娶了一个太太，生了两个女儿。没想到来台四十年后政府开放探亲，他终于可以回去看亲人了。他到处打听家人的消息，才知道父母亲 and 妻子早已在文化大革命时过世了。当他听到这个消息，不禁流下泪来。

他终于回去见到了离开家乡时尚未出世的儿子。儿子的童年没有爸爸，靠亲戚过日子，吃了很多苦。老张看着第一次见面时已经四十岁的儿子，他的心里既高兴又伤心。虽然老张为儿子买了很多东西，并且留下一笔钱，但是儿子仍然不能原谅父亲，他怪父亲没有尽到做父亲的责任。这究竟是谁的错？谁了解他们内心的痛苦和创伤？老张带着遗憾回台湾了。

老张说：「生活在没有战争的时代，要好好珍惜。我这一辈子最精华的时间不是在打仗就是在逃难，吃的苦实在太多。我已经习惯这里的生活，不打算回去了，台湾就是我的家乡，我算是落地生根了。」恐惧不安的岁月过去了，老张在这里找到了平静。许多跟老张有一样遭遇的老兵，都有一段刻骨铭心的故事。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II

09-04

## Vocabulary

1	數目	shùmù	目 目	(N)	amount, quantity
2	大約	dàyuē	大 大	(Adv)	about, approximately
3	佔	zhàn	占	(Vst)	to constitute (same as “占”)
4	自從	zìcóng	自 自	(Prep)	ever since
5	將近	jiāngjìn	近 近	(Adv)	nearly, almost
6	往來	wǎnglái	往 來	(N)	dealings, contact
7	思念	sīniàn	思 念	(Vst)	to miss, think about, long for
8	通信	tōngxìn	通 信	(V-sep)	to communicate, correspond by mail
9	毫無	háowú	毫 無	(Vst)	none whatsoever
10	音訊	yīnxùn	音 訊	(N)	news, information, message
11	遠離	yuǎnlí	遠 離	(Vst)	to have left far away from
12	妻子	qīzi	妻 子	(N)	wife (literary)
13	永遠	yǒngyuǎn	永 遠	(N)	always, forever
14	開放	kāifàng	開 放	(Vp)	to open to the public

15	探親	tànrēn	去 親	(Vi)	to visit relatives
16	親人	qīnrén	親 人	(N)	relatives, loved ones
17	打聽	dǎtīng	打 聽	(V)	to ask about, inquire
18	不禁	bùjīn	不 禁	(Adv)	can't help but
19	淚	lèi	淚	(N)	tears
20	尚未	shàngwèi	尚 未	(Adv)	not yet
21	出世	chūshì	出 世	(Vp)	to be born
22	童年	tóngnián	童 年	(N)	childhood
23	傷心	shāngxīn	傷 心	(Vs)	sad
24	筆	bǐ	筆	(M)	sum (of money)
25	仍然	réngrán	仍 然	(Adv)	still
26	原諒	yuánliàng	原 諒	(Vst)	to forgive
27	盡	jìn	盡	(V)	to exhaust, do one's utmost
28	究竟	jiùjìng	究 竟	(Adv)	after all, in the end, actually
29	內心	nèixīn	內 心	(N)	in one's heart, heart of hearts, innermost being
30	創傷	chuāngshāng	創 傷	(N)	trauma, scars
31	珍惜	zhēnxí	珍 惜	(Vst)	to cherish, treasure
32	精華	jīnghuá	精 華	(Vs-attr)	prime
33	逃難	táonàn	逃 難	(Vi)	to flee from war, natural disaster etc.
34	實在	shízài	實 在	(Adv)	truly, really
35	歲月	sùiyuè	歲 月	(N)	years, time
36	遭遇	zāoyù	遭 遇	(N/V)	(unhappy) experiences, happenings; to encounter, to have met with
37	老兵	lǎobīng	老 兵	(N)	old soldier, veteran

### Names

38	老張	Lǎo Zhāng	老 張		Lao Zhang, a nickname for someone whose surname is Zhang
----	----	-----------	-----	--	--

39	文化 大革命	Wénhuà Dà Géming	文 化 大 革 命	Cultural Revolution (1966 ~ 1976)
----	-----------	---------------------	--------------	--------------------------------------

## Phrases

40	落地生根	luòdì shēnggēn	落 地 生 根	to set one's roots down
41	身強體壯	shēnqiáng tǐzhuàng	身 強 體 壯	strong and healthy
42	離鄉背井	líxiāng bèijǐng	離 鄉 背 井	to leave one's hometown to become a stranger else where
43	飄洋過海	piāoyáng guòhǎi	飄 洋 過 海	to sail cross the sea
44	朝思暮想	zhāosī mùxiǎng	朝 思 暮 想	to be a miss day and night
45	一輩子	yībèizi	一 輩 子	one lifetime
46	恐懼不安	kǒngjù bù'ān	恐 懼 不 安	scared and anxious, suffering from constant fear
47	刻骨銘心	kègǔ míngxīn	刻 骨 銘 心	unforgettable, to be imprinted hard in one's mind

## 文法 Grammar

I. 把 A 當做 B *to treat, take A as B* 09-05

**Function:** This pattern takes A to be B, making A in the role of B.

- ① 有不少人把買彩券當做一夜致富的機會。
- ② 有時候我們把體育館當做辦演唱會的地方。
- ③ 風水學是把利用環境、改造環境當做一門學問。
- ④ 沒想到他居然可以把垃圾當做材料，做成藝術品。
- ⑤ 有些國家的人把欣賞藝術表演當做一種社交活動。

### 練習 Exercise

Please rewrite the following sentences using the 把...當做... pattern, retaining the original meanings.

- ① 林先生很努力工作，很早就到公司，很晚才回家。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 有些不婚的人非常喜愛寵物，給寵物穿衣服，讓寵物坐娃娃推車。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 他爸爸給他一筆錢，他打算拿那筆錢來創業。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 小玲常跟聊天室裡的朋友聊天，她覺得他們像是沒見過面的兄弟姐妹。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 阿姨跟我很親，像媽媽一樣地照顧我。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。

## II. 在...下 *under the..., due to the...* 09-06

 英譯 p.218

**Function:** This pattern presents the circumstances, the pre-conditions of a given fact.

- ① 在學校的教育下，孩子學會了禮貌。
- ② 在冰冷的氣候下，所有的動物都躲起來了。
- ③ 在高房價的情形下，年輕人都買不起房子。
- ④ 在財政預算沉重的壓力下，政府不打算提高國民年金。
- ⑤ 在母親辛苦的照顧下，他的身體越來越健康了。

**Usage:** The nouns that appear after 在 are almost always abstract, and 下 has no locational reference, e.g.,

1. 在老師的鼓勵下，他的成績越來越進步了。
2. 在少子化的情況下，補習班、幼稚園都減班了。
3. 在看不到遠景的情形下，年輕人都不想生孩子。

### 練習 Exercise

Please specify possible pre-conditions for the facts given below.

- ① A: 為什麼小明決定去參加演講比賽?  
B: 在\_\_\_\_\_下，小明決定去參加演講比賽。
- ② A: 為什麼老張的生活逐漸改善了?  
B: 在\_\_\_\_\_下，老張的生活逐漸改善了。
- ③ A: 為什麼人民的收入越來越少?  
B: 在\_\_\_\_\_下，人民的收入越來越少。
- ④ A: 為什麼人民可以直接投票選民意代表?  
B: 在\_\_\_\_\_下，人民可以直接投票選民意代表。
- ⑤ A: 為什麼父母都很擔心?  
B: 在\_\_\_\_\_下，父母都很擔心。

### III. The Various Functions of 該 09-07

 英譯 p.218

#### Function:

1. 該 Vaux. ought to, should (short form of 應該)
  - (1) 去「國家戲劇院」或「國家音樂廳」，該穿著整齊。
  - (2) 我們在享受雲端科技的便利時，該控制自己，不要沉迷在網路世界裡。
  - (3) 政府要鼓勵生育，給錢並不是一個好辦法，該改善整體環境。

- (4) 學生該好好學習。
- (5) 你該珍惜這樣的機會。

2. 該 Prep. it is someone's turn to do something

- (1) 我好緊張，下星期一該我報告紅毛城的歷史了。
- (2) 你先在這裡等一下，該你進去的時候，他們會叫你。
- (3) 為了買票，我等了兩、三個鐘頭，該我買的時候卻已經賣完了。
- (4) 太太每天照顧孩子很辛苦，母親節該先生照顧孩子了。
- (5) 哥哥玩線上遊戲已經玩了一個小時了，現在該弟弟玩了。

3. 該 Det. the; said; that (formal)

- (1) 百能連鎖超商最近把業務重點轉向電子業。由於產品品質佳、款式美，因此該公司的產品都很受歡迎。
- (2) 菲律賓上週受到強烈颱風的影響。全國各地災情慘重。該國政府希望各國能提供救援。
- (3) 台灣許多學生都想考上醫學系，因此該系是台灣最熱門的科系。
- (4) 政府提高地價稅。該政策影響到大多數的民眾。
- (5) 這次「雲門舞集」在國外的表演非常成功。該團體在台灣幾乎無人不知，無人不曉。

### 練習 Exercise

Respond to A sentences with 該.

① A：昨天是姐姐洗碗，今天輪到誰洗碗？

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

② A：下次的比賽由哪個國家舉辦？

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 A: 怎麼一直是小王打掃房間，小李沒打掃過嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 想要鼓勵生育，你覺得政府應該怎麼做？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 我唱完了，現在輪到你唱了吧？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

#### IV. 自從…以後 *ever since...* 09-08

 英譯 p.219

**Function:** The preposition 自從 presents a time reference, from which point an event began.

- 1 自從大學畢業以後，他就經營了一家網路公司。
- 2 自從有了網路商店以後，我們待在家裡也可以買東西。
- 3 自從她有了孩子以後，她的生活更忙碌了。
- 4 自從她認識了新的網友以後，每天一回家就打開電腦，進入聊天室。
- 5 自從他到了南美洲念書以後，他就有機會天天跟同學說西班牙文了。

**Usage:** 以後 can sometimes be reduced to 後, but not often, e.g.,  
自從他搬家後，就再也沒見過他了。

#### 練習 Exercise

Please rephrase the following sentences using the 自從…以後 pattern.

- 1 他以前單身，每天都不回家吃飯，現在他有了太太，每天回家吃飯。

→ \_\_\_\_\_。



- ② 從前人們常用紙筆寫信，現在人們很少用紙筆寫信。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 以前他的功課很好，後來他沉迷線上遊戲，他的功課退步了。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 以前沒人看他們的表演，後來紅了，很多人請他們去表演。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 本來他很喜歡打籃球，出了車禍以後，他不再打籃球了。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。

## V. Summary of the Various Usages of 幾 09-09

 英譯 p.219

### Function:

1. Interrogative number, how many
  - (1) 上次有幾個人參加演講比賽？
  - (2) 做一個麵包的成本要幾塊錢？
  - (3) 寫一本書要花幾個月？
2. A vague reference to numbers in middle ranges, several, some
  - (1) 我去過歐洲、亞洲、美洲一共三十幾個國家。
  - (2) 他請了幾十個朋友去聽他女朋友的演唱會。
  - (3) 王教授在英國住了好幾年，所以她的英文很流利。
3. To play down a number in negation, not many
  - (1) 剛來台灣的時候，他以為過不了幾年就能回家鄉。
  - (2) 他的形象不好，沒幾個人支持他。
  - (3) 何小姐對那個工作沒興趣，沒做幾個月，就不做了。

## 練習 Exercise

Please rephrase the following sentences with V 不了幾….

- ① 外婆年紀大了，沒走多久就累了。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 林先生去醫院動手術，在醫院住了一星期就想回家了。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 我在網路上訂購的商品，很快就送來了。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 老闆最近很忙，根本沒機會跟我們說話，他剛才進辦公室，才坐三、四分鐘就又出去談生意了。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 何小姐在夜市買的鞋只穿了三天就壞了。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。

## VI. 不禁 *uncontrollably, cannot help but...* 09-10

 英譯 p.219

**Function:** The adverb 不禁 refers to one's inability to control oneself from some action or desire as prompted by the circumstances.

- ① 看到小時候的朋友，他不禁想起童年的生活。
- ② 阿姨聽說表弟得到獎學金的消息，不禁高興得大叫。
- ③ 聽完王教授的演講，讓人不禁想出去留學，看看外面的世界。
- ④ 看到網路上模特兒穿的衣服那麼好看，李小姐不禁想買。
- ⑤ 哥哥聽完小妹妹的話，不禁哈哈大笑。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences by using 不禁.

- 1 王先生想到房價高漲，一輩子都買不起房子，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 談到食品安全的問題，他\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 看到那麼好看的點心，小玲\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 林先生聽說公司要裁員，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 聽到他受傷的消息，大家\_\_\_\_\_。

## VII. 仍然 *still the same, same as before* 09-11

 英譯 p.219

**Function:** The adverb 仍然 indicates that a situation remains unchanged, still the same as before.

- 1 百貨公司週年慶雖然有折扣，可是價錢仍然很高。
- 2 母親已經勸了他許多次，他卻仍然不聽。
- 3 王先生在生活上碰到很多困難，但是他仍然不放棄理想。
- 4 雖然現在科技發達，地震仍然是沒有辦法避免的天災。
- 5 政府已經提出多項鼓勵生育的措施，但是「少子化」的問題卻仍然很嚴重。

### Usage:

1. 仍然 very often occurs in S<sub>2</sub>, accompanied by 可是, 但是, or 卻.
2. 仍然 is formal and is freely interchangeable with its colloquial counterpart 還是, e.g.,
  - (1) 雖然他來晚了，我們仍然 / 還是玩得很開心。
  - (2) 爺爺雖然年紀老了，仍然 / 還是很有精神。
  - (3) 已經下課了，他仍然 / 還是捨不得離開教室。

## 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 仍然 portions of the sentences.

- 1 雖然網路購物很方便，但是李太太仍然\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 公司已經改變政策了，可是情況仍然\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 他知道外科醫生的工作很辛苦，他卻仍然\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 醫生說他的情況很嚴重，開刀以後\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 王先生想過無拘無束的生活，即使已經四十歲了，仍然\_\_\_\_\_。

VIII. 究竟 *I wonder*  09-12
 英譯 p.220

**Function:** This adverb expresses the speaker's desire to get to the bottom of something, of some inquiry.

- 1 萬一發生核能災害，我們究竟該如何應變？
- 2 那個問題究竟要怎麼解決？
- 3 雲端科技究竟會不會帶來負面的影響？
- 4 台灣究竟有多少家便利商店？
- 5 李教授的理想究竟能不能實現？

**Usage:**

1. 究竟 is more formal, while 到底 is more colloquial (see Book 3 Lesson 11).
2. 究竟, like 到底 is incompatible with 嗎.  
\*究竟什麼是微整型嗎？
3. It can appear either before or after the subject, but when the subject is a question-word, 究竟 can only occur sentence-initially.  
究竟誰了解這個問題？ \*誰究竟了解這個問題？  
究竟哪個環境比較好？ \*哪個環境究竟比較好？

## 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 究竟 sentences.

- ① 他的夢想是成為企業家，究竟\_\_\_\_\_？
- ② 聽說他出車禍了，他的傷究竟\_\_\_\_\_？
- ③ 我從來沒去過北歐，那裡冬天的溫度究竟\_\_\_\_\_？
- ④ 台灣的芒果怎麼這麼好吃，農人究竟\_\_\_\_\_？
- ⑤ 這個電腦是不是壞了，究竟\_\_\_\_\_？

## 語法例句英譯

### Grammar Examples in English

#### I. 把 A 當做 B *to treat, take A as B*

##### Function:.

- ① Lots of people treat the lottery as an opportunity to get rich overnight.
- ② Sometimes we use the gym as a venue to hold concerts.
- ③ Feng Shui takes using and remoulding the environment as a study.
- ④ Who knew that he could use garbage as material to make art.
- ⑤ Some countries take going to see an artistic performance as a social function.

#### II. 在...下 *under the..., due to the...*

##### Function:.

- ① Under the school's education system, the pupils learned to be courteous.
- ② In a cold climate, all sorts of animals disappear during winter.
- ③ With such high property prices, young people cannot afford to buy houses.
- ④ Under such a tight budget, the government has no plans of raising annuities.
- ⑤ Under mom's supervision, he is regaining his health.

#### III. The Various Functions of 該

##### Function:.

1. (1) When going to the National Performing Arts Center or the National Theatre and Concert Hall, you should look presentable.
- (2) When using cloud technology, we should try to control ourselves so as to not get lost in the internet world.
- (3) If the government wants to encourage population growth, giving out incentives is not a good enough means. The circumstances surrounding child-rearing need to be improved.
- (4) Students have to study hard.
- (5) You have to cherish this opportunity.
2. (1) I'm really nervous. Next Monday is my turn to present on the history of Fort Santo Domingo.
- (2) Just wait here. They'll call you when it's your turn to go in.
- (3) I waited two or three hours just to buy a ticket. When it was finally my turn they were already sold out.
- (4) Wives work very hard taking care of the kids every day. On Mother's Day husbands should take a turn.

- (5) He's been playing online games for over an hour already, and it's his little brother's turn now.
3. (1) Baineng Mart has shifted operational focus towards electronics. The company's products have done well, thanks to good quality and attractive styles.
- (2) A strong typhoon hit the Philippines last week, wreaking havoc on many parts of the country. The Philippine government is requesting relief and assistance from other countries.
- (3) Many Taiwanese students want to get into medical school; said department is the country's most sought after.
- (4) The government raised land tax. This policy has affected the masses.
- (5) The Cloud Gate Dance Theatre's tour abroad was a success. At home in Taiwan the dance group is known to all.
- bread?
- (3) How many months does it take to write a book?
2. A vague reference to numbers in middle ranges, several, some
- (1) I have been to over thirty countries, spanning Europe, Asia, and the Americas.
- (2) He invited dozens of friends to come to his girlfriend's concert.
- (3) Professor Wang has lived in the UK for many years, and she speaks English quite well.
3. To play down a number in negation, not many
- (1) When he first came to Taiwan, he figured he wouldn't last too many years before going home.
- (2) He hasn't established a good image. Not many people support him.
- (3) Ms. He had no interest in that job, and she quit after only a couple months.

#### IV. 自從...以後 *ever since...*

##### Function:

- 1 Ever since graduating from university, he has been running an online company.
- 2 Ever since the advent of online shops, we have been able to shop from home.
- 3 Ever since having children, her life has been even busier.
- 4 Ever since meeting her new online friend, first thing after coming home every day, she turns on her computer and logs in to the chatrooms.
- 5 Ever since going to the South America for studies, he has had the opportunity to speak Spanish daily with his classmates.

#### V. Summary of the Various Usages of 幾

##### Function:

1. Interrogative number, how many
  - (1) How many participants competed in the speech competition last time?
  - (2) How much does it cost to make

#### VI. 不禁 *uncontrollably, cannot help but...*

##### Function:

- 1 Upon seeing his childhood friends, he couldn't help but think of his upbringing.
- 2 When Aunt heard that her son (my cousin) got a scholarship, she couldn't help but shout for joy.
- 3 After listening to Prof. Wang's talk, everyone couldn't help but be inspired to go study abroad and see the world.
- 4 Seeing how beautiful the outfit looked on the online model, Ms. Lee couldn't stop herself from wanting to buy it.
- 5 He couldn't help burst out laughing at his little sister's words.

#### VII. 仍然 *still the same, same as before*

##### Function:

- 1 There are discounts during department store anniversary sales, but overall the prices are still very high.

- 2 He still did not heed his mother even after being urged by her many times.
- 3 Despite having come across many obstacles, Mr. Wang is still unwilling to give up on his ideals.
- 4 Technology is very advanced, but earthquakes are still an unavoidable natural disaster.
- 5 The government has taken measures to promote population growth, but the declining birthrate is still a serious issue.

### VIII. 究竟 *I wonder*

#### Function:

- 1 In the event of a nuclear disaster, what on earth would we do?
- 2 How in the world can this problem be solved?
- 3 Are there negative impacts of cloud technology after all?
- 4 Really, how many convenience stores are there in Taiwan?
- 5 Is there really any way Prof. Li's ideals can come to fruition?

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 古蹟與歷史

目標：能介紹自己國家的歷史和古蹟景點的由來。

任務：學生輪流向同學介紹自己國家的古蹟景點的由來，在什麼地方，怎麼去？並向同學說明為什麼值得去參觀。學生可利用圖片或PPT介紹。

### II. 戰爭與歷史事件

目標：能談論戰爭及歷史事件對國家的影響及改變。

任務：請學生回家先準備，然後向全班報告戰爭或歷史事件發生的原因及影響，將來會不會再發生？要如何避免？

### III. 說故事時間

目標：能根據自己所知，說一個完整的故事。

任務：學生先回家準備，再向全班說一個自己國家的故事，或自己所知道的故事。

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Vestiges of Colonization in Taiwan



▲ Bell fruit (蓮霧).

▲ Sushi (壽司).

▲ Sashimi (生魚片).

▲ A-gei (阿給).

In Taiwan there is a vegetable that originates from the western Asian side of the Mediterranean called 荷蘭豆 Dutch Bean (snow peas), which, as the name intimates, was brought in by the Dutch when they colonized Taiwan. The Dutch also brought in a fruit via Indonesia, something Indonesians call 蓮霧 “jam-bu” (bell fruit). Pronounced “lienbu” by the Taiwanese, the fruit later became known by its Mandarin pronunciation, “lianwu”.

Taiwan was under Japanese rule from 1894-1945. There are also many Japanese foods that have stuck around since the Japanese colonial period: sushi (“壽司” in Chinese, and “鮭”、“鮮” or “すし” (sushi) in Japanese); bento (compartmentalized boxes of take-out food, “便當” in Chinese, and “弁当” or “べんとう” (bento) in Japanese); sashimi (“生魚片” in Chinese, and “刺身” or “さしみ” (sashimi) in Japanese); oden (foodstuffs boiled in a soy-flavored soup broth, “關東煮” in Chinese, “黑輪” or “o-lien” in Taiwanese, and “おでん” (oden) in Japanese); 阿給 a-gei, a snack found in Danshui, to the north of Taipei (tofu cooked in oil, “油豆腐” in Chinese, but pronounced based on the last two syllables of the Japanese word “あぶらあげ” (abura-age); and tempura, a common night market snack (there are both crispy and chewy versions of tempura, “甜不辣” in Chinese, and “天婦羅”, “天麩羅”, “天ぷら” (tempura), or “てんぷら” (tempura) in Japanese; “天婦羅” comes from the Portuguese word ‘tempura’).

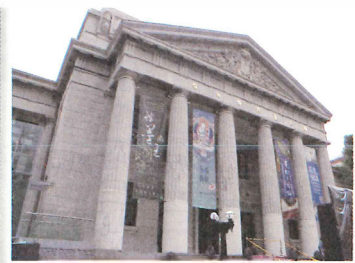


In terms of relics, it was the Dutch who built the 赤崁樓 Chihkan Tower (previously Fort Provintia) and 安平古堡 (Fort Zeelandia in Tainan), as well as 紅毛城 (Fort Santo Domingo) in Danshui. The following buildings, however, are all remnants of the Japanese colonial period. 總統府 The Presidential Office Building in Taipei was completed in 1919; it was the tallest building on the island and served as 台灣總督府 (the Office of the Governor-General of Taiwan). Just east of the Presidential Office Building lies the 台北賓館 (Taipei Guest House), which was built in 1920, and served as the house of the Governor-General. The Taipei Guest House, a name adopted in 1950, is currently a guest house for emissaries and is administrated by the ROC government. 國立台灣博物館 (The National Taiwan Museum (formerly the Taiwan Governor Museum) was completed in 1915 and built in the classic Japanese brand of western architecture. 臺大醫院 (The National Taiwan University Hospital) was built in 1916, then called the Taipei Hospital, and served as the first public hospital of Taiwan during the Japanese colonial period. It was the largest hospital in all of East Asia. The Taiwan government lists all of the above buildings as historic sites.

Colonization has left a mark on sport as well. The Taiwanese love of baseball is thanks to Japanese influence, and the history of baseball in Taiwan can be traced back to Japanese colonization. In 1906 the first formal baseball team 嘉農隊, KANO, was formed in Taiwan under the direction of the Japanese. There are also many place names that have stuck around since the colonization period: 西門町 Ximending, 松山 Songshan, 神岡 Shengang, 岡山 Gangshan, 金山 Jinshan, 清水 Qingshui, 白河 Baihe, 石岡 Shigang, 關西 Guanxi, and many others too numerous to mention. Lastly, it is worth noting that many of the elderly in Taiwan were born during the colonial period and thus brought up in the Japanese education system, and even today many can still speak fluent Japanese!



▲ Fort Santo Domingo (紅毛城) in Danshui.



▲ The National Taiwan Museum (國立台灣博物館) in Taipei.



▲ Chihkan Tower (赤崁樓) in Tainan.



▲ Fort Zeelandia (安平古堡) in Tainan.



▲ A statue in Chiayi erected in remembrance of the island's first official baseball team, Kano (嘉農隊).



### Self-Assessment Checklist

我能介紹自己國家的歷史。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能說出歷史上發生的事件及有名的地方。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能談論歷史事件的影響及改變。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能說一個完整的故事。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%



*note*



LESSON

10

## 第十課 應徵

### Applying for a Job

---

#### 學習目標

主題：就業

- 能說明自己的學歷。
- 能談論找工作的經驗。
- 能說明自己的工作經歷。
- 能介紹自己國家就業的情況。



LESSON  
**10**

# 應徵

## Applying for a Job

對話 Dialogue

10-01



(在建明家)

**建明**：玉珍，幫我看看我的西裝配這條領帶適不適合。

**玉珍**：要面試的話，這條領帶太花了，換條素色的吧！哥，看你好像很緊張的樣子。

**建明**：是很緊張！聽說光是寄履歷表應徵的就有一千多人，有面試機會的剩下兩百多，最後只錄取十幾個，錄取率真低。

**玉珍**：當然啊！這家公司是國內餐飲業的龍頭，就社會新鮮人而言，起薪算高的，聽說福利也很不錯，大家當然搶著進去。應徵者需要具備什麼條件呢？

**建明**：其實沒什麼特別的限制，只要學士學位以上，三十五歲以下，也不一定要相關科系。

**玉珍**：難怪應徵的人那麼多。哥，加油！

(面試的地方)

**面試官**：何建明，請你先簡單自我介紹一下。

**建明**：好的。各位好！我是何建明，臺灣師範大學歷史系畢業，二十三歲，家住台北，家中有父母及妹妹，一共四個人。

**面試官**：你是應屆畢業生，在大學時期有任何工作經驗嗎？

**建明**：有的，我在大學四年中，有不少打工經驗。因為我對餐飲業很有興趣，所以大一在一家小餐廳打工。後來覺得在那裡所學有限，於是就換到一家連鎖咖啡店。大三暑假我申請到一家連鎖餐飲公司的企劃部實習，在那裡學習到了許多營運方面的知識。

**面試官**：你的履歷表上說，你曾經當過社團的社長。可以談談那個經驗嗎？

**建明**：好的。我在大二的時候當了一年熱門音樂社社長，跟幾所大學聯合舉辦了兩場很大的音樂會，節目精彩，很受好評。這一年中，我學到了企劃活動的方法，也提高了自己的領導能力，更重要的是學習到很多跟人合作、討論的經驗。

**面試官**：從你的打工跟實習經驗看起來，你似乎對餐飲業很有興趣。可是你知道，餐飲業非常辛苦嗎？

**建明**：是的，我知道。因為我的學長就是從事餐飲工作，他告訴了我不少關於這方面的事。但是我並沒有因此放棄從事餐飲業的想法，我認為就一個社會新鮮人而言，這個工作是個很好的磨練，讓我更想挑戰這個工作。

**面試官**：你覺得你有什麼優點可以讓我們錄取你？

**建明**：就像我在前面提到的，由於我有領導社團的經驗，所以我跟人合作的能力還不錯。另外，我工作認真，打工時上司常誇獎我。錄取我，公司應該不會後悔。

**面試官**：好的，今天的面試就到這裡，不管錄不錄取，我們都會在一週內以書面通知你。謝謝你來面試。

**建明**：謝謝各位給我這個機會！

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

(在建明家)

**建明**：玉珍，帮我看看我的西装配这条领带适不适合。

**玉珍**：要面试的话，这条领带太花了，换条素色的吧！哥，看你好像很紧张的样子。

**建明**：是很紧张！听说光是寄履历表应征的就有一千多人，有面试机会的剩下两百多，最后只录取十几个，录取率真低。

**玉珍**：当然啊！这家公司是国内餐饮业的龙头，就社会新鲜人而言，起薪算高的，听说福利也很不错，大家当然抢着进去。应征者需要具备什么条件呢？

**建明**：其实没什么特别的限制，只要学士学位以上，三十五岁以下，也不一定要相关科系。

**玉珍**：难怪应征的人那么多。哥，加油！

(面试的地方)

**面试官**：何建明，请你先简单自我介绍一下。

**建明**：好的。各位好！我是何建明，台湾师范大学历史系毕业，二十三岁，家住台北，家中有父母及妹妹，一共四个人。

**面试官**：你是应届毕业生，在大学时期有任何工作经验吗？

建 明：有的，我在大学四年中，有不少打工经验。因为我对餐饮业很有兴趣，所以大一在一家小餐厅打工。后来觉得在那里所学有限，于是就换到一家连锁咖啡店。大三暑假我申请到一家连锁餐饮公司的企划部实习，在那里学习到了许多营运方面的知识。

面 试 官：你的履历表上说，你曾经当过社团的社长。可以谈谈那个经验吗？

建 明：好的。我在大二的时候当了一年热门音乐社社长，跟几所大学联合举办了两场很大的音乐会，节目精彩，很受好评。这一年中，我学到了企划活动的方法，也提高了自己的领导能力，更重要的是学习到很多跟人合作、讨论的经验。

面 试 官：从你的打工跟实习经验看起来，你似乎对餐饮业很有兴趣。可是你知道，餐饮业非常辛苦吗？

建 明：是的，我知道。因为我的学长就是从事餐饮工作，他告诉了我不少关于这方面的事。但是我并没有因此放弃从事餐饮业的想法，我认为就一个社会新鲜人而言，这个工作是个很好的磨练，让我更想挑战这个工作。

面 试 官：你觉得你有什么优点可以让我们录取你？

建 明：就像我在前面提到的，由于我有领导社团的经验，所以我跟人合作的能力还不错。另外，我工作认真，打工时上司常夸奖我。录取我，公司应该不会后悔。

面 试 官：好的，今天的面试就到这里，不管录不录取，我们都会在一周内以书面通知你。谢谢你来面试。

建 明：谢谢各位给我这个机会！

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



### People in the Dialogue

1	何建明	Hé Jiànmíng	何 建 明	a male college graduate
---	-----	-------------	-------	-------------------------

### Vocabulary

2	應徵	yìngzhēng	應 徵	(V)	to apply for a job
3	配	pèi	配	(V)	to go with, match
4	領帶	lǐngdài	領 帶	(N)	tie



5	花	huā	花	(Vs)	fancy, flowery, garish
6	素色	sùsè	素色	(N)	plain (in color)
7	剩下	shèngxià	剩下	(Vpt)	to remain, left (over)
8	龍頭	lóngtóu	龍頭	(N)	head, leader
9	起薪	qǐxīn	起薪	(N)	starting salary
10	福利	fúli	福利	(N)	(work) benefits
11	具備	jùbèi	具備	(Vst)	to have in one's qualification
12	限制	xiànzhì	限制	(N)	restrictions
13	以上	yǐshàng	以上	(N)	above, over, more than
14	以下	yǐxià	以下	(N)	below, under, fewer than
15	相關	xiāngguān	相關	(Vs)	related, relevant
16	各位	gèwèi	各位	(N)	you (plural, formal)
17	應屆	yìngjiè	應屆	(Vs-attr)	this year's, upcoming
18	畢業生	bìyèshēng	畢業生	(N)	graduate
19	大一	dàiyī	大一	(N)	freshman, first-year university student (大二 sophomore, 大三 junior, 大四 senior)
20	企劃部	qìhuàbù	企劃部	(N)	planning department (部 -bù, department)
21	營運	yíngyùn	營運	(N)	operations
22	知識	zhīshì	知識	(N)	knowledge
23	社長	shèzhǎng	社長	(N)	club president
24	聯合	liánhé	聯合	(Adv)	jointly
25	音樂會	yīnyuèhuì	音樂會	(N)	concert
26	節目	jiémù	節目	(N)	program, show, event
27	好評	hǎopíng	好評	(N)	positive comments, praise

28	企劃	qìhuà	企 劃	(V/N)	to plan (used in business); a plan
29	領導	lǐngdǎo	領 導	(V)	to lead
30	合作	hézuò	合 作	(Vi)	to cooperate with, work with
31	似乎	sìhū	似 乎	(Adv)	seem
32	關於	guānyú	關 於	(Prep)	related to, regarding
33	磨練	móliàn	磨 練	(N/V)	training, hone a skill; to train, hone, or to practice over time
34	優點	yōudiǎn	優 點	(N)	strong point, forte
35	上司	shàngsī	上 司	(N)	supervisor, boss
36	誇獎	kuājiǎng	誇 獎	(V)	to praise, commend
37	週	zhōu	週	(M)	week
38	內	nèi	內	(N)	within
39	以	yǐ	以	(Prep)	to use (formal)
40	書面	shūmiàn	書 面	(N)	in writing
41	通知	tōngzhī	通 知	(V/N)	to notify; a notification

### Phrases

42	就…而言	jiù...éryán	就 … 而 言		as far as...are concerned
43	新鮮人	xīnxiānrén	新 鮮 人		freshman, (here) a person, usually a college graduate, new or “fresh” to the workforce
44	面試官	miànshì guān	面 試 官		interviewing officer
45	自我介紹	zìwǒ jièshào	自 我 介 紹		self-introduction
46	所學有限	suǒxué yǒuxiàn	所 學 有 限		what has been learned is only rather limited

## 短文 Reading



### 就業還是創業？

最近建明的同班同學有的到處找工作；有的已經考上研究所，正在享受輕鬆的暑假；有的申請到國外的研究所，出國以前，得好好練習外語；還有兩個女同學打算自己創業賣衣服，正忙著找店面、找資金、找廠商。

建明當然也不例外，寄履歷，等通知。這一關似乎比考大學還難。其實因為建明在大學時接觸過一些餐飲業，他也想過，去跟銀行申請青年創業貸款來自己開店，但又擔心自己不是做生意的料。最後如果因為太辛苦而做不下去，恐怕要損失一筆錢。接下來還會有繳不完的貸款。想到這裡就提不起勇氣當老闆，寧可進一個大企業當員工。

為了求職的事，建明也跟父母討論過，建明父母對他的工作倒是沒有特別的意見，只希望他找個能穩定發展的工作，將來可以養家活口就好。幸虧沒有來自父母的壓力，他才能按照自己的興趣找工作。

上個星期建明接到了一家連鎖餐飲公司的通知，說他已經通過筆試，請他去面試。建明很興奮，因為這正是他的目標。為了準備面試，他上網找那家公司的資料，熟讀關於那家公司的歷史及發展，也對他所應徵的職位有初步的了解。另外還找了一些面試技巧、面試的考古題，甚至還跟同學做了面試沙盤推演。至於他的面試服裝，是妹妹陪著他去買的，畢竟男生對打扮比較沒有概念。妹妹幫他挑了一套最基本的深藍色西裝，配一件白色的襯衫。

今天建明到那家公司面試，過程還算順利。面試官對他的印象好像還不錯，如果能順利錄取，那就太好了。



## 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

### 就业还是创业

最近建明的同班同学有的到处找工作；有的已经考上研究所，正在享受轻松的暑假；有的申请到国外的研究所，出国以前，得好好练习外语；还有两个女同学打算自己创业卖衣服，正忙着找店面、找资金、找厂商。

建明当然也不例外，寄履历，等通知。这一关似乎比考大学还难。其实因为建明在大学时接触过一些餐饮业，他也想过，去跟银行申请青年创业贷款来自己开店，但又担心自己不是做生意的料。最后如果因为太辛苦而做不下去，恐怕要损失一笔钱。接下来还会有缴不完的贷款。想到这里就提不起勇气当老板，宁可进一个大企业当员工。

为了求职的事，建明也跟父母讨论过，建明父母对他的工作倒是没有特别的意见，只希望他找个能稳定发展的工作，将来可以养家活口就好。幸亏没有来自父母的压力，他才能按照自己的兴趣找工作。

上个星期建明接到了一家连锁餐饮公司的通知，说他已经通过笔试，请他去面试。建明很兴奋，因为这正是他的目标。为了准备面试，他上网找那家公司的资料，熟读关于那公司的历史及发展，也对他所应征的职位有初步的了解。另外还找了一些面试技巧、面试的考古题，甚至还跟同学做了面试沙盘推演。至于他的面试服装，是妹妹陪着他去买的，毕竟男生对打扮比较没有概念。妹妹帮他挑了一套最基本的深蓝色西装，配一件白色的衬衫。

今天建明到那家公司面试，过程还算顺利。面试官对他的印象好像还不错，如果能顺利录取，那就太好了。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



10-04

### Vocabulary

1	出國	chūguó	イ × 出 國	(V-sep)	to go abroad
2	資金	zījīn	カ シ 金	(N)	capital, funds
3	廠商	chǎngshāng	イ ノ 工 場	(N)	manufacturer
4	例外	lìwài	カ、 一、 例 外	(N)	exception

5	關	guān	關	(N)	hurdle
6	接觸	jiēchù	接 觸	(V)	to come in contact with, to contact
7	青年	qīngnián	青 年	(N)	young people, youth
8	貸款	dàikuǎn	貸 款	(N)	loan
9	開店	kāidiàn	開 店	(V-sep)	to open a store
10	料	liào	料	(N)	material, (here) a person not suited for...
11	損失	sǔnshī	損 失	(Vpt)	to lose
12	勇氣	yǒngqì	勇 氣	(N)	courage
13	員工	yuángōng	員 工	(N)	employee
14	求職	qiúzhí	求 職	(Vi)	to seek employment
15	目標	mùbiāo	目 標	(N)	target, (here) the most ideal job
16	初步	chūbù	初 步	(Vs-attr)	preliminary, initial
17	技巧	jìqiǎo	技 巧	(N)	tips
18	概念	gàiniàn	概 念	(N)	concept, idea
19	挑	tiāo	挑	(V)	to select, pick
20	基本	jīběn	基 本	(Vs)	basic
21	襯衫	chènshān	襯 衫	(N)	button-up shirt
22	過程	guòchéng	過 程	(N)	process

### Phrases

23	同班	tóngbān	同 班		same class
24	是…的料	shì...de liào	是 … 的 料		to be gifted in...
25	接下來	jiēxiàlá	接 下 來		and then, next
26	提不起 (勇氣)	tíbùqǐ (yǒngqì)	提 不 起 (勇 氣)		unable to raise... to a high level to pump up (enough courage)
27	養家活口	yǎngjiā huókǒu	養 家 活 口		support one's family

28	來自	láizi	カ 来	from 來 + literary preposition 自 “from” = 從...來
29	熟讀	shóudú	尸 又	to keep reading something until one remembers everything
30	考古題	kǎogǔtí	尸 又	test items from previous years (題 -tí, for test items)
31	沙盤推演	shāpán tuīyǎn	尸 又	to rehearse; a dry run, a practice run
32	深藍色	shēnlánsè	尸 又	dark blue

## 文法 Grammar

### I. Summary of the Various Functions of 著 10-05

 英譯 p.243

**Function:** 著 is a temporal notion. It typically combines with action verbs and lengthens their duration. It is related to, but is not the same as, the English -ing form.

#### 1. Progressive continuative: V 著

##### (1) Static action

- a. 李明華手裡拿著一杯咖啡。(B2, L1)
- b. 高美玲帶著她的履歷表到語言中心去跟主任面談。(B2, L4)
- c. 你不要一直坐著，我們去運動吧！

##### (2) Continuing action

- a. 他們看著地圖，從學校門口往左轉，過了和平東路就到了師大路。(B2, L1)
- b. 晚餐後一家人吃著月餅、柚子，一邊給孩子說月亮的故事，過一個溫馨的節日。(B3, L3)

#### 2. Converting action to manner: V 著 VP

(1) V 著 before VP indicates that the subject remains in the state of that action while he carries out another action.

- a. 他在門口站著跟客人說話。(B2, L5)

b. 我那個室友，最近不是整夜開著燈打電玩，就是熬夜看球賽。(B3, L8)

(2) With (temporary) state verbs: Vs 著 VP

a. 阿姨白天在學校教書，下了班，接了孩子回家，就忙著做飯、陪孩子做功課。(B3, L7)

b. 欸！別急著坐下，先把一些大家具擺好吧。(B4, L4)

3. Repetition of action: V 著 V 著就…

(1) 大家吃著吃著，新郎、新娘和他們的父母就來敬酒了。(B2, L5)

(2) 剛開始是很怕，但是看著看著就上癮了。(B4, L1)

(3) 說著說著就哭出來了。

4. Existential: V 著 Subject. This pattern typically asserts the existence of something at a location.

(1) 風水師說如果牆上掛著凶猛的動物或是刀、劍等，會讓住在裡面的人脾氣暴躁。(B4, L4)

(2) 這棟大樓裡住著不少明星。

## II. The Various Meanings of 中 10-06



**Function:** Spatial terms in Chinese, and indeed in many languages, can have temporal meanings as well. 中 figures prominently in Chinese people's life. 中國 means Middle Kingdom, the center of the world.

1. Spatial meaning (amongst, short from 當中)

(1) 這兩個人中，到底哪一個是你女朋友？

(2) 你站在一群人中，當然不容易被找到。

(3) 這次的面試在兩百個應徵者中，只選出三個，真的很不容易考上。

2. Temporal meaning 1 (during)

(1) 我去法國念書的那兩年中，不但學會了做飯，還學會了開車。

- (2) 奶奶說她一生中最難忘的事，是 17 歲那年發生的戰爭。  
 (3) 大學四年是我的年輕歲月中最開心的一段時間。

### 3. Temporal meaning 2 (in the process of)

- (1) 這個計畫已經在進行中了，現在喊停已經來不及了。  
 (2) 餐廳還沒開，門口掛著「準備中」的牌子。  
 (3) 那個房間外面的燈寫著「手術中」，外面有好幾個家人焦慮地走來走去。

### 練習 Exercise

What would your comments be? Please use 中 stating them.

- ① 你的手機被偷了，當時有五個人在那個房間裡。  
 → \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 你為了明天的面試去買領帶，百貨公司裡有好幾百條領帶，你真不知道要選哪一條。  
 → \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 你朋友抱怨工作太忙，沒時間休息，可是你覺得她的工作可以讓她學到很多東西。  
 → \_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 你跟你的同事為了一個計畫努力工作了很久，後來這個計畫並沒有成功，你的同事都很失望，但你覺得在努力的這段過程也得到了很多經驗。  
 → \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 你的兩個朋友，最近開始交往，看起來很甜蜜的樣子。  
 → \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑥ 你要聽一個演唱會，可是你遲到了，工作人員把你擋在門外，說裡面正在表演，現在不可以進去。  
 → \_\_\_\_\_。



### III. 似乎 *it seems that, it gives somebody the impression that* 10-07

 英譯 p.244

**Function:** This adverb expresses the speaker's judgment on or evaluation of a situation.

- 1 看他跟妳說話的樣子，他似乎很喜歡妳，妳要不要給他一個機會？
- 2 聽你這麼說，你似乎不太相信他的話。
- 3 我以前根本沒來過這裡，為什麼我覺得似乎來過？
- 4 跟高中同學聊到以前在學校的事，讓大家似乎又回到十七、八歲。
- 5 他每天吃喝玩樂，似乎都不需要擔心養家活口的問題。

#### 練習 Exercise

What would you say? Please summarize the following sentences by using the adverb 似乎.

- 1 你在看網路上一個蛋糕店的照片，你覺得他們的蛋糕看起來很好吃。  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 你陪太太去逛街，太太站在一個鞋店的前面看一雙鞋看了很久。  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 你看窗外，天非常黑，有一個人……  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 你有一個朋友在學西班牙文，學得非常辛苦，語法常常弄不清楚。  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 新聞說颱風越來越接近了，外面的風雨也越來越大了。  
\_\_\_\_\_。

IV. Classical Chinese Preposition 以  10-08 英譯 p.244

**Function:** The preposition 以 takes an instrument as its object, similar to modern 用.

- ① 1990年，她以很好的成績畢業，進入一家電腦公司工作。
- ② 聽到家裡出事了，媽媽以很快的速度跑回去。
- ③ 古代人用自己的東西跟別人換自己需要的東西，叫做「以物易物」（易 trade (formal)）。
- ④ 我在夜市以很低的價錢買到這件好看的衣服。
- ⑤ 如果以簡單容易懂的句子來說明，孩子們比較容易了解。

**Usage:** In modern Chinese, the character 以 is seen forming locational words, such as 以內 (within), 以外 (in addition, out of), 以下 (below), 以上 (above).

## 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 以 phrases.

- ① 專家常說父母應該\_\_\_\_\_代替打罵。
- ② 我跟朋友不常見面，但是我們常\_\_\_\_\_聯絡。
- ③ 有沒有錄取，我們會\_\_\_\_\_通知。
- ④ 今天沒有酒，我們就\_\_\_\_\_當酒吧！
- ⑤ 有些人，\_\_\_\_\_治病，說什麼病都能治，還真的有人相信。

V. 是…的料 *to be gifted in...*  10-09 英譯 p.244

**Function:** The literal meaning of 料 is 'material', raw or otherwise, but here refers to one's talents. 做…的料 denotes natural capability or aptitude to perform a certain task or job.

- ① 老闆看他是塊做生意的料，於是就把這家店交給他管理。
- ② 你聲音這麼好，實在是唱歌的料，不去參加唱歌比賽太可惜了。

- ③ 她身材非常好，穿什麼衣服都好看，是塊當模特兒的料。
- ④ 他頭腦不清楚，口才也不好，根本不是從事媒體工作的料。
- ⑤ 他不管賣什麼都賣得不好，賺不到什麼錢。他真不是賺錢的料。

### 練習 Exercise

What would you say? Please use 是…的料 or 不是…的料 when responding to the following questions.

- ① 大明身材高大，打起籃球來動作帥得不得了，投籃也很準，你覺得他很適合打籃球。你會怎麼說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 大明雖然是籃球校隊，可是在念書方面他真的不行，要他念書簡直就是要他的命。你覺得他完全沒辦法念書。你會怎麼說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 你兒子只要看到電視裡有人跳舞，就馬上學會，不需要別人教。你會怎麼說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 雖然他懂這門學問，可是他沒辦法說明，也沒辦法教別人。你會怎麼說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 小王開了一家店，服務員都不聽他的，什麼事都要小王自己做。你會怎麼說？  
\_\_\_\_\_。

## VI. Summary of 下去 10-10



**Function:** The combination 下去 can refer to several meanings.

### 1. As a Verb

(1) Locational, to go down, e.g.,

- a. 你先下去，我們十分鐘後在門口集合。
- b. 車子壞了，於是車上的人都下去幫忙推車子。

(2) Temporal, to keep on, e.g.,

- a. 你這樣下去，一定會失敗的。
- b. 公司每個月都損失很多錢，再這樣下去，公司一定會倒閉的。

### 2. As a Verb Complement

(1) Locational, to go downwards, e.g.,

- a. 請幫我把電視搬下去。
- b. 前面已經沒有路，我們走不下去了。
- c. 小王的孩子不小心把玩具上的小東西吃了下去。

(2) Temporal, to continue V-ing, e.g.,

- a. 除了補習班無法繼續經營下去，老闆更擔心的是台灣的未來。(B4, L8)
- b. 你再繼續說下去，我們就要睡著了。
- c. 要是他不去借錢，這個月就活不下去了。

### 練習 Exercise

What would you say? Please use 下去 when responding to the following questions.

- 1 你跟室友住在三樓，你室友的女朋友在樓下等他，他卻過了好久還在房間裡，你會對他說什麼？

\_\_\_\_\_。

- 2 你的大學同學畢業後到外國念研究所，念了幾個月，他對你說那個研究所太難念了，好想放棄，你想鼓勵他，不要放棄，你會說什麼？
- \_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 你們公司第一次跟 A 公司合作，你覺得合作得很順利，希望以後都可以合作，你會說什麼？
- \_\_\_\_\_。

- 4 你跟室友住在二樓，你室友在樓下，他忘了帶外套，要你拿給他，可是你不想走到樓下，你拿著他的外套在窗戶邊。你會跟室友說什麼？
- \_\_\_\_\_。

- 5 你跟朋友在看恐怖片，那部電影太恐怖了，你真的沒有勇氣看了，你會跟朋友說什麼？
- \_\_\_\_\_。

## VII. 自 *from* (formal) 10-11

 英譯 p.245

**Function:** 自 is a classical Chinese preposition, corresponding to modern 從, meaning “from” a location. It occurs after a main verb (as in classical Chinese).

- 1 世界各地都有來自中國的移民。
- 2 現在中文裡像「超好吃」這樣「超…」的表達是來自日文。
- 3 這本書裡的文章大多數選自王大明的小說。
- 4 這對夫婦的孩子領養自三個不同的國家。
- 5 這本歷史故事書是翻譯自西班牙歷史故事。

**Usage:** The negative structure is “不是 + V 自”, e.g.,

1. 聽說那位畫家的很多畫都不是出自自己的手，而是學生畫的。
2. 這張圖片不是取自網路，而是我自己拍的。

## 練習 Exercise

Please specify the locational phrases (自 …) of the following sentences.

- 1 林老師有很多東西都購自 \_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 這家火鍋店所用的食材都是產自 \_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 \_\_\_\_\_ 這種病常常是來自壓力。
- 4 這份研究資料是取自 \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 師大國語中心有來自 \_\_\_\_\_ 的 \_\_\_\_\_。

## 語法例句英譯

## Grammar Examples in English

## I. Summary of the Various Functions of 著

### Function:

#### 1. Progressive continuative: V 著

- (1) Static action
  - a. Li Minghua is holding a cup of coffee.
  - b. Gao Meiling brought her resume into the language center for her interview with the director.
  - c. Don't just sit around all day. Let's go exercise!

#### (2) Continuing action

- a. They were studying the map. Getting to Shida road meant turning left at the main school entrance and crossing Heping East road.
- b. After dinner the whole family sat around eating moon cakes and pomelos, describing the story of moon cakes to the kids, enjoying the holidays.

#### 2. Converting action to manner: V 著 VP

- (1) V 著 before VP indicates that the

subject remains in the state of that action while he carries out another action.

- a. They were standing in the doorway talking.
- b. These days, my roommate either plays video games all night with the light on or stays up late watching sports.

#### (2) With (temporary) state verbs: Vs 著 VP

- a. Auntie teaches at school during the day. On her way home she picks up her kid and then gets to work making food and helping with homework.
- b. Hey! Not so fast, first arrange the furniture before you sit down.

#### 3. Repetition of action: V 著 V 著就…

- (1) Everyone was busy eating as the bride, groom, and their parents made their rounds giving toasts.
- (2) At first it was scary, but after watching for a while it became addicting.
- (3) She was saying something and then started crying.

4. Existential: V 著 Subject.
- (1) According to Feng Shui masters, hanging fierce animals or sharp objects like knives and swords on your walls is conducive to bad temper.
  - (2) Many celebrities live in this building.

## II. The Various Meanings of 中

### Function:

1. Spatial meaning (amongst, short for 當中)
  - (1) Which of these two people exactly is your girlfriend?
  - (2) Of course it's not easy to find you amid a crowd of people.
  - (3) This time, out of the 200 applicants who took the oral exam only three were selected. Qualifying was truly not an easy task.
2. Temporal meaning 1 (during)
  - (1) During the two years that I was studying in France, I not only learned how to cook, but how to drive as well.
  - (2) Grandma said that the most unforgettable part of her whole life was the war broke out when she was 17.
  - (3) My four years of college was the happiest period of my youth.
3. Temporal meaning 2 (in the process of)
  - (1) This proposal is already under way, and it's too late to try stopping it now.
  - (2) The restaurant hasn't opened yet; there is a "closed" sign hanging on the door.
  - (3) Outside that door lit up by a sign, "Surgery in Progress," there are many concerned family members pacing back and forth.

## III. 似乎 *it seems that, it gives somebody the impression that*

### Function:

- ① Seeing the way that he talks to you, it seems that he likes you, and how about giving him a chance?
- ② Listening to you now, it seems like you don't really believe what he said.
- ③ I've never been here in my life. Why does it seem so familiar?
- ④ Chatting with my high school classmates about our school days made it seem like we were all 17 or 18 years old again.
- ⑤ Eat, drink, and be merry; that is what he does every day. It's as if he doesn't have to take care of his family.

## IV. Classical Chinese Preposition 以

### Function:

- ① In 1990 she graduated with top marks and started working for a computer company.
- ② Upon hearing that something had happened at home, Mom came back as quickly as she could.
- ③ During ancient times, people acquired the things they needed by trading with each other in a 'commodity for commodity' system.
- ④ I bought this nice piece of clothing for a really low price at the night market.
- ⑤ If you use simple, easy to understand sentences, kids will have a better time comprehending.

## V. 是…的料 *to be gifted in...*

### Function:

- ① The boss saw the business acumen in him, and so let him manage the store.
- ② Your voice sounds so good, and you'd make a great singer. It would be a shame if you didn't enter that singing competition.
- ③ She has a great figure, and everything she wears looks good on her. She is definitely model material.

- ④ He's not a clear thinker, nor is he good with words. He is certainly not cut out for work in the media industry.
- ⑤ No matter what he tries to sell, it never does well. He's not a natural money maker.

## VI. Summary of 下去

### Function:

1. As a Verb
  - (1) Locational, to go down, e.g.,
    - a. You head down there first. We'll meet you at the entrance in ten minutes.
    - b. The vehicle broke down, so everyone got out to help push it.
  - (2) Temporal, to keep on, e.g.,
    - a. If you keep on like this, you are sure to fail.
    - b. The company is losing money every month. If this continues on we will have to close operations.
2. As a Verb Complement
  - (1) Locational, to go downwards, e.g.,
    - a. Please help me move the TV down.
    - b. There's a dead end up ahead, and we can't keep going forward.

- c. Xiao Wang's child accidentally swallowed part of a toy.
- (2) Temporal, to continue Ving. e.g.,
    - a. In addition to worrying about their cram schools not being able to stay in business, cram school owners are even more concerned about Taiwan's future.
    - b. If you keep on talking we're all going to fall asleep.
    - c. If he doesn't borrow a bit of money, he's not going to make it to the end of the month.

## VII. 自 from (formal)

### Function:

- ① Immigrants from China can be found all over the world.
- ② The characters '超', as used in modern Chinese phrases like '超好吃', is an expression that came from Japanese.
- ③ The selections in this book are mostly taken from Wang Daming's novel.
- ④ This couple's children have been adopted from three different countries.
- ⑤ This book on history is translated from Spanish.



## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 求職

目標：能說明自己有興趣的工作，那些工作需要哪些條件？自己有哪些條件適合這個工作？

任務：請學生上人力銀行網站，搜尋他有興趣的工作，把應徵條件印出來給老師、同學參考。並在班上跟同學說明：

- 1 他為什麼對這個工作有興趣？
- 2 他的條件為什麼適合這個工作需要的條件？

### II. 應徵工作面試實況

目標：能學習面試時的問答

任務：針對學生上網搜尋的應徵的公司，學生兩兩一組，一位扮演面試官，一位扮演應徵工作的人。模擬公司面試時的問答。一輪做完後，交換不同組員再做一次。

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### What are Young Entrepreneurs up to?

Jobs are hard to find, competition is fierce, and the pay is not exactly high — according to a survey, around half of those just entering the workforce want to start their own business.

But what kind of business? There is a preference among entrepreneurs to start their own brand and sell out of a shop (30%). Also popular are online auction sites and web-based companies (23%), as well as franchises (20%). For those aspiring to open their own stores the top choice is restaurants with both food and beverage menus, specifically shops selling shaved-ice desserts and drinks (31.25%), followed by small retail/wholesale businesses (26.06%), and clothing stores (23.64%).

Why start your own business? With small capital ventures like online retailers, small franchises, and studios, the threshold and risk of starting a business are both greatly reduced, rendering entrepreneurship an attainable dream.

Take shops that sell shaved-ice desserts and drinks for example. Expenditures are minimal, risks low, and transactions are all cash-based, meaning costs can be recovered quickly. Add to that a steadily rising temperature in Taiwan and you have a naturally increasing demand for cold treats; as long as there are no cold snaps, sales can do well in winter too.

There are many advantages to starting an online retail business as well: no rent, no geographical limitations, low costs, and flexible working times. It is even common for office workers to run an online retailer on the side.

The hardest part about starting your own business is coming up with the capital; most people accomplish this by using their personal savings, applying for a Start Up Loan from the government, or finding an investment partner.



▲ 《聯合報》馮靖惠／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》王昭月／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》邱瓊玉／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》謝進盛／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》宋健生／攝影

▲ From restaurants to clothing, more and more entrepreneurs are starting their own businesses.



## Self-Assessment Checklist

我能說明自己的學歷。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

A horizontal progress bar with a light yellow background and a dark orange line indicating the current level of completion, which is approximately 85%.

我能談論找工作的經驗。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

A horizontal progress bar with a light yellow background and a dark orange line indicating the current level of completion, which is approximately 85%.

我能說明自己的工作經歷。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

A horizontal progress bar with a light yellow background and a dark orange line indicating the current level of completion, which is approximately 85%.

我能介紹自己國家就業的情況。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

A horizontal progress bar with a light yellow background and a dark orange line indicating the current level of completion, which is approximately 85%.

LESSON

# 11

第十一課

## 文化、種族的大熔爐

The Big Cultural and Ethnic Melting Pot

---

### 學習目標

主題：社會結構的改變

- 了解台灣社會族群和語言文化的多元化。
- 能討論自己國家移民的問題。
- 能談談自己國家對不同文化的認同情形。
- 能介紹自己國家人口和生產力的轉變。



LESSON  
**11**

# 文化、種族的大熔爐

## The Big Cultural and Ethnic Melting Pot

對話 Dialogue

11-01



(美語補習班家長日時間)

張先生：真可惜，補習班就要結束營業了，以後見面的機會就更少了。

張太太：如玉，以後要是有空的話歡迎常來我們家玩。

白如玉：謝謝，要是以後小明在英文方面有什麼問題的話，請隨時打電話給我。

張太太：小明的英文進步了不少，但他的越南話卻退步了很多。有時候想想真氣人，我叫他跟我說越南話，他偏偏不聽，還是照說中文。

張先生：小明在台灣難得有機會說越南話，再加上他不肯跟他媽媽練習，慢慢地越南話就退步了。

- 白如玉：小孩子如果能學好自己的「母語」，不但不會影響學習，在許多方面的學習上反而會更好。
- 張太太：是啊！就像我小時候在美國，父母跟我們姐弟在家說越南話；到了學校我就跟同學說英文；來台灣念大學後，我才開始學中文的。
- 白如玉：哇！真難得，我以為張太太妳是越南華僑，從小在家就說中文，所以中文說得那麼流利，好像沒有什麼口音。
- 張太太：謝謝妳的誇獎，雖然我在台灣已經住了十多年了，但也花了好長一段時間來適應這裡的語言、文化、生活習慣及價值觀等。
- 白如玉：妳真是了不起，會說那麼多種語言，又能適應那麼多種文化。
- 張先生：她在工作之餘也常常去「新移民多元文化交流活動中心」當志工。
- 白如玉：原來有這樣的地方啊！當志工要做些什麼事呢？
- 張太太：在台灣每個縣、市都有這樣的活動中心。我能做的就是安慰那些外籍配偶，跟她們聊聊天。因為不少人有很多生活適應上的問題，例如：想家、睡不著、寂寞、焦慮、後悔等情況，再加上語言溝通的障礙，也不容易和台灣本地人建立良好的關係。
- 張先生：台灣以往比較少面對多元文化的衝擊，所以社會大眾難以接受和認同這些跨國婚姻移民。
- 白如玉：是啊，其實美國早期也一樣。另外也曾經因為其他國家的人口大量移入，憂慮會降低人口素質而歧視移民。

張先生：這些新移民的家庭和子女，其實可能是台灣發展全球化的重要資產。

張太太：面對不同文化，我們應以平等、尊重、學習的方式來相互了解。

張先生：面對新移民時，如果我們把他們當外人，他們就會成為外人；如果把他們當自己人，他們才會用自己人的態度面對我們。所以態度真的非常重要。

白如玉：我非常同意你們的看法。今天真高興有機會跟你們聊了那麼多，也讓我對台灣有了更進一步的了解，真謝謝你們。

張太太：哪裡，哪裡，也謝謝妳這麼照顧小明，要常跟我們聯絡喔。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

(美语补习班家长日时间)

張先生：真可惜，补习班就要结束营业了，以后见面的机会就更少了。

張太太：如玉，以后要是有空的话欢迎常来我们家玩。

白如玉：谢谢，要是以后小明在英文方面有什么问题的话，请随时打电话给我。

張太太：小明的英文进步了不少，但他的越南话却退步了很多。有时候想想真气人，我叫他跟我说越南话，他偏偏不听，还是照说中文。

張先生：小明在台湾难得有机会说越南话，再加上他不肯跟他妈妈练习，慢慢地越南话就退步了。

白如玉：小孩子如果能学好自己的「母语」，不但不会影响学习，在许多方面的学习上反而会更好。

張太太：是啊！就像我小时候在美国，父母跟我们姐弟在家说越南话；到了学校我就跟同学说英文；来台湾念大学后，我才开始学中文的。

白如玉：哇！真难得，我以为张太太妳是越南华侨，从小在家就说中文，所以中文说得那么流利，好像没有什么口音。

张太太：谢谢妳的夸奖，虽然我在台湾已经住了十多年了，但也花了好长一段时间来适应这里的语言、文化、生活习惯及价值观等。

白如玉：妳真是了不起，会说那么多种语言，又能适应那么多种文化。

张先生：她在工作之余也常常去「新移民多元文化交流活动中心」当志工。

白如玉：原来有这样的地方啊！当志工要做些什么事呢？

张太太：在台湾每个县、市都有这样的活动中心。我能做的就是安慰那些外籍配偶，跟她们聊聊天。因为不少人有很多生活适应上的问题，例如：想家、睡不着、寂寞、焦虑、后悔等情况，再加上语言沟通的障碍，也不容易和台湾本地人建立良好的人际关系。

张先生：台湾以往比较少面对多元文化的冲击，所以社会大众难以接受和认同这些跨国婚姻移民。

白如玉：是啊，其实美国早期也一样。另外也曾经因为其他国家的人口大量移入，忧虑会降低人口素质而歧视移民。

张先生：这些新移民的家庭和子女，其实可能是台湾发展全球化的重要资产。

张太太：面对不同文化，我们应以平等、尊重、学习的方式来相互了解。

张先生：面对新移民时，如果我们把他们当外人，他们就会成为外人；如果把他们当自己人，他们才会用自己人的态度面对我们。所以态度真的非常重要。

白如玉：我非常同意你们的看法。今天真高兴有机会跟你们聊了那么多，也让我对台湾有了更进一步的了解，真谢谢你们。

张太太：哪里，哪里，也谢谢妳这么照顾小明，要常跟我们联络喔。

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



11-02

### Vocabulary

1	種族	zhǒngzú	種族	(N)	ethnic group, race
2	熔爐	rónglú	熔爐	(N)	melting pot, smelting furnace, crucible



3	偏偏	piānpiān	ㄆㄧㄢ ㄆㄧㄢ	(Adv)	deliberately, insist on
4	肯	kěn	ㄎㄣˇ	(Vaux)	be willing to
5	母語	mǔyǔ	ㄇㄨˇ ㄩˇ	(N)	mother tongue
6	口音	kǒuyīn	ㄎㄨˇ ㄩㄣ	(N)	accent
7	適應	shìyìng	ㄕㄨˋ ㄩㄥˋ	(V)	to adapt to, get used to
8	了不起	liǎobùqǐ	ㄌㄧㄠˇ ㄅㄨˋ ㄑǐ	(Vs)	terrific, amazing, really something
9	交流	jiāoliú	ㄐㄧㄠ ㄌㄧㄡˊ	(Vi)	to exchange, associate
10	志工	zhìgōng	ㄓㄧˋ ㄍㄨㄥ	(N)	volunteer
11	縣	xiàn	ㄒㄩㄢˋ	(N)	county
12	市	shì	ㄕㄨˋ	(N)	city
13	外籍	wàijí	ㄨㄞˋ ㄐㄧˊ	(Vs-attr)	foreign national
14	配偶	pèi'ǒu	ㄆㄟˋ ㄡˇ	(N)	spouse
15	焦慮	jiāolù	ㄐㄧㄠ ㄌㄨˋ	(Vs)	to be anxious
16	溝通	gōutōng	ㄍㄨ ㄊㄨㄥ	(N)	communication
17	障礙	zhàng'ài	ㄓㄨㄥˋ ㄞˋ	(N)	obstacle, handicap
18	良好	liánghǎo	ㄌㄧㄢˊ ㄏㄠˇ	(Vs)	positive
19	以往	yǐwǎng	ㄩˇ ㄨㄥˇ	(Adv)	formerly, heretofore
20	面對	miànduì	ㄇㄧㄢˋ ㄉㄨㄟˋ	(V)	to face, confront
21	衝擊	chōngjí	ㄔㄨㄥ ㄐㄧˊ	(N)	impact
22	大眾	dàzhòng	ㄉㄚˋ ㄓㄨㄥˋ	(N)	the public, the masses
23	難以	nányǐ	ㄋㄢˊ ㄩˇ	(Adv)	to find it difficult to
24	認同	rèntóng	ㄖㄣˋ ㄊㄨㄥˊ	(V)	to identify with, accept
25	跨國	kuàguó	ㄎㄨㄚˋ ㄍㄨㄛˊ	(Vs-attr)	transnational
26	大量	dàliàng	ㄉㄚˋ ㄌㄧㄤˋ	(Adv)	in large quantities
27	移入	yírù	ㄩˊ ㄖㄨˋ	(V)	to immigrate (入, to enter, into (formal))
28	憂慮	yōulǜ	ㄩ ㄌㄨˋ	(Vst)	to worry
29	降低	jiàngdī	ㄐㄧㄤˋ ㄉㄧ	(V)	to reduce, lower

30	素質	sùzhí	素 質	(N)	quality
31	歧視	qíshì	歧 視	(Vst)	to discriminate
32	子女	zǐnǚ	子 女	(N)	children (from 兒子 + 女兒)
33	資產	zīchǎn	資 產	(N)	asset, resource
34	應	yīng	應	(Vaux)	should, ought to (formal)
35	平等	píngděng	平 等	(N)	equality
36	相互	xiānghù	相 互	(Adv)	mutually, each other
37	外人	wàirén	外 人	(N)	outsider
38	聯絡	liánluò	聯 絡	(V)	to contact, to connect with

### Names

39	小明	Xiǎomíng	小 明	Xiaoming, a nickname
----	----	----------	-----	----------------------

### Phrases

40	家長日	jiāzhǎngrì	家 長 日	parents' day
41	氣人	qìrén	氣 人	exasperating, annoying
42	照說	zhào shuō	照 說	to keep on saying...
43	在...之餘	zài...zhīyú	在...之 餘	to do something at a time when not doing...
44	本地人	běndì rén	本 地 人	local people
45	自己人	zìjǐrén	自 己 人	one of us, one of our own, compatriots
46	哪裡！	nǎlǐ nǎlǐ	哪 裡 ！	not at all, not a problem, you're welcome
	哪裡！		哪 裡 ！	

## 多元文化新台灣

白如玉來台灣以後，因為在補習班教英文的關係，而漸漸地和一些學生家長越來越熟。張先生夫婦就是那些家長之一，他們都曾在美國念書，所以對白如玉特別照顧。在台灣，除了學中文和嘗試多了解台灣的文化及社會外，白如玉也想多了解一些台灣這二、三十年來的發展。每次補習班有家長日，白如玉都一定參加，這樣就可多與那些家長談談了。



白如玉聽台灣朋友提過，台灣的社會結構這些年來產生了很大的轉變，尤其是台灣人口組成的變化。聽說現在每八個嬰兒中，就有一個雙親之一不是本國國籍，其中占大多數的是大陸籍與越南籍。以後這些兒童及其父母親的總人數將會占台灣人口相當的比例，對社會、經濟與政治發展都將產生影響。所有改變中，改變最多也是最根本的，將是種族與語言的多元化。可見將來所謂的「母語」，恐怕就不只是現有的國語、台語、客語與原住民語了。

將來教育資源的分配與公平地對待就變得非常重要。學校不但要顧慮到學童的身心發展與適應，對缺乏課業指導的學童，也要積極輔導，不能讓這些學童輸在起跑點上，失去了競爭力，甚至沒有公平的發展機會。然而從正面的觀點來看，這種多種族、多元文化的社會也會加速台灣的全球化。

另一方面，台灣地區的新生兒，近幾年已創下了歷史新低紀錄。出生率已有明顯的下降趨勢。因為這個趨勢會加速台灣社會的高齡化，對於下一個世代而言，將會是沉重的負擔。將來不但生產力不足，台灣也很難與別的國家一較長短。台灣若要持續發展，就應該正視新移民的家庭問題，並尊重、欣賞多元文化與積極面對其所帶來的衝擊。

## 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

### 多元文化新台灣

白如玉来台湾以后，因为在补习班教英文的关系，而渐渐地和一些学生家长越来越熟。张先生夫妇就是那些家长之一，他们都曾在美国念书，所以对白如玉特别照顾。在台湾，除了学中文和尝试多了解台湾的文化及社会外，白如玉也想多了解一些台湾这二、三十年来的发展。每次补习班有家长日，白如玉都一定参加，这样就可多与那些家长谈谈了。

白如玉听台湾朋友提过，台湾的社会结构这些年来产生了很大的转变，尤其是台湾人口组成的变化。听说现在每八个婴儿中，就有一个双亲之一不是本国国籍，其中占最多数的是大陆籍与越南籍。以后这些儿童及其父母亲的总人数将会占台湾人口相当的比例，对社会、经济与政治发展都将产生影响。所有改变中，改变最多也是最根本的，将是种族与语言的多元化。可见将来所谓的「母语」，恐怕就不只是现有的国语、台语、客语与原住民语了。

将来教育资源的分配与公平地对待就变得非常重要。学校不但要考虑到学童的身心发展与适应，对缺乏课业指导的学童，也要积极辅导，不能让这些学童输在起跑点上，失去了竞争力，甚至没有公平的发展机会。然而从正面的观点来看，这种多种族、多元文化的社会也会加速台湾的全球化。

另一方面，台湾地区的新生儿，近几年已创下了历史新低纪录。出生率已有明显的下降趋势。因为这个趋势会加速台湾社会的高龄化，对于下一个世代而言，将会是沉重的负担。将来不但生产力不足，台湾也很难与别的国家一较长短。台湾若要持续发展，就应该正视新移民的家庭问题，并尊重、欣赏多元文化与积极面对其所带来的冲击。

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



11-04

### Vocabulary

1	漸漸	jiànjian	$\frac{4}{5}$ $\frac{4}{5}$	(Adv)	gradually
2	曾	céng	$\frac{5}{2}$	(Adv)	have been before, was once (formal)

3	嘗試	chángshì	𠵼 𠵼	(V/N)	to try (something new), attempt; an attempt
4	結構	jiégòu	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	structure
5	產生	chǎnshēng	𠵼 𠵼	(Vp)	to take place, produce
6	轉變	zhuǎnbiàn	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	change, transformation
7	嬰兒	yīng'ér	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	baby
8	雙親	shuāngqīn	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	both parents
9	本國	běnguó	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	our country
10	國籍	guójí	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	nationality
11	大陸籍	Dàlùjí	𠵼 𠵼 𠵼	(N)	from Mainland China, (lit. Mainland nationality) (籍 -jí, nationality)
12	其	qí	𠵼	(Det)	his, her, its, their (formal)
13	比例	bǐlì	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	ratio (percentage)
14	根本	gēnběn	𠵼 𠵼	(Vs)	fundamental
15	可見	kějiàn	𠵼 𠵼	(Conj)	it is obvious that, it is clearly seen that
16	現有	xiànyǒu	𠵼 𠵼	(Vs-attr)	current, existing
17	分配	fēnpèi	𠵼 𠵼	(N/V)	distribution; to distribute, allocate
18	顧慮	gùlǜ	𠵼 𠵼	(Vst)	to be concerned about
19	學童	xué tóng	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	school children
20	身心	shēnxīn	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	physical and mental, mind and body
21	缺乏	quēfá	𠵼 𠵼	(Vst)	to lack
22	課業	kèyè	𠵼 𠵼	(N)	school work
23	指導	zhǐdǎo	𠵼 𠵼	(N/V)	guidance; to give guidance to
24	輔導	fǔdǎo	𠵼 𠵼	(V)	to counsel
25	輸	shū	𠵼	(Vp)	to lose out (opposite of win)
26	失去	shīqù	𠵼 𠵼	(Vp)	to lose (an item), lack

27	然而	rán'ér	目、ル	(Conj)	but, on the other hand, however
28	觀點	guāndiǎn	々、カ、ル	(N)	perspective
29	加速	jiāsù	ハ、ム、ク	(V)	to accelerate
30	創下	chuàngxià	イ、テ、マ、ス	(Vpt)	to set (a record)
31	紀錄	jìlù	レ、カ、ク	(N)	record
32	明顯	míngxiǎn	目、ト、ク	(Vs)	significant, obvious
33	下降	xiàjiàng	ト、マ、ス	(Vp)	to decrease
34	趨勢	qūshì	ム、ク	(N)	trend
35	高齡化	gāolíng huà	々、カ、ル、マ、ス	(Vp)	for a population to become aged/geriatric
36	世代	shìdài	ク、カ、ル	(N)	generation
37	不足	bùzú	ム、ク	(Vs)	insufficient, not adequate
38	持續	chíxù	イ、テ、マ、ス	(Vaux)	to continue, to keep on
39	正視	zhèngshì	直、ニ、カ、ス	(V)	to face squarely, pay due attention to

### Names

40	國語	Guóyǔ	々、ク	Mandarin
41	客語	Kèyǔ	々、ク	Hakka, a Chinese (Han) dialect

### Phrases

42	最多數	zuìduōshù	最、カ、ク	the greatest majority
43	總人數	zǒng rénshù	目、ト、ク	total population
44	起跑點	qǐpǎodiǎn	ク、マ、ス	starting line
45	新生兒	xīnshēng'ér	ト、マ、ス	a newborn baby
46	生產力	shēngchǎn lì	イ、テ、マ、ス	productivity
47	一較長短	yíjiào chángduǎn	一、ハ、マ、ス	to compete, to compare against

## 文法 Grammar

### I. 偏偏 *contrary to expectation, against the speaker's wish, annoyingly* 11-05

英譯 p.268

**Function:** 偏偏 is an adverb that expresses the speaker's annoyance at the occurrence of a situation, against and contrary to his expectation.

- ① 我今天沒帶雨傘，希望別下雨，偏偏下午下起大雨來了。
- ② 真氣人，我準備的都是考古題，這次的考試偏偏一題考古題也沒有，害我沒考好。
- ③ 學校「家長日」的時間偏偏都是我最忙的時候，所以不能去參加。
- ④ 我請他別穿西裝來參加，他卻偏偏穿了黑色西裝來了。
- ⑤ 我們告訴他應該配一條素色的領帶，他偏偏要配一條花的。
- ⑥ 為了在這裡做生意，我告訴他最好先和本地人建立良好的關係，他偏偏不聽。

#### Usage:

1. This adverb has a stronger tone of annoyance than 倒 or 卻.
2. When used for a deliberate action, 偏偏 can stand alone without duplication, but in this case it cannot be placed before the subject, e.g.,
  - (1) 我不想被家庭束縛，但她偏偏要生兒育女，所以我們就分手了。
  - (2) 他希望我不要去參加晚會，我偏要去。
  - (3) 小林叫我不要花錢買生日禮物給他，可是我偏要買禮物讓他開心。

## 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following sentences with events against the speaker's pleasure.

- 1 他的雙親不肯讓他去外縣市工作，但他偏偏  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 今年暑假我本來有機會去大企業實習，後來偏偏  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 大家都想嘗試一下這種新活動，你怎麼偏偏  
\_\_\_\_\_？
- 4 行行出狀元，他不想念醫學系就算了，為什麼偏偏要  
\_\_\_\_\_？
- 5 傳統市場賣的蔬菜比較便宜，可是媽媽偏偏  
\_\_\_\_\_。

II. 照 *persist*  11-06
 英譯 p.268

**Function:** The adverb 照 refers to the fact that the subject engages in some activity with total disregard for the given parameters, or to the fact that something persists.

- 1 在這個展覽館裡不可以拍照，但這些觀光客還照拍！
- 2 老師說：先注意聽，不要寫，但是那些學生不聽，照寫。
- 3 奇怪，我不是已經關機了嗎？怎麼手機還是照響？
- 4 我已經跟樓上鄰居抱怨了很多次，請他的孩子晚上 10 點以後別跳。但他的孩子不聽，照跳。
- 5 最近食品安全出了好幾次問題，那些東西你怎麼還照吃？



### Usage:

1. The verb following 照 is always in reference to the past.
2. The verb that follows 照 is most often monosyllabic, e.g., 照看, 照寫, 照拍, 照拿, and 照摸, to name a few.
3. 亂 V vs. 照 V  
A monosyllabic verb or verb phrase can follow 亂, e.g., 亂寫, 亂做, 亂花錢, 亂交朋友. However, only a monosyllabic verb can follow 照, with the object left out, e.g., 叫他別彈吉他了, 但他還照彈。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the sentences below using one of the following items: 照買, 照看, 照吃, 照摸, 照玩, 照咬, 照彈, 照擺, or 照罵.

- 1 我跟他說別把床放在衣櫥旁邊，可是他\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 吵死了，能不能安靜一點？叫你不要玩，你為什麼還\_\_\_\_\_？
- 3 他的脾氣太暴躁了，動不動就隨便罵人，勸他也不聽，還是常\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 她不聽我的話還\_\_\_\_\_，廣告上寫的是八折起，還可以等一等啊。
- 5 我的狗看到誰都咬，就是看到我也\_\_\_\_\_。

### III. 難得 *rarely* 11-07

 英譯 p.268

**Function:** 難得 is an adverb, indicating the speaker's observation that such an event is not commonly experienced.

- 1 他給自己很大的壓力，難得看到他輕鬆的樣子。
- 2 我難得來這附近的商業廣場，沒想到這裡這麼熱鬧。
- 3 你們難得聽古典音樂吧？覺得怎麼樣？喜歡嗎？
- 4 他的想法總是很正面，難得有負面的想法。
- 5 我難得看到他焦慮不安的樣子，發生了什麼事？

**Usage:** 難得 can also be a state verb being modified by 很 or 真, e.g.,  
真難得，那麼年輕就自食其力，不靠父母了。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 難得 sentences.

- 1 我常買彩券，但難得\_\_\_\_\_，今天\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 你別顧慮那麼多，難得有機會\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 這是一場難得\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 今年春節時每天都下雨，非常潮濕，難得\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 這裡以前滿山遍野到處都是鹿，現在已難得\_\_\_\_\_。

#### IV. 在…之餘 *while not otherwise engaged in...*, *apart from...* 11-08

 英譯 p.269

**Function:** This formal pattern gives the time frame to the rest of the sentence, when the subject is not otherwise engaged, apart from.

- 1 他常在教書之餘，去一些醫院當志工。
- 2 不少人中秋節在公園烤肉，然而在開心之餘，也要記得把垃圾帶走。
- 3 那位教授建議學生在念書之餘，也應多關心社會的公共議題。
- 4 你在照顧新生兒之餘，也要注意自己的身體健康。
- 5 農人們在農忙之餘，常舉行一些慶祝活動。

**Usage:** Various elements can occur with 在 and 之餘, e.g., VP in 1-4 above and NP in 5. Note again that this pattern is rather formal and is not used in colloquial speech.

### 練習 Exercise

Please respond to the sentences below by using 在...之餘.

- 1 A: 你對台灣的歷史了解得真多!  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 老張在政府開放探親以後，回去看過親戚嗎?  
B: 還沒有，但他\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 怎麼辦？她失業了！對她來說，工作好找嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 大學生不是應該好好學習嗎？怎麼參加那麼多社團活動？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 張教授，放暑假了，你可以好好地享受一下了。  
B: 我還得看幾個學生的論文，但是\_\_\_\_\_。

### V. 難以... *to find it difficult to...* 11-09

 英譯 p.269

**Function:** This pattern indicates that it is difficult, almost impossible, to undertake something.

- 1 大學的學費漲了不少，使很多學生難以負擔。
- 2 由於語言的障礙，他們兩個人一直難以溝通。
- 3 政府的政策不夠有彈性，所以難以改善失業的情況。
- 4 要是該國再持續發展下去，我國將難以跟他們一較長短了。
- 5 這個週末他請我去吃他表哥的喜酒，我實在難以拒絕。

#### Usage:

1. 難以 is formal and is followed by a disyllabic verb, e.g., 事情太複雜了，目前還難以處理。
2. 難以 is always followed by VP, see examples above.

## 練習 Exercise

Please complete the 難以 clauses below.

- 1 雖然失業率已明顯下降，然而也難以\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 \_\_\_\_\_，真讓人難以原諒。
- 3 我實在難以相信\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 他真了不起，創下了那麼多紀錄，使別人難以\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 我剛來台灣，還難以適應\_\_\_\_\_。

VI. 漸漸 *gradually, slowly*  11-10
 英譯 p.269

**Function:** The adverb 漸漸 defines the gradual completion of a process.

- 1 這裡以前種族歧視的情況非常嚴重，現在這種現象可說已漸漸走入歷史了。
- 2 現在跨國企業的合作已漸漸成為一種趨勢了。
- 3 我回國後因為工作忙碌，很少有機會跟那個組織聯絡，就漸漸失去了交流的機會。
- 4 台灣的生育率創下了歷史新低的紀錄，將來生產力會漸漸不足。
- 5 透過大量地練習，他的口音已漸漸改善。

**Usage:** 漸漸 is not a reduplicated form because \*漸 does not exist. 漸漸 often combines with the adverb marker 地 and must do so if it precedes the subject. In this case 漸漸地 is also followed by a short pause. e.g.,  
漸漸地，我越來越了解他了。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 漸漸 sentences.

- 1 由於他的工作表現很好，這幾年他漸漸受到\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 學了客語以後，我漸漸地\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 那個孩子由於缺乏課業輔導，所以成績漸漸\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 漸漸地，他發現\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 不少人認為現在大學生的素質已漸漸\_\_\_\_\_。

### VII. 可見 *It can thus be concluded that...* 11-11

英譯 p.269

**Function:** 可見 is an  $S_2$  conjunction, connected to an observation that follows naturally from  $S_1$ .

- 1 經過人民這麼多年的抗議，政府總算願意正視這個問題了，可見環境汙染的情況已很嚴重了。
- 2 連我那麼怕看恐怖片的人都不怕，可見這部電影一點也不可怕。
- 3 李先生那麼年輕就在餐飲業擁有了一片天，可見他多麼努力。
- 4 有錢的人越來越有錢，窮人越來越窮，可見貧富不均的情況越來越嚴重了。
- 5 現在有些碩士畢業生去夜市擺地攤，可見工作多難找啊！

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the following 可見 sentences.

- 1 現在不少人利用放假的時候去鄉下住一晚，可見\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 這個國家的人口結構產生了重大的轉變，65歲以上的老年人口已超過14歲以下的兒童人口，可見\_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 他今年暑假好不容易爭取到了去大企業實習的機會，可見  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 該政黨因為提不出讓民眾滿意的政策，所以支持度一直不高，可見  
\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 我的體力已經不如從前了，逛一下就走不動了，可見  
\_\_\_\_\_。

### VIII. 對於…而言 *as far as... is concerned* 11-12



**Function:** This pattern marks the focus of the entire sentence.

- 1 對於夫婦而言，沒有什麼比配偶騙了你的感情傷害性更大的了。
- 2 對於這些新移民而言，語言溝通的障礙最大。
- 3 一直要員工加班，對於公司而言，不見得有好處。
- 4 對於這些志工而言，能輔導這些學童是一件快樂的事。
- 5 我想對於任何人而言，受到種族歧視都是無法接受的。

**Usage:** The pattern 對…來說 always applies to a person or group of people, e.g., 對台南人來說，早餐非常重要。(see Book 3 Lesson 4) This needn't be the case for the formal pattern 對於…而言, e.g., 對於高科技的發展而言，如何培養研究人員是最重要的議題。

### 練習 Exercise

Please use 對於…而言 in completing the following dialogues.

- 1 A: 你似乎很喜歡跟他一較長短。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 這個世代的年輕人應該都可以認同未婚同居這件事了吧?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 A: 那兩個種族以往相互歧視，現在關係怎麼那麼好呢？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 聽說現在大學生的素質降低了很多，是真的嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 我實在難以適應上班族的生活。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

### 語法例句英譯

### Grammar Examples in English

#### I. 偏偏 *contrary to expectation, against the speaker's wish, annoyingly*

##### Function:

- 1 I didn't bring an umbrella today. I was hoping it wouldn't rain but of course it poured in the afternoon.
- 2 Unbelievable, I studied all the old recycled tests but there wasn't a single repeat question, and I got a bad mark because of it.
- 3 Parent's Day at school always coincides with my busy season, so I can never go.
- 4 I asked him not to come wearing a suit, but guess what, he showed up in a black suit.
- 5 We told him to wear a plain-colored tie, but he just had to wear a patterned one.
- 6 In order to get business done here, I told him it's best to first build good relationships with locals, but he didn't listen.

#### II. 照 *persist*

##### Function:

- 1 No pictures are allowed in this exhibition hall, but these tourists are taking pictures

anyway. They are completely disregarding the rule.

- 2 The teacher said: Listen closely before you start writing. The students, however, started writing immediately anyway.
- 3 That's weird. I thought I turned my cell phone off, and how come it's still ringing?
- 4 I've already complained to the upstairs neighbours numerous times asking them to keep their kid quiet after 10 o'clock, but the kid just keeps jumping around.
- 5 With all the food safety issues recently, how can you still eat that?

#### III. 難得 *rarely*

- 1 He is always putting so much pressure on himself, and it's rare to see him relaxed.
- 2 I don't often come to this shopping district. I had no idea how bustling it is.
- 3 You don't often listen to classical music, do you? What do you think? Do you like it?
- 4 He's a very positive person, and it's rare that he is ever negative.
- 5 I rarely see him anxious like this. What happened?

#### IV. 在...之餘 *while not otherwise engaged in..., apart from...*

##### Function:

- 1 He volunteers at hospitals when he is not teaching.
- 2 Lots of people barbecue in the park during the Mid-autumn Festival, but amid the festivities, they should remember to clean up after themselves.
- 3 The teacher suggested that the students concern themselves with social issues when they are not spending time studying.
- 4 When you are not busy looking after your newborn, make sure you take good care of yourself too.
- 5 When farmers aren't busy working they are often holding various celebrations.

#### V. 難以... *to find it difficult to...*

##### Function:

- 1 University tuitions have skyrocketed. A lot of students have a very hard time paying.
- 2 The two of them have a difficult time communicating due to a language barrier.
- 3 The government's policies are not flexible enough, so it is very difficult to improve unemployment.
- 4 If their country continues developing like this, our country will have a tough time keeping up.
- 5 He invited me to his cousin's wedding. How am I supposed to say no to that.

#### VI. 漸漸 *gradually, slowly*

##### Function:

- 1 Racism used to be a serious problem here, but that is slowly becoming history.
- 2 Cooperation between MNCs has become an emerging trend.
- 3 After coming back to my home country I became so busy with work that I stopped contacting that organization. Eventually exchange opportunities were forfeited.

- 4 The birth rate in Taiwan has set a record low. In the future, productivity will dwindle.
- 5 After extensive practice, his accent has slowly improved.

#### VII. 可見 *It can thus be concluded that...*

##### Function:

- 1 After so many years of public protest, the government is finally willing to address this issue. The problem of pollution has obviously become really bad.
- 2 Even a scaredy cat like me isn't scared by this horror movie. That tells you how mild it is.
- 3 Someone as young as Mr. Li is already a food and drink industry magnate. It goes to show how hard he works.
- 4 The rich are getting richer and the poor are getting poorer. Clearly the gap is widening.
- 5 Some Master's graduates go on to sell chicken cutlets in the night market, if that's any indication of how hard it is to find a job!

#### VIII. 對於...而言 *as far as... is concerned*

##### Function:

- 1 When it comes to married couples, nothing is more devastating than being cheated on.
- 2 The most difficult thing for new immigrants is the language barrier.
- 3 As for the company, constantly requiring employees to work overtime is not necessarily advantageous to the company.
- 4 As far as these volunteers are concerned, they are happy just to be able to mentor schoolchildren.
- 5 I think anyone would agree that being discriminated against because of race is unacceptable.



## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 歡迎你移民到我們國家

目標：學習如何教導別人語言，並學習說明自己國家的優點。

任務：請學生教全班同學幾句自己國家的語言，並說說自己國家的優點，請大家移民到他的國家去，最後大家投票看誰的國家最受歡迎。

### II. 我想當志工

目標：能透過提問，仔細清楚地記錄並說明別人選擇不同工作的原因。

任務：你願意當志工嗎？學生兩兩一組，問問你想做哪一類的志工？請在表格中寫上同學的名字，並問問他要服務的內容是什麼？選擇的原因是什麼？

工作類型	名字	服務內容	選擇理由
① 老人服務			
② 醫院服務			
③ 動物服務			
④ 課業指導			
⑤ 新移民服務			
⑥ 家庭及兒童服務			
⑦ 其他			

### III. 我對移民的看法

目標：能透過對移民議題的辯論，提出自己同意或不同意移民的看法。

任務：由於世界已是一個地球村，所以有越來越多的人移民到不同的國家去，全班分成兩組或多組：

A 組是正方：同意並支持移民政策

B 組是反方：反對政府接受移民

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### Afternoon Napping

Afternoon napping' simply refers to taking a half-hour snooze after lunch, and it is ubiquitous in Taiwan's schools. In elementary and middle school, students are required to rest during their post-lunch break time. Even those who have long graduated and entered the workforce keep up afternoon napping. Napping is common practice among students, office workers, and civil servants alike, such that without a nap people say they feel lethargic in the afternoon. A lot of students and office workers don't have time to go home for lunch, and since classrooms and office buildings don't have beds, most people snooze at their desks, resting their head on the desk in front of them and using their hands as a pillow.



Office workers take afternoon naps during their lunch break.

### Sitting a Month Out / Postpartum Care Centers

Since ancient times the Chinese have placed great importance on taking a month-long break after childbirth, and over thousands of years a unique culture of 'sitting a month out' has emerged. Why are new mothers required to sit a month out? The blood-loss, sweat, soreness of back, and stomach pains incurred by childbirth cost the body huge amounts of energy, weakening muscles, bones, and vitals. In this state mothers are susceptible to illness, especially if exposed to chilly winds, and a time of recovery is needed. During this month the goal is recuperation, the right amount of physical activity, a balanced diet and healthy eating habits. As the saying goes: Sit a month out now and your body will thank you later!

Traditionally speaking the new mother's family helps out during the month after childbirth, but as times have changed and social structures evolved, it is less common for a residence to be multi-generational. Also, elder family members often still have careers and their own lives to look after, and cannot commit themselves entirely to helping with postnatal care. In response, facilities have popped up specifically to provide services for mothers taking a month off, called Postpartum Care Centers, or "Centers for Sitting a Month Out".

These Postpartum Care Centers have nutritionists that design meal plans and professional caretakers that look after newborns so that mothers can relax and get sufficient sleep. Higher-end centers will hire employees with a strong professional background and nursing experience, ensuring that mothers and their babies get the best possible care.



After giving birth, it is a tradition for Chinese women to rest for a month in order to recover from childbirth and eat nutritious food like chicken soup with sesame oil. Nowadays, there are postpartum care centers that provide child care and let mothers take a well-earned rest.



## Self-Assessment Checklist

我了解台灣社會族群和語言文化的多元化。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能討論自己國家移民的問題。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能談談自己國家對不同文化的認同情形。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

我能介紹自己國家人口和生產力的轉變。

20%    40%    60%    80%    100%

LESSON

# 12

第十二課

## 期待美好的未來

Looking Forward to a Beautiful Future

---

### 學習目標

主題：政治

- 能說明自己國家的問題及政治與個人的關係。
- 能對政治提出自己的看法。
- 能談論選舉與政治相關的問題。
- 能表達自己的意見並說服他人。



LESSON  
12

# 期待美好的未來

## Looking Forward to a Beautiful Future

### 對話 Dialogue

12-01



（選舉前，王安康、李文麗、張定能三人在聊天）

王安康：選舉快到了，這次你們要選誰啊？

李文麗：選誰都一樣，去投票也沒有用啦！我們能改變什麼？

張定能：誰當選我都無所謂。我們不要談政治，太敏感了，聊聊別的事吧！

王安康：好吧！我們就聊飲食吧！最近有食品安全的問題，麵包、飲料有化學添加物，青菜、水果有農藥殘留。

李文麗：真的啊？我們吃東西可要小心了！政府應該好好管理！

- 王安康：小張，我聽說你想買房子，你買了嗎？
- 張定能：我哪裡買得起？政府的土地和房地產政策都有問題，誰知道房價會上漲那麼多啊？政府應該修改法規，建立合理的制度。
- 王安康：嗯！在我們的生活裡，小至一個麵包，大至一棟房子都跟政治有關。
- 李文麗：是啊，物價、交通、教育、就業、老人安養、核能災害、空氣汙染、河川汙染等問題都脫離不了政治。
- 張定能：你們認為什麼背景或什麼領域的人適合從政？有的國家竟然連電影明星都可以當總統。
- 王安康：我覺得候選人是什麼背景或什麼領域沒有關係，得看那個人的能力，還得看他是否真的關心人民。
- 李文麗：目前社會出了很多問題，失業率高，有工作的收入不多、保障少，選一個有能力的人，才能解決大家的問題。
- 王安康：照理說一個國家要繁榮，經濟利益與政治權力不能由少數特權把持。
- 李文麗：你的意思是……
- 王安康：要有更多人參加社會組織和政治活動，讓人民監督政府，要是民意代表或總統不尊重民意，人民可以罷免他。
- 李文麗：嗯！要做到人民有權、政府廉能，國家才會富足安定。
- 王安康：選舉的確重要，大家都在乎自己的生命、財產、孩子的教育……。
- 張定能：可是選舉一次就要花很多競選經費，候選人的錢從哪裡來呢？

- 王安康**：候選人不必花什麼錢，透過支持他的義工，也可以打一場跟以前不同的選戰。
- 李文麗**：我想人民都想找到一個有理想，能實現承諾的政治人物來帶領大家。
- 王安康**：是啊！我們期待美好的未來，要選一個好的政治領導人，給人民正面的力量，讓受苦的人擺脫困境，相信這個國家會一天比一天好。

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

(选举前，王安康、李文丽、张定能三人在聊天)

- 王安康**：选举快到了，这次你们要选谁啊？
- 李文丽**：选谁都一样，去投票也没有用啦！我们能改变什么？
- 张定能**：谁当选我都无所谓。我们不要谈政治，太敏感了，聊聊别的事吧！
- 王安康**：好吧！我们就聊饮食吧！最近有食品安全的问题，面包、饮料有化学添加物，青菜、水果有农药残留。
- 李文丽**：真的啊？我们吃东西可要小心了！政府应该好好管理！
- 王安康**：小张，我听说你想买房子，你买了没？
- 张定能**：我哪里买得起？政府的土地和房地产政策都有问题，谁知道房价会上涨那么多啊？政府应该修改法规，建立合理的制度。
- 王安康**：嗯！在我们的生活里，小自一个面包，大至一栋房子都跟政治有关。
- 李文丽**：是啊，物价、交通、教育、就业、老人安养、核能灾害、空气污染、河川污染等问题都脱离不了政治。
- 张定能**：你们认为什么背景或什么领域的人适合从政？有的国家竟然连电影明星都可以当总统。
- 王安康**：我觉得候选人是什么背景或什么领域没有关系，得看那个人的能力，还得看他是否真的关心人民。
- 李文丽**：目前社会出了很多问题，失业率高，有工作的收入不多、保障少，选一个有能力的人，才能解决大家的问题。

- 王安康：照理说一个国家要繁荣，经济利益与政治权力不能由少数特权把持。
- 李文丽：你的意思是……
- 王安康：要有更多人参加社会组织和政治活动，让人民监督政府，要是民意代表或总统不尊重民意，人民可以罢免他。
- 李文丽：嗯！要做到人民有权、政府廉能，国家才会富足安定。
- 王安康：选举的确重要，大家都在乎自己的生命、财产、孩子的教育……。
- 张定能：可是选举一次就要花很多竞选经费，候选人的钱从哪里来呢？
- 王安康：候选人不必花什么钱，透过支持他的义工，也可以打一场跟以前不同的选战。
- 李文丽：我想人民都想找到一个有理想，能实现承诺的政治人物来带领大家。
- 王安康：是啊！我们期待美好的未来，要选一个好的政治领导人，给人民正面的力量，让受苦的人摆脱困境，相信这个国家会一天比一天好。

## 生詞一 Vocabulary I



12-02

## People in the Dialogue

1	王安康	Wáng Ānkāng	ㄨㄤˊ ㄤㄎㄤ	Wang Ankang, male
2	張定能	Zhāng Dìngnéng	ㄓㄨㄥ ㄉㄧㄥˋ ㄋㄥˊ	Zhang Dingneng, male

## Vocabulary

3	美好	měihǎo	ㄇㄟˋ ㄏㄠˇ	(Vs)	wonderful, beautiful
4	當選	dāngxuǎn	ㄉㄨㄥ ㄒㄨㄢˇ	(Vpt)	to be elected to an office
5	無所謂	wúsuǒwèi	ㄨˊ ㄙㄨㄛˇ ㄨㄟˋ	(Vs)	I don't care; does not bother me
6	敏感	mǐngǎn	ㄇㄧㄥˇ ㄍǎn	(Vs)	sensitive
7	化學	huàxué	ㄏㄨㄚˋ ㄒㄨㄟˊ	(N)	chemical, chemistry
8	添加物	tiānjiāwù	ㄊㄧㄢ ㄐㄧㄞ ㄨˋ	(N)	additives
9	殘留	cánliú	ㄘㄢˊ ㄌㄧㄡˊ	(N)	residue
10	修改	xiūgǎi	ㄒㄧㄡ ㄍǎㄟ	(V)	to amend



11	法規	fǎguī	ㄉㄩˇ ㄍㄨㄟ	(N)	laws and regulations, statutes
12	安養	ānyǎng	ㄞ ㄢˇ	(N)	to care for, to provide nursing care to all people
13	河川	héchuān	ㄏㄜˊ ㄔㄨㄢ	(N)	river and stream
14	脫離	tuōlí	ㄊㄨㄛ ㄌㄧˊ	(Vpt)	to be separate oneself from, break away from
15	背景	bèijǐng	ㄅㄟˋ ㄐㄩㄥˇ	(N)	background
16	領域	lǐngyù	ㄌㄩㄥˇ ㄩˋ	(N)	area (of study, etc.), (here) walk of life
17	竟然	jìngrán	ㄐㄩˋ ㄣˊ	(Adv)	unexpectedly, surprisingly
18	總統	zǒngtǒng	ㄗㄨㄥˇ ㄊㄨㄥˇ	(N)	president
19	保障	bǎozhàng	ㄅㄞˋ ㄓㄨㄤˋ	(N/V)	security (e.g., job security), to guarantee
20	特權	tèquán	ㄊㄜˋ ㄑㄨㄢˊ	(N)	special privileges
21	把持	bǎchí	ㄅㄞˇ ㄔㄧˊ	(V)	to control
22	監督	jiāndū	ㄐㄩㄢ ㄉㄨ	(V)	to oversee, monitor, supervise
23	罷免	bàmiǎn	ㄅㄞˋ ㄇㄧㄢˇ	(V)	to recall, remove from office
24	權	quán	ㄑㄨㄢˊ	(N)	power, authority
25	廉能	liánnéng	ㄌㄩㄢˊ ㄣㄥˊ	(Vs)	clean and capable
26	富足	fùzú	ㄉㄨˋ ㄗㄨˊ	(Vs)	affluent, abundant
27	在乎	zàihū	ㄗㄞˋ ㄏㄨ	(Vst)	to care about
28	生命	shēngmìng	ㄕㄨㄥ ㄇㄩㄥˋ	(N)	life
29	財產	cáichǎn	ㄘㄞˊ ㄔㄢˇ	(N)	property, assets
30	義工	yìgōng	ㄩˋ ㄍㄨㄥ	(N)	volunteer
31	選戰	xuǎnzhàn	ㄒㄩㄢˇ ㄓㄢˋ	(N)	(election) campaign
32	承諾	chéngnuò	ㄔㄨㄥˊ ㄋㄨㄛˋ	(N/V)	promise; to promise
33	帶領	dàilǐng	ㄉㄞˋ ㄌㄩㄥˇ	(V)	to lead
34	力量	lìliàng	ㄌㄩˋ ㄌㄩㄥˋ	(N)	power
35	擺脫	bǎituō	ㄅㄞˇ ㄊㄨㄛ	(V)	to rid of

36 困境 kùnjìng ㄍㄨㄣˋ ㄐㄧㄥˋ (N) dire situation, straits

### Phrases

37	房地產	fángdìchǎn	ㄈㄨㄥˊ ㄉㄧˋ ㄔㄢˇ	real estate
38	小自… 大至…	xiǎo zì… dà zhì…	ㄒㄩㄤˇ ㄗㄧˋ… ㄉㄚˋ ㄓˋ…	from such trivialities to such major concerns (自, from (formal); 至, to (formal))
39	是否	shìfǒu	ㄕㄨˋ ㄈㄡˇ	whether or not
40	照理說	zhào lǐ shuō	ㄓㄠˋ ㄌㄧˇ ㄕㄨㄛ	normally
41	政治人物	zhèngzhì rénwù	ㄓㄥˋ ㄓˋ ㄖㄣˊ ㄨˋ	politicians
42	受苦	shòu kǔ	ㄕㄨˋ ㄎㄨˇ	suffering

### 短文 Reading



12-03

## 政治決定我們的未來

有一個曾經富裕過的國家，由於政府貪汙腐敗、政爭不斷，讓這個國家發展停滯，失業率上升，社會大眾對政府失去信心。街上出現許多無家可歸的遊民，他們以街為家，靠垃圾堆中的食物生活，過著外界難以想像的悲慘日子。這個國家之所以會有如此巨大的改變，不完全是因為腐敗的政治，也因為人民對政治漠不關心。貪汙、腐敗、無能當然可怕，其實最可怕的是人民對政治冷漠。



為什麼在越不平等的國家，人民對政治越冷漠？許多學者已經告訴我們，在越不平等的社會中，收入高的階層和政治權力高的人，自然擁有比較多的發言權，進一步影響國家的政策。這些有權有錢的人為了自己的利益，往往會利用這樣的影響力，阻止更多公平的政策與制度。

對有些人來說，「政治」離他們很遙遠，他們認為無論誰當選都沒有辦法改變社會的問題，照顧自己和家人的生活比選一個好的候選人更重要。他們明明知道社會裡有很多問題，但是也不想關心，就讓政治繼續骯髒下去，讓只顧自身利益的政客當選。人民縱容官商勾結，使得物價上漲、貧富懸殊。大家擔心找不到工作、擔心買不起房子、擔心孩子的教育問題、擔心拿不到老人年金、擔心核能電廠帶來災害、擔心自己的家鄉因工廠密集而遭受汙染。各種問題都無法解決，難道政府辦個活動、放個煙火，人民就忘了這些問題嗎？

政治其實就是所有跟我們息息相關的事情，關心政治就是關心自己的未來，決定下一代過怎麼樣的生活。如果不希望我們的國家發展停滯，人民生活困苦，我們怎麼能不關心政治呢？

### 課文簡體字版 Text in Simplified Characters

#### 政治决定我们的未来

有一个曾经富裕过的国家，由于政府贪污腐败、政争不断，让这个国家发展停滞，失业率上升，社会大众对政府失去信心。街上出现许多无家可归的游民，他们以街为家，靠垃圾堆中的食物生活，过着外界难以想象的悲惨日子。这个国家之所以会有如此巨大的改变，不完全是因为腐败的政治，也因为人民对政治漠不关心。贪污、腐败、无能当然可怕，其实最可怕的是人民对政治冷漠。

为什么在越不平等的国家，人民对政治越冷漠？许多学者已经告诉我们，在越不平等的社会中，收入高的阶层和政治权力高的人，自然拥有比较多的发言权，进一步影响国家的政策。这些有权有钱的人为了自己的利益，往往会利用这样的影响力，阻止更多公平的政策与制度。

对有些人来说，「政治」离他们很遥远，他们认为无论谁当选都没有办法改变社会的问题，照顾自己和家人的生活比选一个好的候选人更重要。他们明明知道社会里有很多问题，但是也不想关心，就让政治继续肮脏下去，让只顾自身利益的政客当选。人民纵容官商勾结，使得物价上涨、贫富悬殊。大家担心找不到工作、担心买不起房子、担心孩子的教育问题、

担心拿不到老人年金、担心核能电厂带来灾害、担心自己的家乡因工厂密集而遭受污染。各种问题都无法解决，难道政府办个活动、放个烟火，人民就忘了这些问题吗？

政治其实就是所有跟我们息息相关的事情，关心政治就是关心自己的未来，决定下一代过怎么样的生活。如果不希望我们的国家发展停滞，人民生活困苦，我们怎么能不关心政治呢？

## 生詞二 Vocabulary II



## Vocabulary

1	富裕	fùyù	富 裕	(Vs)	rich, affluent
2	貪汙	tānwū	貪 汙	(Vp)	to graft, to demand
3	腐敗	fǔbài	腐 敗	(Vs)	corruption
4	政爭	zhèngzhēng	政 爭	(N)	political infighting
5	停滯	tíngzhì	停 滯	(Vp)	to stagnate, stall
6	上升	shàngshēng	上 升	(Vp)	to rise
7	信心	xìnxīn	信 心	(N)	confidence
8	遊民	yóumín	遊 民	(N)	street people, the homeless
9	外界	wàijiè	外 界	(N)	the outside world
10	悲慘	bēicǎn	悲 慘	(Vs)	miserable, tragic
11	日子	rìzi	日 子	(N)	days, life
12	如此	rúcǐ	如 此	(Adv)	such, so
13	巨大	jùdà	巨 大	(Vs)	enormous
14	無能	wúnéng	無 能	(Vs)	incompetent
15	冷漠	lěngmò	冷 漠	(Vs)	apathetic
16	學者	xuézhě	學 者	(N)	scholars
17	階層	jiēcéng	階 層	(N)	class hierarchy (in society)
18	自然	zìrán	自 然	(Adv)	naturally

19	阻止	zǔzhǐ	止 手	(V)	to prevent, block
20	遙遠	yáoyuǎn	遠 辵	(Vs)	remote
21	無論	wúlùn	無 辵	(Conj)	no matter, regardless
22	明明	míngmíng	明 日	(Adv)	clearly, obviously
23	骯髒	āngzāng	髒 土	(Vs)	dirty
24	顧	gù	顧 頁	(V)	to care about
25	自身	zìshēn	自 身	(N)	one's own
26	政客	zhèngkè	政 士	(N)	politico
27	縱容	zòngróng	縱 容	(V)	to condone, tolerate
28	使得	shǐde	使 得	(Vst)	to make, to cause
29	工廠	gōngchǎng	工 廠	(N)	factory
30	密集	mìjí	密 集	(Vs)	crowded with high density of
31	遭受	zāoshòu	遭 受	(Vst)	to suffer from, be subjected to
32	困苦	kùnkǔ	困 苦	(Vs)	distressed

## Names

33	老人年金	lǎorén niánjīn	老 人 年 金		annuity payment for senior citizens (provided by The National Pension Program in Taiwan)
----	------	----------------	---------	--	--

## Phrases

34	無家可歸	wújiā kěguī	無 家 可 歸		homeless, no home to go back to
35	以...為...	yǐ...wéi...	以...為...		taking... as... (formal)
36	漠不關心	mòbù guānxīn	漠 不 關 心		indifferent
37	發言權	fāyán quán	發 言 權		right to speak, (here) a voice (in politics, etc.)
38	影響力	yǐngxiǎng lì	影 響 力		influence
39	官商勾結	guānshāng gōujié	官 商 勾 結		collusion between politicians and business people

- |    |      |                |                  |  |
|----|------|----------------|------------------|--|
| 40 | 貧富懸殊 | pínfù xuánshū  | ㄆㄧㄣˊ ㄈㄨˋ ㄒㄨㄢˊ ㄕㄨ | a huge gap between the rich and the poor |
| 41 | 息息相關 | xíxí xiāngguān | ㄒㄧˊ ㄒㄧˊ ㄒㄩㄤ ㄍㄨㄢ  | inextricably related to                  |

## 文法 Grammar

### I. 無所謂 *does not matter* 12-05

 英譯 p.294

**Function:** 無所謂, of classical Chinese, is now lexicalized into a state verb, meaning “does not matter”, “of no consequence” or “I do not much care”, as far as the speaker or the subject is concerned.

- ① 候選人是什麼背景我無所謂，只要他有能力而且真的關心人民就好了。
- ② 麵包好不好吃無所謂，沒有化學添加物我才吃。
- ③ 總統的外表好不好看無所謂，能實現承諾最重要。
- ④ 這件事他要怎麼做我無所謂，只要他盡到自己的責任就好了。
- ⑤ 玉珍認為畢業以後能找到自己喜歡的工作就好了，薪資多少無所謂。

**Usage:** As the sentence of this structure means it does not matter one way or another, the portion before or after (less often) contains a question, e.g., 什麼 (1), 好不好 (2, 3), 怎麼 (4) and 多少 (5).

### 練習 Exercise

Please respond to the following dialogues, by saying that it does not matter which.

- ① A: 這幾個都差不多，你要選哪一個？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ② A: 我們公司的薪水不高，你還願意來嗎？  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ A: 我們要去國家音樂廳，你穿的這件衣服一點也不正式。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

4 A：你喜歡看愛情片還是恐怖片？

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

5 A：這種款式的手機有兩種顏色，你要什麼顏色的？

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

## II. 誰知道 *who would have thought that...?* 12-06



**Function:** This pattern expresses the speaker's surprise at something has happened.

- 1 早上天氣那麼好，誰知道下午雨會下得那麼大，連鞋子都濕了。
- 2 玉珍親手做了巧克力，想送給清源，誰知道清源桌上已經有一大堆巧克力了。
- 3 會計系的系花那麼漂亮，誰知道她居然沒有談過戀愛。
- 4 清源對女朋友那麼好，誰知道她居然劈腿了。
- 5 他以為永遠都回不去了，誰知道過了四十年後能再回到老家。

**Usage:** That which follows 誰知道 can be either affirmative or negative, and either undesirable or desirable (less often).

1. 他做的麵包看起來並不特別，誰知道得了世界麵包大賽冠軍。
2. 她說話的聲音不好聽，誰知道她唱歌唱得那麼好聽。
3. 他看起來很瘦，誰知道他吃那麼多。

### 練習 Exercise

Please respond to A below by mentioning surprise events using 誰知道.

1 A：天氣那麼冷，你怎麼沒穿外套？

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

2 A：他的臉色怎麼白白的？

B：\_\_\_\_\_。

- 3 A: 這個東西不是剛買的嗎? 怎麼要拿去退換?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 A: 你怎麼這麼快就把錢用完了?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 A: 誰叫你選這個人, 你看, 她當選以後什麼事都做不好!  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

### III. 小自…大至… *everything from A to Z* 12-07



**Function:** This pattern literally means “everything from A to Z”. It presents everything, everybody etc. by listing 2 members of the category from bottom to top.

- 1 小自朋友的事, 大至國家的事, 王先生都關心。
- 2 聽說地震快來的時候, 小自老鼠, 大至馬, 都可能預先知道。
- 3 小自三歲的孩子, 大至八十三歲的老人, 都可以用這個產品。
- 4 物價的確上漲了不少, 小自日用品, 大至房子, 價錢都比以前貴了。
- 5 這個國家小自家庭結構, 大至社會結構, 都改變了。

#### 練習 Exercise

Please use 小自…大至… when completing the following dialogues.

- 1 A: 聽說他天天都在做發財夢。  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 A: 那家餐廳為什麼那麼貴?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 A: 你說養孩子的費用遠遠超過養狗, 到底養一個孩子需要花哪些錢?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。



4 A：這家醫院好乾淨啊！

B：是啊！\_\_\_\_\_。

5 A：你家裡的事都自己做嗎？

B：是啊！\_\_\_\_\_。

#### IV. 竟然 *to the speaker's great surprise* 12-08

 英譯 p.294

**Function:** The  $S_2$  adverb 竟然 expresses the speaker's amazement at some fact.

- 1 政治包括所有跟我們息息相關的事情，你竟然不關心。
- 2 食品安全影響人民的健康，可是政府竟然不好好管理。
- 3 政客為了自己的利益，竟然阻止公平的政策與制度。
- 4 他看到女朋友跟其他男生有說有笑，牽著手散步，竟然不吃醋。
- 5 他擁有那麼大的企業，但是他的學歷竟然只是小學畢業。

#### Usage:

1. 居然 is more colloquial, while 竟然 is more formal. In most cases the two can be used interchangeably.
2. 竟然 can be reduced to just 竟, but 居然 cannot be reduced, e.g.,  
沒想到現在每八個嬰兒中，竟有一個雙親之一不是本國國籍。  
\*沒想到現在每八個嬰兒中，居有一個雙親之一不是本國國籍。
3. 竟然 is a member of regular adverbs, always placed after the subject and before verb phrases, while 居然 is a member of non-typical, i.e., movable adverbs, placed either before or after the subject. The latter adverbs also include 難道, 畢竟, 到底, 難得, and 大概 etc.  
(1) 我說的都是真的，他居然不相信。/ 我說的都是真的，居然他不相信。  
(2) 我說的都是真的，他竟然不相信。/ \*我說的都是真的，竟然他不相信。

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following sentences by using 竟然.

- 1 他什麼都有，可是\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 錢太太總是一個人出國旅行，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 他媽媽做的菜那麼好吃，\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 他已經得到博士學位了，可是\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 她看起來很年輕，\_\_\_\_\_。

**V. 照理說 normally**  12-09
 英譯 p.294

**Function:** This phrase, spoken softly, indicates that an event, as a rule, should be true under normal circumstances. There is no place for its falsehood.

- 1 表弟每天花那麼多時間念書，照理說他的成績應該很好。
- 2 孩子已經大學畢業了，照理說應該可以自食其力了。
- 3 支持她的人很多，照理說她應該會當選。
- 4 網路商店沒有店面，又不要請店員，照理說價錢會比較便宜。
- 5 雲端科技讓我們的生活更加便利，照理說可以幫我們節省很多時間。

**練習 Exercise**

Please complete the following 照理說 sentences.

- 1 她已經是媽媽了，照理說\_\_\_\_\_。
- 2 孩子都獨立了，照理說\_\_\_\_\_。
- 3 他們是交往了很久才結婚的，照理說\_\_\_\_\_。
- 4 清源長得高大、帥氣，照理說\_\_\_\_\_。
- 5 出國當交換學生，照理說\_\_\_\_\_。

## VI. 以 A 為 B *to take A as B* 12-10

 英譯 p.295

**Function:** With this pattern, the subject regards a noun in a specified way.

- ① 他昨天的演講是以日本大地震為例子。
- ② 政治人物應該以幫助受苦的人擺脫困境為責任。
- ③ 老闆以英文能力好為加薪的條件。
- ④ 他以考上醫學系為目標，天天熬夜念書。
- ⑤ 外婆以牛肉和蘿蔔為材料，做了一個湯。

**Usage:** A and B can be a noun or a subjectless sentence. And 以 A 為 B can be rephrased as 把 A 當做 B, 拿 A 當做 B, or 把 A 做為 B, e.g.,

1. 他以打太極拳為休閒活動。  
他把打太極拳當做休閒活動。
2. 這家商店賣的東西以運動衣為主要的商品。  
這家商店拿運動衣當做主要的商品。
3. 王先生以唱歌為興趣。  
王先生把唱歌做為興趣。

### 練習 Exercise

Please rephrase the following sentences using the 以...為... pattern.

- ① 李教授打算當選後專心從政，不再教書了。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_，不再教書了。
- ② 保護自然環境應該是每個人的責任。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。
- ③ 那部電影是在非洲拍的。  
→ \_\_\_\_\_。

④ 這次演唱會的表演場地是棒球場。

→ \_\_\_\_\_。

⑤ 為了提高人民素質，今年政府的目標是增加文化預算。

→ 為了提高人民素質，\_\_\_\_\_。

## VII. 無論…都… *regardless of what...* 12-11



**Function:** This pattern refers to all-inclusive options, such as no matter what, no matter who, no matter whether, no matter where..., etc.

- ① 最近有食品安全的問題，無論吃什麼都要小心。
- ② 工作了一天，無論是否疲倦都需要休息。
- ③ 無論學歷高還是學歷低，有實力、有資金的人都可以創業。
- ④ 風水師說：「無論是買房子還是租房子，都要注意風水。」
- ⑤ 在台灣無論什麼地方都可以買到鳳梨酥。

### Usage:

1. 無論 can be followed by a question word (QW), A-not-A, conjunction of antonymic words, or the addition of 多, as illustrated above. Regardless of structures, a sentence of this type has the meaning 'In spite of various circumstances, the following fact remains unaffected'.

(1) 無論 followed by a QW (who, what, when, where).

- a. 無論什麼時候，他都很忙碌。
- b. 無論哪裡都有便利商店。

(2) 無論 followed by A-not-A.

- a. 無論能不能當選，李先生都要出來競選。
- b. 無論學歷高不高，都應該自食其力。

- (3) 無論 followed by an opposite pair.
- 無論早晚，你總是得自食其力。
  - 無論成績好壞，都可以升學。
- (4) 無論 followed by the adverb 多.
- 無論他家多富裕，他都不浪費。
  - 無論生活多困苦，吳先生還是很快樂。
2. 無論 and 不管 are synonymous. 不管 is more colloquial, while 無論 is more formal, and as a result 不管 is not often followed by formal or literary constructs such as 如何 or 是否 (for more on 不管 see Book 3 Lesson 1).
- 無論別人如何批評他，他都無所謂。
  - 無論學生是否願意，都得參加考試。
  - 無論如何，你都不能放棄。

### 練習 Exercise

Please use 無論...都... when completing the following dialogues.

- A: 這件事對政治還是對經濟有影響?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- A: 失業的人有困難的時候，政府會幫助他們嗎?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- A: 在哪裡可以買到這種產品?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- A: 什麼背景的人可以從政?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。
- A: 什麼人可以應徵那個工作?  
B: \_\_\_\_\_。

- ⑥ A: 阿建每天都要上網跟朋友聊天嗎?  
B: 為了紓解壓力, \_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑦ A: 參加選舉非常辛苦, 李先生還要出來競選嗎?  
B: 為了改善人民的生活, \_\_\_\_\_。

VIII. 明明 *It should be obvious to everyone that...*  12-12



**Function:** The adverb 明明 indicates the speaker's annoyance at someone else's contradiction, whether explicit or implicit, of what seems to the speaker to be the plain truth.

- ① 玉珍明明暗戀清源, 可是不敢向他告白。
- ② 明明你們都知道他只在乎自己的利益, 為什麼要選他?
- ③ 小玲明明膽子很小, 卻愛看恐怖片。
- ④ 昨天的事, 明明是你的錯, 為什麼說是我的錯?
- ⑤ 這個房間裡都是垃圾, 明明很髒, 他還說很乾淨。

**Usage:** By using the adverb 明明, the speaker confronts and challenges the addressee. This is rather impolite and should not be used lightly. 明明 is typically used in 2-clause utterances, with 明明 occurring with what the speaker believes to be the truth. More examples are given below.

- (1) 你為什麼說這個蛋糕不好吃? 明明很好吃啊!
- (2) 誰說單身不好? 美真明明過得很好。
- (3) 她哪裡買不起房子? 她明明是有錢人。
- (4) 你明明想買那種新手機, 為什麼你說不想買?
- (5) 你明明去過日本, 可是你為什麼說沒去過?
- (6) 小玲明明生病了, 卻不去看醫生。

### 練習 Exercise

Please rephrase the following sentences using 明明.

① 餐廳裡還有位子，服務生卻說沒有位子了。

→ \_\_\_\_\_。

② 桌上那杯茶是我的，他怎麼說是他的？

→ \_\_\_\_\_？

③ 你看錯了，那個人是男的，不是女的。

→ \_\_\_\_\_。

④ 奇怪，你喜歡她，為什麼不跟她說？

→ \_\_\_\_\_？

⑤ 你知道小孩子不可以喝酒，為什麼你讓孩子喝？

→ \_\_\_\_\_？

## IX. Causation with 使得 12-13

 英譯 p.295

**Function:** The state verb 使得 is a causative verb. What precedes it is the causer, which can be expressed by means of an NP or a clause. What comes after the causative is the result, which is always indicated by a sentence.

- ① 因為老闆決定裁員，使得他不得不另謀發展。
- ② 該國雖然已不施行一胎化政策，但並未使得少子化的問題得到解決。
- ③ 她的婆婆還有傳宗接代的觀念，使得她的壓力更大了。
- ④ 接受了課業輔導以後，使得那個學童的成績進步了不少。
- ⑤ 今年因為奇怪的氣候，使得農民收成減少。

### Usage:

1. 使得 and 使 (L8) are both causative verbs. They are often used interchangeably, e.g.

(1) 聽說陳經理病得很嚴重，使 / 使得 我們非常擔心。

- (2) 有話直說的人，有時真使 / 使得大家討厭。  
 (3) 因為沒念幼稚園的關係，使 / 使得我一直害怕程度比別的小孩差。

2. For 'virtual' events, events that have not already happened, 使 is often used.

- (1) 人民希望政府能施行新政策，使物價穩定。  
 (2) 如果想使頭髮看起來多一點的話，可以使用這種產品。  
 (3) 如果去醫院動手術也不能使人恢復健康，那麼誰還願意去呢？

3. 使得 is often used with 'actual' events, events that have happened already.

- (1) 這次颱風，由於民眾事前毫無準備，使得災情慘重。  
 (2) 因為同學積極參與，使得這門課更加熱鬧、活潑。  
 (3) 低所得、高物價的情況使得年輕人成了無殼蝸牛。

4. There are other causative verbs in modern Chinese, e.g. 讓 and 叫, which are highly colloquial. 使 is more formal, though not as formal as 使得.

- (1) 漢堡吃多了對健康不好，而且容易讓你變胖。(B2, L 12)  
 (2) 這個消息叫我很難過。

### 練習 Exercise

Please complete the causation by using 使 or 使得.

- ① 大明一直交不到女朋友\_\_\_\_\_。
- ② 到底發生了什麼事\_\_\_\_\_？
- ③ 王先生的口才好，能力強，\_\_\_\_\_。
- ④ 鹿港保留了許多古蹟，\_\_\_\_\_。
- ⑤ 由於她工作認真，\_\_\_\_\_。



語法例句英譯

Grammar Examples in English

I. 無所謂 *does not matter*

Function:

- ① I don't care what background each candidate has. As long as they are capable and genuinely care about people's well-being that is good enough.
- ② It doesn't matter if the bread is good or not. As long as there are no chemical additives, I'll eat it.
- ③ It doesn't matter whether or not the president looks good. It matters that he can make good on his promises.
- ④ It doesn't matter how he gets it done, as long as he fulfills his responsibility to the best of his abilities.
- ⑤ Yuzhen thinks that being able to find a fulfilling job after graduation is good enough, regardless of pay.

II. 誰知道 *who would have thought that...?*

Function:

- ① The weather this morning was great. Who would have thought that it would rained so hard in the afternoon, soaking right through our shoes.
- ② Yuzhen wanted to give to Qingyuan some of her homemade chocolate. Who would have thought that he already had lots of chocolate on the table.
- ③ The beauty queen of the accounting department is so pretty, and to think she's never had a boyfriend.
- ④ Qingyuan treated his girlfriend so well. Who would have thought that she cheated on him?
- ⑤ He thought he'd never be able to return. Who would have thought that after forty years, he was able to go back home.

III. 小自...大至... *everything from A to Z*

Function:

- ① Mr. Wang follows everything, from the trivial goings-on of his friends to national issues.
- ② I've heard that before an earthquake, animals as small as mice and big as horses can all tell beforehand.
- ③ This product can be used by people as young as 3 years old and as old as 83.
- ④ Commodity prices really have gone up considerably, from daily necessities to the entire housing market. Everything is more expensive than it used to be.
- ⑤ The whole country has changed, everything from family structure, all the way up to the entire social fabric.

IV. 竟然 *to the speaker's great surprise*

Function:

- ① Politics is interwoven into every aspect of life, and here you are not paying any mind.
- ② Food safety affects people's health, yet somehow the government isn't doing a good job of controlling it.
- ③ It's unbelievable. Politicians will impede fair policy and governance for the sake of personal benefit.
- ④ He watched as his girlfriend was with other guys laughing, talking, and even holding hands, all without getting jealous!
- ⑤ He is in charge of such a large enterprise, yet he is only an elementary school graduate.

V. 照理說 *normally*

Function:

- ① My cousin spends so much time studying every day. Logically speaking his grades must be excellent.

- 2 Our child has already graduated from university, and normally he should be able to fend for himself.
- 3 She has lots of supporters, and there's a good chance she'll be voted in.
- 4 Online stores don't have a bricks-and-mortar location, and there is no need to hire staff, so the prices should also be lower.
- 5 Cloud technology has made life easier, and normally it's something that should save us lots of time.

## VI. 以 A 為 B *to take A as B*

### Function:

- 1 Yesterday he used the earthquake in Japan as the topic of his talk.
- 2 Politicians should consider improving the lives of the disadvantaged as their responsibility.
- 3 The boss takes strong English proficiency as a condition for giving a raise.
- 4 The goal of becoming a medical student keeps him up late every night studying.
- 5 My grandma made a soup with beef and turnip as ingredients.

## VII. 無論…都… *regardless of what...*

### Function:

- 1 There have been food safety issues lately. No matter what you eat, make sure you take precautions.
- 2 After working for a whole day, you need to take a rest. It doesn't matter if you are tired or not.
- 3 No matter what your educational background is, if you are capable and have the capital, you can start your own business.
- 4 The fengshui master said, "It doesn't matter if you buy or rent. Make sure the house has good fengshui."
- 5 You can buy pineapple cakes no matter where you are in Taiwan.

## VIII. 明明 *It should be obvious to everyone that...*

### Function:

- 1 It's so obvious that Yuzhen has a thing for Qingyuan, but she's just afraid to tell him.
- 2 You knew all along that he cares only for his own benefit, so why did you vote for him?
- 3 Xiaoling is an obviously a little scaredy cat, but she loves horror flicks.
- 4 About yesterday, it was obviously your fault, so why are you blaming me?
- 5 His room is full of garbage. It's clearly a mess, but he insists it's clean.

## IX. Causation with 使得

### Function:

- 1 The boss's decision to cut staff has forced him to explore other career avenues.
- 2 The country may have ended the one-child policy, but that hasn't solved the problem of a declining birth rate.
- 3 Her mother-in-law's traditional view of lineage is only added pressure.
- 4 After receiving extra tutoring the child's grades improved a lot.
- 5 Unusual weather this year has caused a decrease in harvest.

## 課室活動 Classroom Activities

### I. 政治與我

目標：能談論政治與個人的關係，並提出解決的辦法。

任務：請學生介紹自己國家的問題及政治與個人的關係。學生分組互相訪談關心的問題。先在下表打✓，選出關心的問題，互相提問並回答。（「0」表示沒有這個問題，「1」表示不太關心的問題或問題不太嚴重，「5」表示很關心的問題或問題很嚴重），說明發生問題的原因和改善的辦法，再向全班報告。

關心的問題	0	1	2	3	4	5	發生問題的原因及改善的辦法
空氣汙染							
物價上漲							
失業率高							
官商勾結							
貪汙腐敗							
發展停滯							
貧富懸殊							
其他 ( )							
綜合結論：							

### II. 王教授該不該參選？

目標：能提出自己的看法，表達支持參加選舉的原因，並取得別人的認同。

任務：王教授很關心社會問題，他覺得這個社會生病了，他是一個有理想、有能力、口才好、很熱心、很認真的人，有人鼓勵他出來競選，為社會做事。他說還要考慮考慮，但還沒決定要不要出來競選。你想王教授參選需要考慮什麼問題？如果你是他的朋友，你會鼓勵他出

來競選嗎？學生三人一組，假設他們在一個聚會中，討論王教授該不該出來競選，一個學生扮演王教授，兩個學生扮演王教授的朋友，一個同意他參選，一個反對。

### III. 選舉滿意度調查

目標：能透過校外訪問調查，提出訪查報告。

任務：請學生訪問三位朋友，請他們填好基本資料並進一步問問他們跟選舉相關的問題：

- A. 你對最近一次選舉的看法？還有你對這次選舉的結果滿意嗎？
- B. 這次有幾位候選人？這些候選人的學歷和能力有什麼不同？你投票給哪位候選人？那位候選人的背景如何？你投票給那位候選人的原因？支持那位候選人的人民多不多？那位候選人當選了嗎？

整理出訪談內容以後向全班報告。

受訪人	受訪者資料			受訪者意見		
	性別	職業	教育程度	滿意	不滿意	原因
第一位						
第二位						
第三位						
綜合結論：						

## 文化 Bits of Chinese Culture

### For a Better Future: Election Culture in Taiwan

Some people liken the elections in Taiwan to a carnival. There is parading, flag-waving, and loudspeaker campaigning, all in a bid to be the loudest, all to win a popularity contest. Leading up to the elections, candidate teams dispatch cars decked out in advertisements to drive around the streets and alleys, broadcasting pre-recorded propaganda: “My fellow countrymen and women, please, please, give your one and only vote to XXX, candidate number X...”

During elections time candidate teams rack their brains to come up with crowd-pleasing catchphrases that exemplify the stand out qualities, political stance, and overall image of their runner. Some of the slogans use clever wordplay with the candidate’s last name, while others integrate electoral sentiments into a jingle, causing voters to ask themselves: Which one sounds best? Slogans have to be succinct, convincing, and roll off the tongue if they are to leave the candidate’s name deeply imbedded in the minds of voters.

Before the elections candidates have to prepare a large sum of money for printing all sorts of material. All along the roadside you can see their campaign flags, a sea of banners waving in the wind — it’s quite a spectacle. In order to raise money and increase visibility, at the electoral candidate’s headquarters, they set up enormous billboards that stretch up to the heavens, as well as sell many limited edition, candidate-branded goods, such as T-shirts, hats, badges, and cups. These products are a way of promoting the candidate and may be used as gifts for the die-hard supporters.

Candidates line the streets soliciting votes, hand out flyers by the roadside, and even campaign in traditional markets, shaking hands and doing signings for voters. In addition, candidates will go to public parks or make TV appearances to outline their political agenda. Candidates with a little more funding will treat voters to an outdoor open-invitation dinner, serving them as they arrive, or hold large rallies. Doing so bridges the distance between candidate and voter, attracts media



▲ 《聯合報》曾增勳／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》林伯驊／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》曾增勳／攝影

▲ During elections, candidates come up with many ingenious ideas to catch voters' attention.

attention, and ramps up the electoral atmosphere. Candidates put their best selves on display through speech, song, and crowd interaction. Which candidate relates best to the people? Who is the most eloquent? Who's the best singer?

Even though the spirit of the elections is fair competition, candidates take publicity to great lengths with hopes of getting voted in. Some will even smear and maliciously attack other candidates, or get votes via dishonest means, such as 'buying' and 'bribing'. During election season the Ministry of Justice too has to put on a campaign of anti-corruption, with long standing slogans such as 親愛的鄉親！買票是犯法，賣票也有罪 (Dear citizens of Taiwan, buying votes is illegal, and selling them makes you guilty too!) When this eye-catching anti-corruption slogan was strung up outside of a train station, ticket buyers erroneously thought that it was directed at train ticket scalpers — a rather amusing news story from election season (the word for 'ticket' and 'vote' are the same in Chinese, “票”).

Taiwan has democratized to the point that all candidates have to be voted in by the people, everyone from borough chiefs all the way up to the president, so gaining the popular opinion is essential to getting elected. As society advances, candidates have taken to campaigning via social networking websites, cell phone apps, and YouTube videos. As a result, there are fewer cars on the road blasting endorsements for electoral candidates, and also fewer flags being flown. The majority of voters want to see candidates use peaceful and pragmatic debates to gain their support. Voters want to cast their vote based on candidate's expertise, integrity, experience, ability, and enthusiasm for serving society at large.



▲ 《聯合報》廖雅欣攝影



▲ 《聯合報》林佩均／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》林敬家／攝影



▲ 《聯合報》曾增勳／攝影

▲ Candidate-branded goods, such as scarves are used as gifts to raise money and increase visibility.



## Self-Assessment Checklist

我能說明自己國家的問題及政治與個人的關係。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能對政治提出自己的看法。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能談論選舉與政治相關的問題。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

我能表達自己的意見並說服他人。

20% 40% 60% 80% 100%

第一課

Dialogue

(Xiaoling and Ajian, both high school students, meet for the first time in an internet chat room. Ajian strikes up a conversation with Xiaoling.)

Ajian : Xiaoling, this is the first time I've seen you here. Are you a student or an office worker?

Xiaoling : I work in an office. I just got home from work.

Ajian : You just got home? This late? You must be really exhausted!

Xiaoling : It's not late. It's only 8:30. I usually don't get off work until after 9 o'clock, and sometimes I even have to work past 10:00. What's more, I live alone, so rather than coming home to a cold, empty house, it's better to stay at the office. I even have workmates there to eat with.

Ajian : How old are you? Are you single? You don't live with your family?

Xiaoling : 25-years old, single. My family's in Tainan. After graduating from university, I came to Taipei to work. I rent an apartment. How about you?

Ajian : I'm also single. I'm 32-years old.

Xiaoling : Where do you work?

Ajian : I work at a construction company. I'm the business manager. Our department has 20-some people.

Xiaoling : You're only 32-years old and you're already a business manager?! Very impressive! You must be very capable.

Ajian : I'm alright. Where do you work?

Xiaoling : I do design work at an interior design company. I only graduated two years ago. I still don't have enough experience, so I often have a lot of work and frequently have to work overtime.

Ajian : What interests do you have? What do you do when you have free time?

Xiaoling : Read, watch movies, eat good food.

Ajian : What kinds of movies do you like to see?

Xiaoling : I like horror movies most.

Ajian : Horror movies! You dare to watch horror movies!? I thought girls only liked to watch romance movies. Most girls find horror films too scary and get scared to tears.

Xiaoling : Not all girls like romantic films. I don't like them. Romantic movies are really boring! Although horror movies scare me to death sometimes, they also excite me. When I first started watching horror movies, they scare me to death, but after watching more of them, I got hooked. Now I love the rush.

Ajian : Not just you, but there are plenty of guys who are also afraid to watch a horror film.

Xiaoling : Guys who are afraid to watch horror flicks simply aren't guys! They have less guts than me!

Ajian : Okay! Okay already! Don't get all worked up about it. Why don't we go see a horror movie together some time?!

Xiaoling : Okay, but some horror movies have restricted ratings. I can't go to movie theaters to watch them.

Ajian : Why? Aren't you 25-years old?

Xiaoling : Uhhh...

Reading

Empty House, Warm Internet

17-year old Xiaoling is an only child. She is currently studying at a distinguished high school. Her dad works in the news media. He leaves home early in the morning and gets home late in the evening. Her mom's job isn't that busy, but she often has to work overtime. As a result, after school lets out and Xiaoling comes home to a cold, empty house. She always takes care of her own dinner. Despite this, Xiaoling isn't lonely, because she has lots of friends on the internet to keep her company. Every day as soon as Xiaoling turns on her computer and enters a chat room, there are lots of "internet friends"



online chatting about everything, both large and small, that happened that day. Some chat about love issues, some complain that their bosses are really stingy.... When her internet friends see Xiaoling come online, they greet her enthusiastically. Oftentimes when she is in a bad mood, everybody cheers her on and comforts her. In Xiaoling's mind, this chat room is where a lot of siblings that she has never met live. Although she also has good friends at school, she seems to be more able to chat with boldness and confidence on the internet.

In addition, playing online games is another way that Xiaoling likes to relieve stress. When she's exhausted from her studies, she plays a bit. Not only can it turn her mood around, some games having to do with history can even help Xiaoling better understand history.

For Xiaoling, virtual online relationships are much simpler than relationships in real life. In the world of the internet, you can get comfort and support in every area without any psychological burden. Even if you make a mistake, nobody reproaches you. In real life, the expectations of family and competition with classmates leave her gasping for breath. She feels more at ease hiding in the world of the internet.

Xiaoling frequently chats with online friends, but she chats just for fun. She knows that making friends on the internet is sometimes dangerous, so she so she never clicks to enter a porn or violent site. She understands that only by knowing how to protect yourself can you avoid falling into traps on the internet.

## 第二課

### Dialogue

- Li Yunzhen : Hurry up. Are you finished getting dressed? If we're late, the concert hall won't let us in and I'm afraid we won't be able to see the performance.
- Bai Ruyu : All right, all right. I'll be ready in a second. Don't you think we should dress up a bit? What if everybody else is dressed formally? What then?
- Li Yunzhen : As long as we are dressed neatly, it will be fine. The first time I went to see a performance, I thought you had to wear very formal attire. I had no idea regular clothes are just fine.
- Bai Ruyu : This is my first time going. I don't want to be embarrassed.
- Li Yunzhen : A friend told me that once he wore shorts and sandals and was stopped at the door. I agree with you. Dressing neatly when going to see a performance can be considered a type of respect for the performers.
- Bai Ruyu : The culture of every country is different. In my country, appreciating artistic performances is seen as a kind of social activity.
- Li Yunzhen : How do you mean?
- Bai Ruyu : Let's talk as we go, lest we arrive late and have to wait until intermission to get in. Punctuality is also a kind of courtesy.
- (On the way)
- Li Yunzhen : By the way, what did you mean when you said social activity just now?
- Bai Ruyu : Because we don't have night markets and there aren't many KTVs either, there aren't many places to go in the evenings after most people get off work. Attending artistic activities is a good way to connect with friends and people from work.
- Li Yunzhen : Speaking of connecting, the day after tomorrow, Jianguo and I are going to see a movie. Want to come?
- Bai Ruyu : Do you mean Lin Jianguo from the English Department?
- Li Yunzhen : That's him. Do you know each other well?
- Bai Ruyu : Oh, let's not talk about it. Last time several of us went to see a movie together, he blew his nose, kept coughing, and even forgot to shut off his cell phone.
- Li Yunzhen : Yikes! How tacky! If you've got a cold, you should stay home and rest. When you watch a movie, you should shut off your cell phone.
- Bai Ruyu : Here we are. We've arrived. Luckily, there are still 15 minutes before it starts. I'm going to go buy a program first.
- Li Yunzhen : I'm going to go the restroom. See you inside in a bit.

(After entering venue)

Bai Ruyu : Is your cell phone shut off?

Li Yunzhen : Thanks for reminding me. Otherwise, it would be awful if it rang a little bit later.

Bai Ruyu : Shh, the performance is starting.

### Reading

#### Enjoy a Life of Art

Today is the first time that Bai Ruyu will go to the National Theater since arriving in Taiwan. She is very excited. She made a date with Li Yunzhen to go together and see a modern dance performance in the evening. In the US, Bai Ruyu saw one modern dance performance. She thinks that modern dance is hard to understand, but very interesting. In addition, Li Yunzhen particularly stressed that the group performing tonight, Cloud Gate, is known by almost everyone in Taiwan and that she mustn't miss this rare opportunity.

The National Concert Hall is across from the the National Theater. There, you can enjoy all kinds of music. Bai Ruyu studied piano and violin when she was young and is particularly fond of classical music. She plans to ask Li Yunzhen to come with her to listen to music next time. Bai Ruyu's father is a painter. Having been influenced by him, she also loves painting. In addition to music, dance and painting, she is very interested in literature, architecture, and movies. She remembers that when she first arrived in Taiwan, she frequently visited temples. She believes that temples are best able to manifest the beauty of traditional architecture. She also heard her classmate Gaoqiao Jiantai mention that there are a number of historical sites in Tainan. Of those, the ones most worth seeing are Tainan's temples. Seeing is believing. Next time, she must check them out.

Because Bai Ruyu's Chinese has improved quite a bit, she often goes to see Chinese movies in addition to visiting temples. Last week, she saw a Taiwanese film. The story was really unique. She thinks that what the director wanted to convey was the feeling of loneliness that people today feel. The male and female leads are currently the most popular movie stars in Taiwan. Not only are their acting skills good, the leading actor even won this year's award for leading male at the Golden Horse Film Festival.

Sometimes, Bai Ruyu goes shopping and sees lots of street art performances either when she passes by the business plaza near Taipei 101 or near Old Street when she goes to Tamsui on weekends. If we pay close

attention in our lives, we can see art everywhere. There is also a lot of installation art for us to enjoy in MRT stations and parks. If food can fill our bellies and satisfy the desire of our palates, then art is a sumptuous feast for the eyes and ears.

### 第三課

#### Dialogue

(Li Wenli is on the phone with her grandma, trying to change her buying habits.)

Grandma : Hello, Wenli. Are you free this weekend? Let's stroll around some department stores and buy some new clothes.

Li Wenli : Grandma, I've got something to do this weekend. Online shops have a lot of fashionable women's clothing. Why bother going to a department store?

Grandma : Isn't buying things (from) online stores a hassle?

Li Wenli : Online shopping is easy. This is the era of on-line economy. If you can't shop online, you're behind the times.

Grandma : What does 'on-line economy' mean? I've never heard of it.

Li Wenli : Grandma, 'on-line' means to be connected from your home and the 'online economy' refers to those people who buy products by shopping in virtual stores. That is online shopping .

Grandma : Is it more expensive to buy things online at home?

Li Wenli : Internet stores don't have storefronts and don't need to hire shop assistants, so they can save lots of money. Of course, they are cheaper.

Grandma : If they are cheaper, then buying online should be more cost-effective. But I don't have a good figure. What looks good on a model won't necessarily look good on me.

Li Wenli : Grandma, there are all kinds of styles in online stores. They're bound to have something suitable for you.

Grandma : Is it possible that I will buy knock-offs or things with defects? I've heard that there's a big difference between some pictures online and the actual products. How can I trust the pictures and information provided by sellers?

- Li Wenli : If you have any questions about a product, you can go directly online and ask the seller. If you don't trust the online shop, just don't buy their stuff.
- Grandma : As old as I am and I just started using computers. I'm still not used to using them. I usually only go online and browse. I've never gone online to buy things. I'm afraid I'll buy something and regret it.
- Li Wenli : Grandma, if you're not satisfied, you can return it. Online shopping is convenient. You can buy things anytime, either during the day or late at night, without leaving the house.
- Grandma : Is shopping online really all that good? Is it risky to use credit cards to buy things online? Is it possible that it will be hacked by a hacker?
- Li Wenli : There is a risk. But if you only choose secure sites that have been certified, you won't have any problems.
- Grandma : Okay, then I'll go online and see if there's anything I like.
- Li Wenli : Cloud/Internet technology has improved. More and more people are using the internet to buy things. There are a lot of seniors also buying things online. Last time we wandered around a department store, we spent so much time there that you became too tired to even move! Don't you remember?
- Grandma : That's true. When a person gets old, their stamina isn't what it used to be. In the future, I'll just shop online. Oh, something else. Is it possible that you won't receive what you buy at an online store?
- Li Wenli : Generally, there are two ways to get your purchase, home delivery and picking it up at a convenience store. If you're afraid that you won't get it, then choose the method where you pick up your purchase at a convenience store and then pay for it. Go ahead and try it out first, Grandma. If you have any questions, you can ask me.

### Reading

#### Cloud Technology is Changing the Way We Live

Advances in cloud technology have imperceptibly

shortened distances between individuals. People today use emails instead of pen and paper to write letters. They also read newspapers and watch TV less. They read the news and watch television series on the internet instead. An increasing number of people are opting to shop online and to play games online. Anybody can save information on the cloud and access information using the internet.

For instance, if people would just check highway conditions on the web prior to leaving home, then they could avoid congested sections. If they want to take trains, they can use the internet to book their tickets. Individuals waiting for the bus can also look up when their bus will arrive. In addition to transportation, cloud technology can also be used in such areas as medicine, education, and business. Things like medical records, distance learning, and electronic invoices are concrete examples.

Cloud technology makes our lives more convenient. It was originally believed that it would save people a lot of time. Nobody expected that it actually has made some people even busier. The internet is full of new and interesting information, to the point that it is addicting, especially for those who lack self-control. For instance, Xiaoling's cousin only wants to play online games. He isn't interested in studying and his schoolwork is lagging behind. He plays online until late at night every day and can't get up in the mornings and frequently arrives late to class. His parents have urged him to cut back, but not only does he not listen, he has even kicked up a row. His parents had no choice but to take him to see a doctor.

The doctor said that excessive use of the internet impacts life and health. It's not good for you physically or mentally. Physically, some people's eyes tire and their vision deteriorates, because they continue to stare at computer screens for long periods of time. Mentally, they feel anxious if they cannot go online. Even though they know they shouldn't stay online for very long, they can't change their habits. The doctor recommended that the parents should spend more time with their son and reduce the amount of time he spend online. In addition, they should encourage him to take part in more outdoor activities. Only in this way will his life turn normal.

In conclusion, cloud technology has brought both positive as well as negative influence to mankind. As we enjoy the convenience of cloud technology, we need to restrain ourselves and not become obsessed with the world of the internet.

Dialogue

- Mr. Lin : Everything has finally been moved over here. I'm exhausted.
- Mrs. Lin : Hey, don't sit down yet! Arrange some of the big furniture first.
- Mr. Lin : Where should the bed go? How about next to the closet?
- Mrs. Lin : That won't do! Don't put it there. Put it next to my dressing table.
- Mr. Lin : It's too crowded there. Entering and exiting will be inconvenient.
- Mrs. Lin : Then switch the positions of the closet and the dressing table. The space will be bigger.
- Mr. Lin : Why not put it here?
- Mrs. Lin : If it's put here, it'll be directly facing the door. That's no good
- Mr. Lin : "Directly facing the door?" You're too superstitious.
- Mrs. Lin : It's not superstition. There's scientific basis for this approach.
- Mr. Lin : What scientific basis?! It's just those views of Feng Shui masters. If you care too much about theories like those, you'll never get anything done.
- Mrs. Lin : It's not like that! What's known as modern Feng Shui refers to an area of study that makes use of the environment and make changes to the environment from a scientific perspective. It's the study of the relationship between people and the environment in which they live. Don't go talking nonsense about things you don't understand, okay?!
- Mr. Lin : Okay, then explain what Feng Shui has to do with our daily lives.
- Mrs. Lin : Take, for example, home décor. If you hang fierce animals or things like knives and swords on your walls, it will cause the residents to have short tempers and be impulsive. Here's another example. Mirrors should not face the foot of a bed directly. You could easily scare yourself when you get out of bed.
- Mr. Lin : Hold on, hold on. You're saying so much all in one go. How am I supposed to understand it all? Are you saying that even things hung on walls influence a person's personality?
- Mrs. Lin : That's right. There's a lot of knowledge involved in décor alone. If you want to know more about it, I will tell you about it later bit by bit.
- Mr. Lin : I understand now. No wonder my wife has such a bad temper. Don't hang that sword up anymore.
- Mrs. Lin : Hey! You actually dare bully me! You're a dead man.
- Mr. Lin : Okay, okay! I was just kidding. But I think it's better not knowing things like this. Knowing that your house's Feng Shui has problems, but not being able to change them, wouldn't that make living there unpleasant?
- Mrs. Lin : That's true, but if you know these things first, you would watch out for issues of this kind when you want to rent or buy a home. Otherwise, right after you move in, you might regret it. Don't you think so?

Reading

Where is Feng Shui Actually Used?

Generally speaking, a few criteria are probably considered when choosing a house: geographic location, convenience of transportation, the surrounding environment, price, and so forth. As living standards continue to rise, people are taking more criteria into consideration when choosing a residence. And not just the few mentioned above. Good and bad Feng Shui have also become an important consideration.

Over 1,700 years ago, Guo Pu (276-324 A.D.) of China's Jin Dynasty was the first to put forward the term "Feng Shui". People who believe in Feng Shui feel that it has been over 1,700 years. If Feng Shui wasn't worth believing, how is it possible that it hasn't been repudiated? The Chinese have an expression: "Fate is most important. Luck is second. Feng Shui is third." It can be seen from this how important Feng Shui is in the hearts of the Chinese.

England's Winston Churchill has a famous line, "We shape our buildings; thereafter they shape us," meaning that buildings have a very big influence on people. From the perspective of Feng Shui, the building itself is not the only thing that affects people's personalities, health, and luck. The environment around the building and the layout and décor inside all have an influence.

Take Taipei's landmark, Taipei 101, as an example. Even though it is a very modern structure, the architects actually referred to a great deal of Feng Shui ideas. Starting with the exterior, it resembles a number of basins piled up with eight floors per basin. The outward slanting walls make each basin resemble a cornucopia. Each corner of the each "cornucopia" has a dragon representing good luck. Added together, there are 32 flying dragons. In addition, the ancient coins on the walls of the building and the money-biting turtle on the roof to the left denote (the idea of) attracting wealth. The awnings above the main door on Xinyi Road and over the side door on Songzhi Road both have ten fish, ten coins, and ten "ruyi", suggesting perfection. Walk inside the building and there are "ruyi", representing luck, everywhere to be seen.

These designs were not random. They were designed by the architects after they referred to China's study of Feng Shui. Next time you go to Taipei 101, you can count how many "ruyi" there are inside.

## 第五課

### Dialogue

- Antong** : Yunzhen, you're also here lining up for chicken filet, because of the influence of that TV series?
- Yunzhen** : Who has the time to watch TV series? I didn't come to buy a chicken filet. I'm here to interview the owner of the food stand for the school newspaper.
- Antong** : Is the owner of this chicken-filet selling diner well known?
- Yunzhen** : You haven't heard? He's an alumnus from our school. He just got his PhD last year.
- Antong** : Did I hear you right? Since he has such a high level of education, why is he here in the night market selling chicken filet?
- Yunzhen** : People with doctorates taking the test for garbage collection, people with master's degrees working as drivers, college grads setting up street stalls... phenomena like those are becoming increasingly commonplace in Taiwan. It's nothing new.
- Antong** : There's nothing shameful about selling chicken filet. It is not stealing or robbing. Relying on yourself to make money. It's a great thing to be making money on one's own.
- Yunzhen** : That's what I think, too. But I've also heard a number of negative views, criticizing people like this for wasting the country's education resources.
- Antong** : I can understand that, too. After all, completing a PhD is a long process, and these PhDs should contribute more to the country.
- Yunzhen** : This really is a serious problem. Many people blindly pursue advanced education; some even postpone graduation to avoid job hunting.
- Antong** : We don't have this problem in my country, because most people can't afford to go to college.
- Yunzhen** : On the other hand, however, people who are able to earn their own living are much better than those who depend on daddy to succeed.
- Antong** : Does "kaobazu" mean people who depend on their parents to live?
- Yunzhen** : It roughly means not having any ability of your own. The reason people like this succeed is because of their parents. There's another kind of person called "kenlaozu". They don't have the ability to live on their own. They still live at home and are dependent on their parents.
- Antong** : There are also a lot of people like that now in my country. I don't have rich parents, so I have to hurry up and go to the library and study. After I graduate, I have to rely on myself.
- Yunzhen** : I should also go do the interview, lest the owner close up his stand and I can't interview him.
- Antong** : Well, I hope your interview goes smoothly. I'll be waiting to read the next issue of the school newspaper.
- Yunzhen** : Thanks. See you tomorrow.
- Antong** : By the way, after you finish the interview, don't forget to buy me some "PhD Chicken Filet" to try out.
- Yunzhen** : I hope that after eating it, I can get my doctorate a little faster.

## Reading

### Don't Abandon Your Dreams

After living in Taiwan for a while, Ma Antong feels that Taiwan commodity prices have increased quite a bit since he first arrived in Taiwan. An increasing number of Taiwanese are complaining about the status of low income and high prices. Everything has gone up, except salaries. Most young people just out of college either can't find work or they can barely live on their monthly pay. Many people work hard for years, but are unable to save any money, much less have the ability to buy a house. Some people have even set up organizations for "snails without shells" to protest the high increases in land and housing prices in Taiwan which has produced a gap between the rich and poor and people being unable to afford houses.

According to Taiwanese government statistics, the unemployment rate each year is about 3%-5%. Compared with other countries, Taiwan's unemployment rate isn't especially high, but the people still feel that life is tough. Many people have become the "working poor". This phenomenon is on the one hand, the result of the influence of the global economic slump, while on the other hand, there are problems with the economic policies implemented by the government. For most people the pay scale hasn't increased in years, not to mention widespread layoffs. Those who can't find work in Taiwan have no choice but to go to Mainland China or other countries to seek opportunities.

When Ma Antong was celebrating the Chinese New Year in Taiwan this year, he made some interesting observations. Many Taiwanese wish they could become rich overnight. People love buying lottery tickets and everyone dreams of striking it rich. Another phenomenon he noted was that everyone wants to be boss. They don't want to have to answer to others, so there are many small companies in Taiwan with only three or four people. Many young people want to start their own ventures. News reports indicate that 80% of young Taiwanese want to be their own boss, and most of them want to work in the food and beverage industries.

The economy is currently faring poorly and there are few employment opportunities, but life is made beautiful by the ability to dream. There's an expression that goes, "Chance favors the prepared". You must persevere through a lot of hard work and challenges to realize dreams. If you cultivate your strengths and wait for opportunity, I believe that each person can have his place in the sun.

## 第六課

### Dialogue

- Gao Laien : Did you know that there was an earthquake last night around 7:00?
- Li Wenli : I was in a vehicle at that time, so I didn't feel anything at all. I didn't know about it until I saw the news.
- Gao Laien : I live on the 20th floor. It shook like crazy. Earthquakes are so scary!
- Li Wenli : Don't be afraid. There are often earthquakes here. We're used to them. Yesterday's earthquake isn't considered big.
- Gao Laien : I heard that Taiwan once had a big earthquake. Many houses and bridges collapsed. How terrifying!
- Li Wenli : In that major earthquake, many people were injured and many others crushed to death. The situation of the disaster was serious in central Taiwan. A building in Taipei also collapsed.
- Gao Laien : My country has never had an earthquake. To me, this was a very unusual experience.
- Li Wenli : Western Europe, Northern Europe, and Central Europe don't have earthquakes. Australia almost never has earthquakes. The eastern half of South America also has very few.
- Gao Laien : Which regions frequently have earthquakes?
- Li Wenli : According to earth science studies, most of the places in the world that have earthquakes are located on A Seismic Belt.
- Gao Laien : Since Taiwan has so many earthquakes, it must be on the seismic belt.
- Li Wenli : That's correct. Countries like Taiwan, Japan, and the Philippines are all on the seismic belt, so they have strong earthquakes quite frequently.
- Gao Laien : Today, typhoons can be predicted. We should also be able to predict earthquakes.
- Li Wenli : Some people say that just before an earthquake, there are signs among the animals, and that before people feel the tremors, birds, even chickens, already sense them. Others, like mice, cats, dogs, and horses... what have you, also know

in advance. But none of this has been verified, so up to now, earthquakes can't be predicted.

Gao Laien : Since earthquakes can't be predicted, what should we do?

Li Wenli : We should usually be prepared at all times. In the event that an earthquake takes place, we know how to meet the emergency.

Gao Laien : So, how are we supposed to make preparations?

Li Wenli : You should have a survival kit ready in your house in a place where it can be picked up conveniently.

Gao Laien : But if a major earthquake doesn't occur, won't I have prepared in vain?

Li Wenli : Don't think of it as a hassle. Be prepared. It's always best to be prepared in advance.

### Reading

#### How to Survive Earthquakes

(Li Wenli and Gao Laien go to listen to a speech.)

Good afternoon. I am glad to be here today to talk about "What to Do When an Earthquake Strikes". Although technology today is very advanced, earthquakes are natural disasters that cannot be avoided. We must always be well prepared if we are to minimize the damage inflicted by disasters.

First of all, we need to prepare a survival pack at home. Next, we need to practice drills on how to escape when disaster strikes. The survival pack should include basic necessities such as a flashlight, water, and crackers. We need to regularly perform drills with family on how to escape, so that everybody knows what to do in various situations and panic doesn't set in. If the power goes out at night an escape route must be navigated in the dark. Arrange a meeting point with family members for after the earthquake to avoid losing each other.

In addition, inspect your house to see if there are any cracks. Would any decorations in your house fall down during an earthquake? When an earthquake occurs, you should shut off the gas switch before you flee, so no fire takes place. And open doors, so as to avoid not being able to open them if they become distorted. If you are inside the house during an earthquake, find something to protect your head. The most important thing when fleeing is to remain calm. If you panic, you might miss your opportunity to escape.

If an earthquake is very intense, so big that you cannot even keep your balance, don't rush out. Closets can fall over and walls can even collapse during severe tremors, and running out in a hurry or taking the elevator is not only risky, but it is in fact more dangerous. Being next to a pillar is relatively safe, as this is the sturdiest part of a house. Some experts also suggest ducking down next to a solid table. Should a wardrobe or wall fall over, it could hit the table first, forming a protective, triangular space around you.

If an earthquake causes serious damage, we need to try our utmost to remain calm, allow those that need immediate help to receive attention first, and listen to the instructions of emergency responders, so that rescue operations and reconstruction work can proceed smoothly.

### 第七課

### Dialogue

Bowen : Xuemei (lit. female lower-classmate), do you want to go to the school club office with me? A few freshmen Xuedi (lit. male lower-classmate) want me to teach them how to play the guitar.

Yuzhen : I can't go. I have to work tonight. I have to take advantage of my free time in the afternoon to go to the library and write a report; otherwise, I won't be able to hand it in. Let's go tomorrow.

Bowen : But tomorrow during the day, I have two tutees and in the evening, I've made a date with my girlfriend. I don't have any time at all.

Yuzhen : Xuezhong (lit. male upper-classmate), you're really busy. Oh. How is your graduation exhibition coming?

Bowen : Uhn, it's behind schedule. The professor tells me to do this and then tells me to do that, causing me to change it this way and that. At this point, I haven't even completed half of it. Some places, I've changed three times in a row and the professor still isn't satisfied.

Yuzhen : Making graduation exhibitions really is a big pain. Although I don't have to do one for another two years, I think it would be best if I started a little early, so as to avoid not being able to finish on time when the time comes and not being able to graduate.

- Bowen** : Good thinking. I regret it a bit that I didn't start preparing a little earlier. If during my second and third years, I went on fewer dates, went out less, and studied more, it would probably be a little better now.
- Yuzhen** : But Xuezhong, if you only study during your four years in university, don't take part in clubs, and don't have a boyfriend or a girlfriend, what fun would university be? Xuezhong, you're good at studying; you know how to have a good time; your relationship with your girlfriend is stable. That's what university students should do. Not like me. I don't even have a boyfriend yet.
- Bowen** : Yeah. During my first and second years, I thought that you only go to university once in your life. Of course, you should fall in love and really have a good time. But if I could turn back time, there are a few things I would be more serious about doing.
- Yuzhen** : Which things?
- Bowen** : For example, improving my language skills, at least learn one foreign language better. My English right now is only so-so and I barely passed my Spanish tests. If I could return to my second year, I would definitely work hard to improve my foreign languages.
- Yuzhen** : Un-huh, language skills really are important.
- Bowen** : Also, I would make it a point to apply to be an exchange student. An English environment or a Spanish environment would be helpful in the training of my foreign languages.
- Yuzhen** : But if you went abroad for a year, you would graduate a year later.
- Bowen** : What difference would that make? One year is only one small fraction of a person's life. Spending a year for your future is worth it.
- Yuzhen** : What else besides improving your foreign language skills?
- Bowen** : I would vie for opportunities to intern at firms during winter and summer breaks. For a college student, entering the workforce and interning is the only way to truly understand what the workplace is and what "work" is. Xuemei, you're only a sophomore; it's not too late to start now.

## Reading

### The Crush

He Yating noticed that her classmate Yuzhen hasn't been focusing well in class lately. Her eyes are always following He Qingyuan, a guy in their class. So after class, Yating asked Yuzhen to have lunch with her. It turns out that Yuzhen has been much troubled, because she has a crush on their classmate He Qingyuan. She actually fell in love with He Qingyuan on the first day of school.

He Qingyuan is an important person in the school. Not only does he hold the post of president of the student union, he is also a member of the school basketball team. He's tall, powerfully built, and dashing. He has a pair of beguiling eyes and a cheerful and sparkling personality. Laughter follows him wherever he goes. Yuzhen can't help watching Qingyuan's every move. Even in her dreams, Qingyuan smiles at her, putting her in a good mood all day.

The day before Valentines Day, Yuzhen personally made chocolate that she wanted to give to Qingyuan. As it turns out, that day, she saw that the desk in front of Qingyuan already had a pile of chocolate on it, so Yuzhen put her chocolate away. Yating suggested that Yuzhen go confess to Qingyuan, but Yuzhen doesn't dare. She asked herself how could a heartthrob like Qingyuan ever like somebody as ordinary as herself? Going and confessing (her love) would just be letting herself be hurt.

Seeing Yuzhen like that, Yating really wanted to help her, whereupon Yating went to see Qingyuan's good friend Lin Ronghua. She listened to Ronghua who said that Qingyuan had a girlfriend that he had been seeing for a short period of time. She's the prettiest girl in the Chinese department. A few months ago, Qingyuan started to chase the girl. Every day, he called her, sent her text messages, and wrote love letters for her. At first, the girl's attitude was very ambiguous about her feelings, causing Qingyuan to be confused. After more than a month, the girl finally agreed to go steady with him. He was thrilled.

And with that, Qingyuan and his girlfriend went "sweetly" steady for two or three months. Soon, Qingyuan discovered that when they had dates, his girlfriend's attitude wasn't as tender as it had been originally. She would get mad at the drop of a hat. Messages he sent to her frequently were "read" but not answered. Sometimes, Qingyuan saw his girlfriend talking and laughing with other guys, making him really jealous and insecure about their relationship. If Qingyuan became angry because of these kinds of things, his girlfriend would say that he got



jealous too easily. They often had arguments about things like this. One time, Ronghua saw Qingyuan's girlfriend taking a walk and holding hands with a guy. He even saw the guy kiss her. Ronghua thought, "Could it be that she is two-timing? Oh no, should I tell Qingyuan?"

Hearing this, Yating planned to immediately go tell Yuzhen to take advantage of this opportunity to snatch up Qingyuan.

## 第八課

### Dialogue

- Wang Lihua : Lu Ya, did you come to the park to take a walk?
- Lu Ya : Lihua, long time no see. I'd been sitting too long in the library, so I came out to walk around.
- Wang Lihua : What have you been up to lately? Have you finished writing your thesis?
- Lu Ya : The thesis is just about finished. And you? What have you been doing?
- Wang Lihua : My sister had a son last month. I sometimes go take care of him for her.
- Lu Ya : Congratulations. So, you're an aunt.
- Wang Lihua : That's right. I never imagined that I would actually become an aunt this early.
- Lu Ya : By the way, there's something I've always felt was hard to comprehend, but was embarrassed to ask.
- Wang Lihua : What is it? (lit. Tell it to me straight) In any event, we're close friends, so even if you say something wrong, I won't get mad.
- Lu Ya : I often take a walk in the park, and more than once I've seen a baby carriage with a dog riding inside instead of a baby. Are those Taiwanese crazy?
- Wang Lihua : Ha, ha, ha... That's because many Taiwanese today feel that raising a child is both expensive and hard work. Married couples who don't yet have children consider having pets rather than raising children. As for people who are not married, because they live alone, it's hard for them to avoid feeling lonely, so they like to raise pets to keep them company. If you often see dogs riding in baby carriages, after a while you won't think it's strange.
- Lu Ya : The costs needed to raise a child obviously far exceed those needed to raise a pet, but don't you have the concept of carrying on the family line?
- Wang Lihua : The young generation isn't willing to be shackled by marriage and family, like their parents. They prefer pursuing freedom and living their lives unfettered and free. The older generation, on the other hand, still has this way of thinking.
- Lu Ya : Hasn't the government promoted any policies to encourage raising children?
- Wang Lihua : Although the government has forwarded some policies to subsidize raising children, most people still feel that the subsidies aren't large enough, so they prefer to choose not to have children.
- Lu Ya : So, is it possible that you will only be able to see old people everywhere in Taiwan in the future?
- Wang Lihua : Even if couples are willing to have a child, most only have one. Nowadays, many children are only sons or only daughters.
- Lu Ya : In the past, China implemented the "One Child Policy". Most families also only had one child.
- Wang Lihua : That's right. As a result, many parents spoiled their kids. The small number of children has also had a big impact on many occupations, such as teachers and OB/GYN doctors.
- Lu Ya : No wonder my friend became unemployed recently. She was teaching English at a cram school, but her boss told her that there have been fewer and fewer students lately, so he had no choice but to close his business. Now, she has to find another job.

### Reading

#### Families that Don't Marry, Have Children

I don't know when it started, but Taiwan has become one of the countries with the lowest birth rates in the world. An increasing number of people aren't marrying. They feel that they'd rather have nothing than settle for second best. If they don't get along with their

boy/girlfriend, they just break up. Married people divorce at the drop of a hat. How are they going to think about having and raising kids? Also worth noting, people with higher degrees are having fewer children. They also marry and have kids late.

Trends away from marrying and having children have had a tremendous impact on a number of industries. Many kindergartens and schools are having difficulties finding students, forcing them to reduce the number of classes. The fact that Taiwanese not marrying or having kids has unexpectedly affected Bai Ruyu. Yesterday, the owner of her cram school told her that the cram school would do business until the end of the month. Due to the low birth rate, many children's English cram schools franchises, let alone his little cram school, have been going out of business in recent years.

In addition to cram schools not being able to stay in business, the cram school owner is worried about Taiwan's future. Young people don't see hope in their future, so they only think about looking out for themselves. Without enough young people entering the workforce, economic development is stagnating. The aging of the population has also become a big burden to society. Measures that the government has come up with aimed at the low birth rate include many policies for encouraging child-raising: from reduced taxes for children born to unmarried people, longer maternity leaves, and improvement of child care environment to receiving NT\$3,000 every month for a third child until the child reaches adulthood.

Giving money isn't a good way to encourage child-raising. Unless the government is able to improve the overall environment, women won't be willing to have children. In the past, grandparents could help take care of grandsons and granddaughters, but people today are marrying and having children late. They have to take care of both their children and parents. The burden they have to bear is even heavier, so they are even less willing to bear children. The government has put forward numerous policies, but the budgets needed to realize these policies are often in the billions of dollars. These are another heavy burden on national finances. Effectively improving the environment for Taiwanese women to bear children is testing the wisdom of the government.

## 第九課

### Dialogue

(in Taipei's East District)

Gao Laien : Wow! Taipei's East District is filled with life.

Li Wenli : In the past, this wasn't such a busy place. 100 years ago, this was still countryside and not many people lived here.

Gao Laien : Where was the most bustling place in Taiwan before?

Li Wenli : Taiwan's political and economic center gradually moved from south to north. In the past, three places were the busiest, first was Tainan; second was Lugang; third was Mengjia.

Gao Laien : I've been to Tainan. I know that around 400 years ago, the Dutch once made Taiwan their trade base in Asia. Tainan has a lot of historical sites. Fort Provintia was built in Tainan when the Dutch ruled Taiwan. It's a widely known tourist spot. Where are Lugang and Mengjia?

Li Wenli : Lugang was once central Taiwan's most prosperous port. It is said that deer herds frequently appeared next to the river, while others say that the harbor is shaped like deer antlers, so the people called the place Lugang.

Gao Laien : Did Taiwan have lots of deer in the past?

Li Wenli : In the past, deer could be seen all over the mountains and plains of central Taiwan.

Gao Laien : Why can't you see deer in Taiwan now? They can only be seen in zoos.

Li Wenli : I've heard that later people killed I don't know how many deer to make money from selling the hides. Under these circumstances, the number of deer decreased.

Gao Laien : Does Lugang have any scenic spots worth visiting?

Li Wenli : The glory of Lugang is history now, but many historic sites remain. The temples and homes there have an air of antiquity and are very much worth visiting.

Gao Laien : What good-tasting things do they have there?

- Li Wenli : Lugang has some traditional desserts and light repasts, like their mouth-watering mung-bean cake, ox-tongue biscuits, and oyster omelets.
- Gao Laien : Oh? That tasty? I would really like to try them. Next, you should really introduce where Mengjia is.
- Li Wenli : Mengjia is next to the Danshui River in northern Taiwan. It was the earliest place in Taipei to be developed. Its most flourishing period was about two centuries ago. It is now called “Wanhua”. At the time, the Danshui River was filled with canoes. Canoes are a type of small boat. Aborigines called canoes “mengjia”, so later everybody called the place “Mengjia”.
- Gao Laien : I still don’t understand why “Mengjia” is now called “Wanhua”.
- Li Wenli : Indigenous people used to transport agricultural products in canoes along the Danshui River to sell them there. The Taiwanese pronunciation of Bangka is similar to the Japanese pronunciation of (the characters) “萬華”, so when the Japanese ruled Taiwan, the name was change to “Wanhua”. It’s still called “Bangkah” in Taiwanese.
- Gao Laien : I see. Does Wanhua have anything to see?
- Li Wenli : Although Wanhua has declined, it still has historic sites, temples, and old streets, all of which are worth seeing. You will think you have gone back in time. There are lots of traditional foods along the sides of the roads. Tourists like to go there. Let’s go together later.

### Reading

#### Setting Down Roots

Lao Zhang went to join the military when he was young and healthy. He later left his hometown behind and crossed the sea, coming with Chiang Kai-shek’s military to Taiwan. According to Taiwan population information, the number of people that came from Mainland China to Taiwan in 1949 was over one million, approximately 13% of the population of Taiwan at the time. From 1949 on, for nearly 40 years, Taiwan and China had no dealings, changing Lao Zhang’s fate.

When first coming to Taiwan, Lao Zhang thought

that he would be able to go back in just a few years. He missed his family, but continued to be unable to go back home. He couldn’t even correspond by letter, so he had no news about his family at all. After a few years, he left the military and sold noodles to make a living. Far from his parents and wife, he thought about them all the time. After over 20 years, he still couldn’t return. He thought that he probably would never be able to go back. He felt lonely. In Taiwan, he married another woman, introduced by a friend, and had two daughters. He never expected that 40 years after arriving in Taiwan, the government would finally allow visits to relatives. He went everywhere inquiring about news of his family. It was only then that he learned that his parents and wife had died a long time before, during the Cultural Revolution. When he heard the news, he couldn’t help crying.

He finally went back to see his son who hadn’t been born yet when he left home. His son didn’t have a dad in his childhood and had to depend on relatives to live. Life was very bitter. When he saw his son, who was already 40-years old, when he saw him for the first time, Lao Zhang was both happy and sad. Although Lao Zhang bought many things for his son and left him a sum of money, his son still couldn’t forgive his father. He blamed his father for not fulfilling his duty as a father. In the end, whose fault was it? Who understands the pain and scars in their hearts? Lao Zhang returned to Taiwan filled with regrets.

Lao Zhang says, “In periods of no war, people should really cherish life. What should have been the best years of my life, I spent either fighting in war or fleeing calamity. My life has truly been exceedingly hard. I’m already used to living here and don’t plan to return. Taiwan is my home. You could say that I have set my roots down.” The years of fear and anxiety have passed. Lao Zhang has found peace here. Many old veterans that have met with the same experience as Lao Zhang have unforgettable stories of their own.

### 第十課

#### Dialogue

(at Jianming’s house)

- Jianming : Yuzhen, look and tell me if this suit goes with this tie.
- Yuzhen : If you’re going for an interview, this tie is too fancy. Get a plainer one. Brother, you look nervous.

Jianming : I am nervous. I hear that over 1,000 people alone mailed in resumes applying for these jobs, and there are only 200 remaining interview slots. In the end, only between 10 and 20 people will be hired. The acceptance rate is really low.

Yuzhen : Well, of course. The company is a leader in the domestic food and beverage industry. For somebody new to the workforce, the starting salary is considered high. I hear the benefits are also pretty good. Of course, people are falling over themselves trying to get in. What qualifications do they required?

Jianming : Actually, there aren't any special restrictions. They require you a bachelor's degree or higher, that you are 35-years old or younger. You don't necessarily need a degree in a related field.

Yuzhen : With criteria that relaxed, it's no wonder so many people are applying. Brother, you can do it!

(Interview venue)

Interviewer : He Jianming, please first give a simple self-introduction.

Jianming : Sure. Hello, Everyone. My name is Jianming. I graduated from National Taiwan Normal University's Department of History. I am 23-years old. My family lives in Taipei. My family consists of four people—my parents, my little sister and me.

Interviewer : You just graduated. Do you have any work experience from the time you were in university?

Jianming : Yes. I have quite a bit of part-time work experience from my four years in college. I am interested in the food and beverage industry, so I worked part-time in a small restaurant during my freshman year. Later, I felt that I was limited as to what I could learn there, so I switched to a coffee shop franchise. During the summer break of my third year in college, I applied and was accepted for an internship in the business planning department of a food and beverage franchise, where I acquired a great deal of knowledge in the area operations.

Interviewer : Your resume says that you were the head of a school club. Could you talk about that experience?

Jianming : When I was a sophomore at university, I was the president of the Pop Music Club for a year. We collaborated with a few universities to hold two big concerts. The show was brilliant and well received. During that year, I learned how to plan activities and enhanced my leadership skills. More importantly, I gained a great deal of experience working and discussing with others.

Interviewer : From your part-time work and practical training experience, it seems that you are very interested in the food and beverage industry. Are you aware, however, that the food and beverage industry is hard work?

Jianming : Yes, I do, because an upper classmate of mine works in a restaurant. He has told me a lot regarding things in this area. In spite of this, I haven't given up on the idea of working in the food and beverage industry. I still feel this work would be good training for someone just entering the workforce, making me want even more to take up the challenge represented by this job.

Interviewer : What strong points do you feel you have that would make us want to hire you?

Jianming : As I mentioned earlier, because I have experience leading our school club, I am good at working with others. In addition, I'm a conscientious worker and was highly praised by my supervisors when I worked part-time. If you hire me, the company probably won't regret it.

Interviewer : Fine, that's it for today's interview. Whether we hire you or not, we will notify you in writing within a week. Thank you for coming to the interview.

Jianming : I would like to thank all of you for giving me this opportunity.

## Reading

### Find Employment or Set up a Business?

Lately, some of Jianming's classmates have been looking around for work. Some have already tested into graduate school and are enjoying a relaxed summer vacation. Some have applied and been accepted into grad schools abroad. Before they go abroad, they need to really practice their foreign languages. There are two girls from his class that plan to start a business selling clothes. They are busy looking for a storefront, capital, and businesses to work with.

Jianming, of course, is no exception. He mailed out his resume and is waiting for notification. This seems to be harder than taking the college entrance exam. Actually, because Jianming had some dealings with restaurants while in university, he thought about going to a bank and applying for a Young Entrepreneur Loan and opening his own shop, but he's also concerned that he's not cut out to do business. In the end, if he can't keep it up, because it's just too much work, he's afraid he would lose a sum of money. Then, he would have a loan that he could never pay off. With this in mind, he hasn't been able to stir up the courage to run a business, preferring rather to enter a large firm as an employee.

Jianming has also discussed his search for employment with his parents. Jianming's parents actually didn't have any particular opinions about his work. They just hope that he finds a job that will allow him to advance steadily that will allow him to support a family in the future. Fortunately, he can search for a job based on his interests, because he doesn't have any pressure from his parents.

Last week, Jianming received notification from a restaurant chain, saying that he passed the written test and asking him to go for an interview. Jianming was very excited, because that's exactly what he was shooting for. In order to prepare for the interview, he went online to look for information about the company, and read up about the company. He familiarized himself with the company's history and development, and gained a preliminary understanding of the position that he was applying for. He also found some interviewing tips, some questions asked in previous interviews, and even did a dry run with a classmate. As to his interview clothes, his sister went with him to buy them. After all, guys don't have much of a clue about dressing up. His sister helped him choose a basic dark blue suit and a white shirt to go with it.

Jianming went to the company today for an interview and you could say the process went smoothly. The interview officer seemed to have a good impression of him. It would be great if he could be hired without any hitches.

## 第十一課

### Dialogue

(Parents' day at an English language cram school)

- Mr. Zhang : It's really a pity that the cram school is going out of business. There won't be as many opportunities to see each other in the future.
- Mrs. Zhang : Ruyu, if you have time in the future, you're welcome to drop by our house whenever you like.
- Ruyu : Thank you. Please call me whenever Xiaoming has any problems with English in the future.
- Mrs. Zhang : Xiaoming's English has improved a great deal, but his Vietnamese has gotten a lot worse. Sometimes, I get really exasperated when I think about it. I tell him to speak with me in Vietnamese, he just won't listen and continues to speak Chinese as he normally does.
- Mr. Zhang : The opportunities for Xiaming to speak Vietnamese are rare in Taiwan. In addition, he's unwilling to practice Vietnamese with his mother. So his Vietnamese is gradually regressing.
- Ruyu : If a child can learn his own mother tongue, not only will it not adversely impact his studies; on the contrary, his studies in many areas will be even better.
- Mrs. Zhang : That's right. Just like when I was young in the states. My parents spoke with me and my little brother in Vietnamese at home. When we got to school, we spoke with classmates in English. I didn't start studying Chinese until I came to Taiwan to go to university.
- Ruyu : Wow! You've done really well! I thought you were an overseas Chinese from Vietnam and that from a young age, you spoke Chinese at home, and that's why your Chinese is so fluent and you don't seem to have much of an accent.

- Mrs. Zhang : Thank you for the compliment. Although I've lived in Taiwan for over a decade, I spent a long period of time getting used to things like the linguistic culture, life style, and values here.
- Ruyu : You are really amazing. You can speak so many languages and can adapt to so many cultures.
- Mr. Zhang : When she has free time after work, she also often goes to the New Immigrant Multicultural Exchange Activity Center where she serves as a volunteer.
- Ruyu : They have a place like that?! As a volunteer, what things do you do?
- Mrs. Zhang : In Taiwan, every county and city has an activity center like that. All I can do is comfort foreign spouses and chat with them. Because many people have a lot of life adjustment issues, homesickness, insomnia, loneliness, anxiety, regret, and similar situations, coupled with the language communication barrier, which also makes it difficult to establish good interpersonal relations with locals in Taiwan.
- Mr. Zhang : In the past, Taiwan didn't have to face multicultural shock as much, so the public finds it difficult to accept and identify with these transnational marriage immigrants.
- Ruyu : Yes, the US actually had the same problem years ago. In addition, they discriminated against immigrants, because they were worried that the large quantities of people from other countries immigrating would reduce the caliber of the populace.
- Mr. Zhang : The families and children of these new immigrants actually could be important assets to help Taiwan globalize.
- Mrs. Zhang : Faced with different cultures, we should try to understand each other with an attitude of equality, respect, and learning about each other's culture.
- Mr. Zhang : When faced with new immigrants, if we treat them like outsiders, they will act like outsiders. They will only deal with us with the attitude that they are one of us if we regard them as one of us. So attitude is really very important.
- Ruyu : I really agree with your opinions. I'm really happy that I had the opportunity to chat so much with you today. It has helped me further understand Taiwan. Thank you very much.
- Mrs. Zhang : Not at all. And thank you for taking such good care of Xiaoming. Keep in touch (lit. contact us frequently).

### Reading

#### New Multicultural Taiwan

After Bai Ruyu arrived in Taiwan, because she taught English in a cram school, she gradually became familiar with some parents of the students. Mr. and Mrs. Zhang were a couple of the parents. They both studied in the US, so they were especially nice to Bai Ruyu. While in Taiwan, in addition to studying Chinese and trying to understand more about Taiwanese culture and society, Bai Ruyu wants to understand some more about the developments that have taken place in Taiwan over the last 20 or 30 years. Whenever the cram school has parents' day, Bai Ruyu makes it a point of taking part, so that she can chat more with the parents.

Bai Ruyu heard her Taiwanese friends mention that the social structure of Taiwan has undergone big changes over the years, especially changes in Taiwan's population makeup. It is said that one parent of one out of every eight babies born today is not of Taiwanese nationality. Of these, the majority are of Mainland Chinese and Vietnamese nationality. Eventually, the total number of these children and their parents will make up a considerable percentage of Taiwan's population and will have an influence on social, economic, and political developments. Of all the changes that will take place, the biggest will also be the most fundamental, a diversification of ethnic groups and the language spoken. Clearly, in the future, the so-called "mother tongue" perhaps will not be just the present Mandarin, Taiwanese, Hakka, and aboriginal languages.

In the future, distribution of educational resources and fair treatment will become very important. Schools will not only have to be concerned about the physical and mental development and adjustment of school children. As to pupils who lack somebody to provide them guidance in their schoolwork, schools will also need to take the initiative to provide guidance. They can't let these school children lose before they even start, thereby losing their competitive edge and even not having opportunities to develop fairly. But looked at from

a positive perspective, this kind of multi-ethnic, multi-cultural society will accelerate Taiwan's globalization.

In addition, the birth rate of newborns in the Taiwanese region has set new historical record lows in recent years. The birth rate has a distinct downward trend. Because this trend will accelerate the aging of Taiwanese society, for the next generation, this will be a heavy burden. In the future, not only will productivity be insufficient, it will be difficult for Taiwan to compete with other countries. If Taiwan wants to continue developing, it should squarely face the issue of new immigrant families and respect and appreciate multicultural society and actively face the impact that it ushers in.

## 第十二課

### Dialogue

(Before an election, Wang Ankang, Li Wenli, and Zhang Dingneng are chatting.)

- Wang Ankang : The elections are around the corner. Who are you going to choose this time?
- Li Wenli : No matter who you choose, it's all the same. Going to vote is pointless. What can we change?
- Zhang Dingneng : I don't care who gets elected. Let's not discuss politics. It's too sensitive. Let's chat about other things.
- Wang Ankang : All right. Let's talk about food. Recently, there have been problems with food safety. Bread and beverages have chemical additives. Vegetables and fruit have pesticide residue.
- Li Wenli : Really? We have to be careful about the things we eat. The government should do a good job of managing these things.
- Wang Ankang : Xiao Zhang, I hear that you wanted to buy a house. Have you bought one?
- Zhang Dingneng : How on earth could I afford one? The government's land and real estate policies have problems. Who knew that housing prices would rise so much? The government should amend the

laws and regulations and establish a reasonable system.

- Wang Ankang : Uh-huh. Everything in our lives, from bread to houses, involves politics.
- Li Wenli : That's right. Problems like commodity prices, transportation, education, employment, care of the elderly, nuclear disaster, air pollution, and river pollution can't be decoupled from politics.
- Zhang Dingneng : People with what backgrounds and in which fields do you think are best suited to engaging in politics? In some countries, even movie stars can actually become president.
- Wang Ankang : I think it doesn't really matter what background a person has or what field a person is in. You have to look at the person's ability and whether or not he really cares about the people.
- Li Wenli : A lot of things are currently going wrong with society: high unemployment, low wages, and little security. Only by choosing a capable person can we solve everybody's problems.
- Wang Ankang : Logically, if a country is to prosper, economic interests and political power cannot be controlled by a privileged few.
- Li Wenli : So you're saying...
- Wang Ankang : More people need to take part in social organizations and political activities to make the people oversee the government. If an elected representative or the president doesn't respect the will of the people, the people can recall him.
- Li Wenli : Un-huh. We need to achieve (a situation wherein) the people have the power and the government is clean and capable for the country to be affluent and secure.
- Wang Ankang : Elections are indeed important. Everybody cares about their own

- lives, property, and the education of their children....
- Zhang Dingneng : But a lot of campaign money is spent on each election. Where does the candidates' money come from?
- Wang Ankang : Candidates don't need to spend much money. Using volunteers that support them, they can also fight an election campaign that differs from previous ones.
- Li Wenli : I think people are looking for a politician with ideals and who can fulfill his promises as he leads everybody.
- Wang Ankang : Yes, we look forward to a beautiful future. We want to choose a good political leader to give the people positive energy to help suffering people to overcome their difficult circumstances. If we do so, I believe that this country will improve day by day.

## Reading

### Politics Decide Our Future

There is a country that was once rich. Due to government graft and corruption and endless political infighting, the country's development has stagnated, unemployment has increased, and people in society have lost confidence in the government. Many homeless vagrants have appeared. They make the streets their home and depend on food found in garbage piles to live. They live miserable lives that the outside world would find difficult to imagine. The reason this country has had such a huge change is not entirely because of corrupt politics, but also because the people are indifferent to politics. Graft, corruption, and incompetence are obviously terrible, but the most terrible thing is actually the apathy of the people toward politics.

Why is it that the more unequal a country, the more the people are apathetic toward politics? A number of scholars have told us that in more unequal societies, the classes with higher income and the people with more political power naturally have more voice, allowing them to further influence national policies. And to safeguard their own interests, these people with both money and power, tend to use their influence to prevent more fair policies and systems from being implemented.

To some people, the word "politics" sounds far off. They feel that no matter who gets elected, society's problems will remain unchanged. It is more important to look after yourself and your family than to vote for a good candidate. They are well aware of societal issues, but don't want to concern themselves with them, allowing corruption to persist and selfish politicians to be elected. The people condone collusion between government officials and businesspeople, bringing about rising prices and a gulf between the rich and poor. People are worried that they can't find work, worried that they can't afford houses, worried about their children's education, worried that they won't be able to get pensions, worried that nuclear power plants will cause disasters, worried that they will be subjected to pollution, because factories are crowding together in their hometowns. But if these problems can't be resolved, does the government really think that holding an event or lighting off some fireworks will cause the people to forget about them?

Politics is actually everything that has to do with us. Being concerned about politics is being concerned about your own future and deciding what kind of life the next generation will have. If you don't want to see our country's development stall, its people living in hardship, how can we not be concerned about politics?



# 生詞 索引 I

## 中 - 英 Vocabulary Index (Chinese-English)

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
<b>A</b>			
àimèi	曖昧	暧昧	7-2-30
àiqíngpiàn	愛情片	爱情片	1-1-13
Ājiàn	阿建	阿建	1-1-2
āngzāng	骯髒	肮脏	12-2-23
ànliàn	暗戀	暗恋	7-2-1
ānquángǎn	安全感	安全感	7-2-35
ānwèi	安慰	安慰	1-2-21
ānyǎng	安養	安养	12-1-12
Àozhōu	澳洲	澳洲	6-1-31

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
<b>B</b>			
bǎ	把	把	4-1-32
bǎchí	把持	把持	12-1-21
bái	白	白	6-1-24
bǎi	擺	摆	4-1-2
bǎi dìtān	擺地攤	摆地摊	5-1-28
bǎishì	擺飾	摆饰	4-1-30
bǎituō	擺脫	摆脱	12-1-35
bǎiwén bùrú yíjiàn	百聞不如一見	百闻不如一见	2-2-38
bàimiǎn	罷免	罢免	12-1-23
bǎochí	保持	保持	6-2-41
bàodǎo	報導	报导	5-2-30
bàoli	暴力	暴力	1-2-35
bǎoliú	保留	保留	9-1-32
bàozaò	暴躁	暴躁	4-1-25
bǎozhàng	保障	保障	12-1-19
Běi Ōu	北歐	北欧	6-1-29
bēicǎn	悲慘	悲惨	12-2-10
bèijǐng	背景	背景	12-1-15
běndì rén	本地人	本地人	11-1-44
běnguó	本國	本国	11-2-9
běنشēn	本身	本身	4-2-13
bǐ	筆	笔	9-2-24
biàn	便	便	9-1-12

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
biànlìxìng	便利性	便利性	4-2-2
biǎodi	表弟	表弟	3-2-25
biǎoxiàn	表現	表现	2-2-15
biǎoyǎn	表演	表演	2-1-7
bìjìng	畢竟	毕竟	5-1-17
bìkāi	避開	避开	3-2-14
bǐlì	比例	比例	11-2-13
bǐngān	餅乾	饼干	6-2-14
bìnglì	病歷	病历	3-2-18
bìxūpǐn	必需品	必需品	6-2-11
bìyèshēng	畢業生	毕业生	10-1-18
bóshì	博士	博士	5-1-6
Bówén	博文	博文	7-1-1
bù	部	部	1-1-20
bújiàndé	不見得	不见得	3-1-9
bùjīn	不禁	不禁	9-2-18
bùkě sīyì	不可思議	不可思议	8-1-28
bùmén	部門	部门	1-1-8
bùxíbān	補習班	补习班	8-1-27
bùzhì	布置	布置	4-1-19
bùzhǐ	不只	不只	8-1-5
búzhìyú	不至於	不至于	1-2-5
bùzhù	補助	补助	8-1-19
bùzú	不足	不足	11-2-37
bùzú wéiqí	不足為奇	不足为奇	8-1-31

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
<b>C</b>			
cáichǎn	財產	财产	12-1-29
cǎifǎng	採訪	采访	5-1-4
cǎiquǎn	彩券	彩券	5-2-25
cǎiyuán	裁員	裁员	5-2-23
cáizhèng	財政	财政	8-2-45
cānkǎo	參考	参考	4-2-15
cánliú	殘留	残留	12-1-9
cānyǐnyè	餐飲業	餐饮业	5-2-33
cèmén	側門	侧门	4-2-29

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
céng	曾	曾	11-2-2
chǎng	場	场	2-2-1
chǎngshāng	廠商	厂商	10-2-3
chángshì	嘗試	尝试	11-2-3
chǎnjià	產假	产假	8-2-30
chǎnshēng	產生	产生	11-2-5
chǎojià	吵架	吵架	7-2-37
cháxún	查詢	查询	3-2-12
chēng	稱	称	9-1-13
chéngdù	程度	程度	6-2-6
chéngnián	成年	成年	8-2-35
chéngnuò	承諾	承诺	12-1-32
chénmí	沉迷	沉迷	3-2-41
chènshān	襯衫	衬衫	10-2-21
chénzhòng	沉重	沉重	8-2-46
chīcù	吃醋	吃醋	7-2-36
chíxù	持續	持续	11-2-38
chǒng	寵	宠	8-1-23
chōngdòng	衝動	冲动	4-1-26
chōngjí	衝擊	冲击	11-1-21
chuǎnbúguò qì	喘不過氣	喘不过气	1-2-42
chuángjiǎo	床腳	床脚	4-1-28
chuāngshāng	創傷	创伤	9-2-30
chuàngxià	創下	创下	11-2-30
chuàngyè	創業	创业	5-2-32
chuǎnqì	喘氣	喘气	1-2-32
chuānzhuó	穿著	穿着	2-1-9
chuánzōng jiēdài	傳宗接代	传宗接代	8-1-33
chūbù	初步	初步	10-2-16
chùchù	處處	处处	2-2-29
chúfēi	除非	除非	8-2-36
chūguó	出國	出国	10-2-1
chuíxián sānchǐ	垂涎三尺	垂涎三尺	9-1-44
chūshì	出世	出世	9-2-21

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
cí	詞	词	4-2-5
cìjī	刺激	刺激	1-1-17
cǐwài	此外	此外	3-2-35
cóngqián	從前	从前	3-1-27
cún bù liǎo	存不了	存不了	5-2-42
cuòshī	措施	措施	8-2-27

**D**

dǎbàn	打扮	打扮	2-1-5
dàchǎo dànao	大吵大鬧	大吵大闹	3-2-44
dàdǎn	大膽	大胆	1-2-23
dàduōshù	大多數	大多数	5-1-29
dài	代	代	8-1-12
dàikuǎn	貸款	贷款	10-2-8
dàilǐng	帶領	带领	12-1-33
dàitì	代替	代替	8-1-7
dǎkāi	打開	打开	1-2-41
dàliàng	大量	大量	11-1-26
Dàlùjí	大陸籍	大陆籍	11-2-11
dàn	但	但	1-2-6
dǎng	擋	挡	2-1-13
dāngtiān	當天	当天	7-2-20
dāngxuǎn	當選	当选	12-1-4
dānrèn	擔任	担任	7-2-7
Dànshuǐ Hé	淡水河	淡水河	9-1-35
dǎnzi	膽子	胆子	1-1-19
dǎo	倒	倒	6-1-6
dāo	刀	刀	4-1-22
dào shíhòu	到時候	到时候	7-1-27
dǎobì	倒閉	倒闭	8-2-17
dàoliú	倒流	倒流	7-1-18
dàoshì	倒是	倒是	8-1-16
dǎotā	倒塌	倒塌	6-2-33
dǎoxiàlái	倒下來	倒下来	6-2-47
dǎoyǎn	導演	导演	2-2-18
dàoyòng	盜用	盗用	3-1-24

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
dǎqì	打氣	打气	1-2-20
dǎtīng	打聽	打听	9-2-17
dàyi	大一	大一	10-1-19
dàyuē	大約	大约	9-2-2
dàzhòng	大眾	大众	11-1-22
dé	得	得	2-2-23
děng	等	等	2-2-13
děngdài	等待	等待	5-2-39
diǎn	點	点	1-2-36
diànnǎo	電腦	电脑	1-2-13
diàntī	電梯	电梯	6-2-34
diànyǐngyuàn	電影院	电影院	1-1-22
diàojìn	掉進	掉进	1-2-44
diàoxiàlá	掉下來	掉下来	6-2-46
dìbiāo	地標	地标	4-2-14
dié	疊	迭	4-2-17
dìjià	地價	地价	5-2-10
dīkōng fēiguò	低空飛過	低空飞过	7-1-29
dìlǐ	地理	地理	4-2-1
dīng	訂	订	3-2-30
dìqiú kēxué	地球科學	地球科学	6-1-33
dìqū	地區	地区	6-1-10
díquè	的確	的确	5-1-19
dìtān	地攤	地摊	5-1-11
diūliǎn	丟臉	丢脸	2-1-10
dìzhèn	地震	地震	6-1-2
dìzhèn dài	地震帶	地震带	6-1-39
dōngbànbù	東半部	东半部	6-1-38
dǒngde	懂得	懂得	1-2-37
dòngwù	動物	动物	4-1-21
dòngwùyuán	動物園	动物园	9-1-14
duàn	段	段	5-2-1
duàn	斷	断	6-1-8
duǎnkù	短褲	短裤	2-1-11
duī	堆	堆	7-2-21
duìyuán	隊員	队员	7-2-11
dúmùzhōu	獨木舟	独木舟	9-1-25
duó	多	多	6-1-9
duǒjìn	躲進	躲进	1-2-43
duōnián	多年	多年	5-2-20

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
dúshàn qíshēn	獨善其身	独善其身	8-2-55
dúshēngzǐ	獨生子	独生子	8-1-22
dúzi	獨自	独自	8-1-8

### E

è	呃	呃	1-1-23
èi	欸	欸	4-1-4
ěrduo	耳朵	耳朵	2-1-3
èrfēn zhīyī	二分之一	二分之一	7-1-25
értóng	兒童	儿童	8-2-15
ézi jiān	蚵仔煎	蚵仔煎	9-1-20

### F

fācái	發財	发财	5-2-28
fādá	發達	发达	6-2-3
fǎguī	法規	法规	12-1-11
fǎn'ér	反而	反而	6-2-35
fángdìchǎn	房地產	房地产	12-1-37
fángjià	房價	房价	5-2-11
fǎngmào pǐn	仿冒品	仿冒品	3-1-10
fāngxiàng	方向	方向	6-2-20
fàngxué	放學	放学	1-2-7
fánnǎo	煩惱	烦恼	7-2-6
fánróng	繁榮	繁荣	9-1-5
fǎnzhèng	反正	反正	8-1-4
fāyán quán	發言權	发言权	12-2-37
Fēilǚbīn	菲律賓	菲律宾	6-1-34
fèiyòng	費用	费用	8-1-10
fēngguāng	風光	风光	9-1-18
fēngshèng	豐盛	丰盛	2-2-31
fēngshuǐshī	風水師	风水师	4-1-11
Fēngshuǐxué	風水學	风水学	4-1-34
fēnpèi	分配	分配	11-2-17
fǒuzé	否則	否则	8-2-38
fǔbài	腐敗	腐败	12-2-3
fùchǎnkē	婦產科	妇产科	8-1-25
fūdǎo	輔導	辅导	11-2-24
fūfù	夫婦	夫妇	8-1-21
fùkuǎn	付款	付款	3-1-30
fùlì	福利	福利	10-1-10
fùmiàn	負面	负面	3-2-40

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
fùnǚ	婦女	妇女	8-2-39
fùyù	富裕	富裕	12-2-1
fùzú	富足	富足	12-1-26

## G

gāi	該	该	4-1-1
gāi	該	该	9-1-22
gǎimíng	改名	改名	9-1-28
gàiniàn	概念	概念	10-2-18
gǎizào	改造	改造	4-1-15
gǎngkǒu	港口	港口	9-1-6
gāngqín	鋼琴	钢琴	2-2-5
gǎnqíng	感情	感情	1-2-16
Gāo Lái'ēn	高來恩	高来恩	6-1-1
gàobái	告白	告白	7-2-23
gāodà	高大	高大	7-2-12
gāojiù	高就	高就	1-1-7
gāolínghuà	高齡化	高龄化	11-2-35
gāosù gōnglù	高速公路	高速公路	3-2-10
gāozhǎng	高漲	高涨	5-2-12
gēnběn	根本	根本	5-2-7
gēnběn	根本	根本	11-2-14
gèngjiā	更加	更加	3-2-20
gèwèi	各位	各位	10-1-16
gōngchǎng	工廠	工厂	12-2-29
gòngxiàn	貢獻	贡献	5-1-18
gōutōng	溝通	沟通	11-1-16
gù	顧	顾	12-2-24
gǔ	古	古	4-2-24
guàn	慣	惯	3-1-18
guān	關	关	2-1-25
guān	關	关	10-2-5
guānchá	觀察	观察	5-2-24
guāndiǎn	觀點	观点	11-2-28
guāng	光	光	4-1-29
guǎngchǎng	廣場	广场	2-2-25
guānniàn	觀念	观念	8-1-11
guānshāng gōujié	官商勾結	官商勾结	12-2-39
guānyú	關於	关于	10-1-32
gǔdiǎn	古典	古典	2-2-7

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
guī	龜	龟	4-2-27
guizi	櫃子	柜子	6-2-31
gùlǜ	顧慮	顾虑	11-2-18
Guō Pú	郭璞	郭璞	4-2-35
guòchéng	過程	过程	10-2-22
guòdù	過度	过度	3-2-27
guójí	國籍	国籍	11-2-10
Guójiā Xìjùyuàn	國家戲劇院	国家戏剧院	2-2-32
Guójiā Yīnyuètīng	國家音樂廳	国家音乐厅	2-2-34
Guóyǔ	國語	国语	11-2-40
gǔsè gǔxiāng	古色古香	古色古香	9-1-41

## H

hā	哈	哈	8-1-6
hái	還	还	7-1-10
hàikè	駭客	骇客	3-1-23
hángyè	行業	行业	8-2-7
hánshǔ jià	寒暑假	寒暑假	7-1-31
hǎopíng	好評	好评	10-1-27
háowú	毫無	毫无	9-2-9
Hé Jiànmíng	何建明	何建明	10-1-1
Hé Qīngyuán	何清源	何清源	7-2-42
hébì	何必	何必	3-1-4
hébùlái	合不來	合不来	8-2-53
héchuān	河川	河川	12-1-13
hēi'àn	黑暗	黑暗	6-2-19
hékuàng	何況	何况	8-2-18
hènbùdé	恨不得	恨不得	5-2-47
hézuò	合作	合作	10-1-30
hóng	紅	红	2-2-20
hòu	後	后	1-2-8
hòuhuǐ	後悔	后悔	3-1-20
huà	畫	画	2-2-9
huā	花	花	10-1-5
huàjiā	畫家	画家	2-2-8
huāngzhāng	慌張	慌张	6-2-17
huàshuō huílái	話說回來	话说回来	5-1-30
huásuàn	划算	划算	3-1-6
huàxué	化學	化学	12-1-7

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
huìhuà	繪畫	绘画	2-2-12
huìzhǎng	會長	会长	7-2-9
hūnyīn	婚姻	婚姻	8-1-13
huò	或	或	2-1-21
huò	或	或	2-2-26
huǒzāi	火災	火灾	6-2-25
hùwài	戶外	户外	3-2-36

**J**

jǐ	及	及	5-2-35
jī	雞	鸡	6-1-16
jiābān	加班	加班	1-1-10
jiājiào	家教	家教	7-1-8
jiàn	劍	剑	4-1-23
jiǎnbān	減班	减班	8-2-11
jiāndū	監督	监督	12-1-22
jiǎng	獎	奖	2-2-24
jiāng	將	将	8-2-12
jiàngdī	降低	降低	11-1-29
jiāngjìn	將近	将近	9-2-5
jiāngù	堅固	坚固	6-2-36
jiànjiàn	漸漸	渐渐	11-2-1
jiànshè gōngsī	建設公司	建设公司	1-1-24
jiǎnshuì	減稅	减税	8-2-28
jiànzhào	建造	建造	4-2-10
jiǎnzhí	簡直	简直	1-1-18
jiào	較	较	8-2-5
jiǎo	角	角	4-2-22
jiāo	交	交	7-1-7
jiǎodù	角度	角度	4-1-14
jiāoliú	交流	交流	11-1-9
jiāolǜ	焦慮	焦虑	11-1-15
jiāolǜ bù'ān	焦慮不安	焦虑不安	3-2-45
jiāowǎng	交往	交往	7-2-25
jiāoyǒu	交友	交友	1-2-34
jiāqiáng	加強	加强	7-1-19
jiāqǐlái	加起來	加起来	4-2-41
jiārù	加入	加入	8-2-23
jiāsù	加速	加速	11-2-29
jiāyù hùxiǎo	家喻戶曉	家喻户晓	9-1-39
jiāzhǎng	家長	家长	3-2-34

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
jiāzhǎngrì	家長日	家长日	11-1-40
jīběn	基本	基本	10-2-20
jìdù	忌妒	忌妒	7-2-34
jiēcéng	階層	阶层	12-2-17
jiēchù	接觸	接触	10-2-6
jiégòu	結構	结构	11-2-4
jiějué	解決	解决	1-2-9
jiémù	節目	节目	10-1-26
jiētóu yìshù	街頭藝術	街头艺术	2-2-40
jiēxiàlái	接下來	接下来	10-2-25
jíhé	集合	集合	6-2-21
jìlù	紀錄	纪录	11-2-31
jímò	寂寞	寂寞	1-2-10
jìn	盡	尽	9-2-27
Jìn Dài	晉代	晋代	4-2-34
jìndù	進度	进度	7-1-11
jīngcháng	經常	经常	6-1-5
jǐngdiǎn	景點	景点	9-1-4
jīnghuá	精華	精华	9-2-32
jǐngqì	景氣	景气	5-2-17
jìngrán	竟然	竟然	12-1-17
jìngzi	鏡子	镜子	4-1-27
jǐnjí	緊急	紧急	6-2-10
Jīnmǎ Yǐngzhǎn	金馬影展	金马影展	2-2-35
jìnrù	進入	进入	1-2-14
jìqiǎo	技巧	技巧	10-2-17
jíshǐ	即使	即使	1-2-29
jítā	吉他	吉他	7-1-6
jiù...éryán	就...而言	就...而言	10-1-42
jiùdú	就讀	就读	1-2-4
jiù'ìng	究竟	究竟	9-2-28
jiùshēng bāo	救生包	救生包	6-1-40
jiùyè	就業	就业	5-1-23
jiùyuán	救援	救援	6-2-44
jiùzāi rényuán	救災人員	救灾人员	6-2-48
jùbǎopén	聚寶盆	聚宝盆	4-2-21
jùbèi	具備	具备	10-1-11
jùdà	巨大	巨大	12-2-13
jùdiǎn	據點	据点	9-1-2
jùlí	距離	距离	3-2-3

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
jùqíng	劇情	剧情	2-2-17
jùshuō	據說	据说	9-1-7
jūzhù	居住	居住	4-1-17

## K

kāidiàn	開店	开店	10-2-9
kāifàng	開放	开放	9-2-14
kāiguān	開關	开关	6-2-24
kāilǎng	開朗	开朗	7-2-15
kànbùchéng	看不成	看不成	2-1-34
kàngyì	抗議	抗议	5-2-9
kǎo	考	考	5-1-8
kǎogǔtí	考古題	考古题	10-2-30
kǎoyàn	考驗	考验	8-2-49
kègǔ míngxīn	刻骨銘心	刻骨铭心	9-2-47
kějiàn	可見	可见	11-2-15
kěn	肯	肯	11-1-4
kěnlǎozú	啃老族	啃老族	5-1-25
késòu	咳嗽	咳嗽	2-1-24
kēxué	科學	科学	4-1-10
kèyè	課業	课业	11-2-22
Kèyǔ	客語	客语	11-2-41
kǒngbùpiàn	恐怖片	恐怖片	1-1-12
kōngjiān	空間	空间	4-1-9
kǒngjù bù'ān	恐懼不安	恐惧不安	9-2-46
kòngzhì	控制	控制	3-2-24
kǒufù zhīyù	口腹之慾	口腹之欲	2-2-43
kǒuyīn	口音	口音	11-1-6
kū	哭	哭	1-1-15
kǔ hāhā	苦哈哈	苦哈哈	5-2-45
kuàguó	跨國	跨国	11-1-25
kuājiǎng	誇獎	夸奖	10-1-36
kùnjìng	困境	困境	12-1-36
kùnkǔ	困苦	困苦	12-2-32

## L

láizi	來自	来自	10-2-28
làngfèi	浪費	浪费	5-1-16
Lǎo Zhāng	老張	老张	9-2-38
lǎobīng	老兵	老兵	9-2-37
lǎohuà	老化	老化	8-2-24

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
lǎojiē	老街	老街	2-2-39
lǎopó	老婆	老婆	4-1-31
lǎorén	老人	老人	8-1-20
lǎorén niánjīn	老人年金	老人年金	12-2-33
lǎoshǔ	老鼠	老鼠	6-1-18
lǎoyībèi	老一輩	老一辈	8-1-35
lèi	類	类	1-1-11
lèi	淚	泪	9-2-19
lěngjìng	冷靜	冷静	6-2-29
lěngmò	冷漠	冷漠	12-2-15
lěngqīng	冷清	冷清	1-1-6
Lǐ Wénlì	李文麗	李文丽	3-1-1
Lǐ Yúnzhēn	李雲真	李云真	2-1-1
liánghǎo	良好	良好	11-1-18
liángxié	涼鞋	凉鞋	2-1-12
liánhé	聯合	联合	10-1-24
liánluò	聯絡	联络	11-1-38
liánluò gǎnqíng	聯絡感情	联络感情	2-1-35
liánnéng	廉能	廉能	12-1-25
liǎnsè	臉色	脸色	5-2-29
liánsuǒ	連鎖	连锁	8-2-14
liào	料	料	10-2-10
liǎobùqǐ	了不起	了不起	11-1-8
liáotiānshì	聊天室	聊天室	1-1-3
lièfēng	裂縫	裂缝	6-2-22
lihài	厲害	厉害	1-1-9
lihài	厲害	厉害	6-1-4
líhūn	離婚	离婚	8-2-3
lìliàng	力量	力量	12-1-34
lǐmào	禮貌	礼貌	2-1-20
Lín Rónghuá	林榮華	林荣华	7-2-43
lǐng	領	领	8-2-33
lǐngdài	領帶	领带	10-1-4
lǐngdǎo	領導	领导	10-1-29
lǐngmóu fāzhǎn	另謀發展	另谋发展	5-2-46
lǐngyù	領域	领域	12-1-16
lìrú	例如	例如	3-2-8
liúlǎn	瀏覽	浏览	3-1-19
liúyì	留意	留意	2-2-28

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
lìwài	例外	例外	10-2-4
líxiāng bèijǐng	離鄉背井	离乡背井	9-2-42
lìzi	例子	例子	3-2-19
lóng	龍	龙	4-2-23
lóngtóu	龍頭	龙头	10-1-8
lù	鹿	鹿	9-1-8
Lǔ Yǎ	魯亞	鲁亚	8-1-2
lǚdòu gāo	綠豆糕	绿豆糕	9-1-42
lùduàn	路段	路段	3-2-15
Lùgǎng	鹿港	鹿港	9-1-33
lùjiǎo	鹿角	鹿角	9-1-11
lùkuàng	路況	路况	3-2-13
lùnwén	論文	论文	8-1-3
luòchā	落差	落差	3-1-13
luòdì shēnggēn	落地生根	落地生根	9-2-40
luòhòu	落後	落后	7-1-12
lùqún	鹿群	鹿群	9-1-9

### M

ma	嘛	嘛	3-1-17
mǎ	馬	马	6-1-20
mánglù	忙碌	忙碌	3-2-22
mángmù	盲目	盲目	5-1-20
mǎnshān biànyě	滿山遍野	满山遍野	9-1-40
mǎnzú	滿足	满足	2-2-30
māo	貓	猫	6-1-19
měihǎo	美好	美好	12-1-3
Měiyǔ	美語	美语	8-2-16
mèng	夢	梦	5-1-1
Měngjiǎ	艋舺	艋舺	9-1-34
ménkuāng	門框	门框	6-2-26
miǎnde	免得	免得	2-1-17
miànduì	面對	面对	11-1-20
miǎnqiǎng	勉強	勉强	5-2-6
miànshì guān	面試官	面试官	10-1-44
mìjí	密集	密集	12-2-30
mǐngǎn	敏感	敏感	12-1-6
míngmíng	明明	明明	12-2-22
míngxiǎn	明顯	明显	11-2-32

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
míngxīng	明星	明星	2-2-21
míngxīng gāozhōng	明星高中	明星高中	1-2-39
míngyán	名言	名言	4-2-9
mìngyùn	命運	命运	4-2-12
mínzhái	民宅	民宅	9-1-19
mínzhòng	民眾	民众	3-2-9
mòbù guānxīn	漠不關心	漠不关心	12-2-36
móliàn	磨練	磨练	10-1-33
mòluò	沒落	没落	9-1-30
mótèr	模特兒	模特儿	3-1-8
mùbiāo	目標	目标	10-2-15
mùguāng	目光	目光	7-2-2
mùqián	目前	目前	1-2-2
mǔyǔ	母語	母语	11-1-5

### N

nǎlǐ	哪裡！	哪里！	11-1-46
nǎlǐ	哪裡！	哪里！	
Nán Měizhōu	南美洲	南美洲	6-1-32
nánmiǎn	難免	难免	8-1-9
nányǐ	難以	难以	11-1-23
nèi	內	内	10-1-38
nèixīn	內心	内心	9-2-29
niánlíng	年齡	年龄	8-2-4
niǎolèi	鳥類	鸟类	6-1-15
níngquē wùlàn	寧缺勿濫	宁缺勿滥	8-2-52
niúshé bǐng	牛舌餅	牛舌饼	9-1-43
nǚzhuāng	女裝	女装	3-1-3

### O

ó	哦	哦	9-1-21
ǒurán	偶然	偶然	4-2-33

### P

páiduì	排隊	排队	5-1-2
pèi	配	配	10-1-3
pèi'ǒu	配偶	配偶	11-1-14
péibàn	陪伴	陪伴	1-2-12
péiyǎng	培養	培养	5-2-37
pèng	碰	碰	6-2-38
pénzi	盆子	盆子	4-2-18

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
pí	皮	皮	9-1-15
piānpiān	偏偏	偏偏	11-1-3
piāoyáng guòhǎi	飄洋過海	飘洋过海	9-2-43
píjuàn	疲倦	疲倦	3-2-32
pínfù bùjūn	貧富不均	贫富不均	5-2-44
pínfù xuánshū	貧富懸殊	贫富悬殊	12-2-40
píngděng	平等	平等	11-1-35
píngjìng	平靜	平静	6-2-42
píngshí	平時	平时	6-2-15
pínlǜ	頻率	频率	6-1-12
pīpíng	批評	批评	5-1-15
píqì	脾氣	脾气	4-1-24
pìrú	譬如	譬如	6-2-12
pìrú shuō	譬如說	譬如说	4-1-36
pītuǐ	劈腿	劈腿	7-2-40

## Q

qí	其	其	11-2-12
qián	前	前	3-2-11
qiān	牽	牵	7-2-38
qián yì tiān	前一天	前一天	7-2-46
qiánbì	錢幣	钱币	4-2-25
qiǎng	搶	抢	5-1-14
qiángbì	牆壁	墙壁	6-2-32
qiángdiào	強調	强调	2-2-2
qiánghuǒ	強烈	强烈	6-1-11
qiángmiàn	牆面	墙面	4-2-20
qiānwàn	千萬	千万	2-2-4
qiáo	橋	桥	6-1-7
qiǎokèlì	巧克力	巧克力	7-2-19
qíci	其次	其次	6-2-8
qídài	期待	期待	1-2-31
qīfù	欺負	欺负	4-1-33
qìhuà	企劃	企划	10-1-28
qìhuàbù	企劃部	企划部	10-1-20
qīngjié duìyuán	清潔隊員	清洁队员	5-1-27
qīngnián	青年	青年	10-2-7
qínggrénjié	情人節	情人节	7-2-17
qíngshū	情書	情书	7-2-28

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
qīnrén	親人	亲人	9-2-16
qīnshǒu	親手	亲手	7-2-18
qióngmáng	窮忙	穷忙	5-2-15
qǐpǎodiǎn	起跑點	起跑点	11-2-44
qìrén	氣人	气人	11-1-41
qíshì	歧視	歧视	11-1-31
Qiūjí'ěr	邱吉爾	邱吉尔	4-2-37
qiúzhí	求職	求职	10-2-14
qǐxīn	起薪	起薪	10-1-9
qīzi	妻子	妻子	9-2-12
quán	權	权	12-1-24
quánqiú	全球	全球	5-2-16
qǔdài	取代	取代	3-2-4
qǔdé	取得	取得	3-2-7
quēfá	缺乏	缺乏	11-2-21
quèshí	確實	确实	3-2-23
qǔhuò	取貨	取货	3-1-29
qūshì	趨勢	趋势	11-2-34

## R

rán'ér	然而	然而	11-2-27
réngrán	仍然	仍然	9-2-25
rènghé	任何	任何	3-1-22
rénlèi	人類	人类	3-2-37
rénmen	人們	人们	3-2-2
rénshēng	人生	人生	5-2-34
rèntóng	認同	认同	11-1-24
rènzhèng	認證	认证	3-1-25
rìcháng	日常	日常	4-1-18
Rìyǔ	日語	日语	9-1-38
rìzi	日子	日子	12-2-11
rónglú	熔爐	熔炉	11-1-2
rúci	如此	如此	12-2-12
rúhé	如何	如何	6-2-1
ruò	若	若	3-2-16
rúyì	如意	如意	4-2-31

## S

sānjiǎoxíng	三角形	三角形	6-2-40
shā	殺	杀	9-1-16
shàngbānzú	上班族	上班族	1-1-4



Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
shàngshēng	上升	上升	12-2-6
shàngsī	上司	上司	10-1-35
shàngwèi	尚未	尚未	9-2-20
shāngxīn	傷心	伤心	9-2-23
shàngyīn	上癮	上癮	1-1-16
shàngzhǎng	上漲	上涨	5-2-3
shǎozǐhuà	少子化	少子化	8-2-13
shāpán tuīyǎn	沙盤推演	沙盘推演	10-2-31
shèjì	設計	设计	4-2-32
shèjiāo	社交	社交	21-16
shēncái	身材	身材	3-1-7
shēng'ér yùnnǚ	生兒育女	生儿育女	8-2-54
shēngchǎn lì	生產力	生产力	11-2-46
shēnglǐ	生理	生理	3-2-29
shēngmìng	生命	生命	12-1-28
shèngxià	剩下	剩下	10-1-7
shēngxué	升學	升学	5-1-21
shēngyù	生育	生育	8-1-18
shēngyùlǜ	生育率	生育率	8-2-2
shēnlánsè	深藍色	深蓝色	10-2-32
shēnqiáng tǐzhuàng	身強體壯	身强体壮	9-2-41
shēnxīn	身心	身心	11-2-20
shēnyè	深夜	深夜	3-1-21
shèzhǎng	社長	社长	10-1-23
shí	時	时	1-2-18
shì	市	市	11-1-12
shǐ	使	使	8-2-6
shì...de liào	是...的料	是...的料	10-2-24
shìdài	世代	世代	11-2-36
shǐde	使得	使得	12-2-28
shìfǒu	是否	是否	12-1-39
shíguāng	時光	时光	7-1-17
shíli	實力	实力	5-2-38
shìlì	視力	视力	3-2-33
shìnèi shèjì	室內設計	室内设计	1-1-26
shíqí	時期	时期	9-1-24
shìqián	事前	事前	6-1-26
shīqù	失去	失去	11-2-26

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
shíquán shíměi	十全十美	十全十美	4-2-43
shíxí	實習	实习	7-1-24
shīxíng	施行	施行	5-2-18
shīyè	失業	失业	8-1-26
shìyìng	適應	适应	11-1-7
shízài	實在	实在	9-2-34
shóu	熟	熟	2-1-22
shòu kǔ	受苦	受苦	12-1-42
shǒucè	手冊	手册	2-1-28
shǒudiàntǒng	手電筒	手电筒	6-2-13
shóudú	熟讀	熟读	10-2-29
shōutān	收攤	收摊	5-1-26
shǒuxiān	首先	首先	6-2-7
shū	輸	输	11-2-25
shuàiqì	帥氣	帅气	7-2-13
shuāng	雙	双	7-2-14
shuāngqīn	雙親	双亲	11-2-8
shùfù	束縛	束缚	8-1-14
shuǐzhǔn	水準	水准	2-1-27
shūjiě	紓解	纾解	1-2-24
shùliàng	數量	数量	9-1-17
shūmiàn	書面	书面	10-1-40
shù mù	數目	数目	9-2-1
shūzhuāngtái	梳妝台	梳妆台	4-1-7
sǐdìngle	死定了	死定了	4-1-38
sìhū	似乎	似乎	10-1-31
sījī	司機	司机	5-1-9
sìmiào	寺廟	寺庙	2-2-14
sīniàn	思念	思念	9-2-7
Sōngzhì Lù	松智路	松智路	4-2-39
suíshǒu	隨手	随手	6-1-23
suiyuè	歲月	岁月	9-2-35
sūnnǚ	孫女	孙女	8-2-42
sūnshī	損失	损失	10-2-11
suǒ	所	所	1-2-3
suǒ	所	所	2-2-19
suǒdé	所得	所得	5-2-4
suōduǎn	縮短	缩短	3-2-1

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
suǒwèi	所謂	所谓	4-1-13
suǒxué yǒuxiàn	所學有限	所学有限	10-1-46
sùsè	素色	素色	10-1-6
sùzào	塑造	塑造	4-2-11
sùzhì	素質	素质	11-1-30

**T**

tāi	胎	胎	8-2-32
tàidù	態度	态度	7-2-29
Táiyǔ	台語	台语	9-1-37
tán	彈	弹	7-1-5
tán liànài	談戀愛	谈恋爱	7-1-28
tànqīn	探親	探亲	9-2-15
tānwū	貪汙	贪污	12-2-2
táobì	逃避	逃避	5-1-22
táonàn	逃難	逃难	9-2-33
táoshēng	逃生	逃生	6-2-2
tèquán	特權	特权	12-1-20
tí	提	提	2-1-23
tiánbǎo	填飽	填饱	2-2-42
tiānjiāwù	添加物	添加物	12-1-8
tiánmì	甜蜜	甜蜜	7-2-31
tiānyáo dìdòng	天搖地動	天摇地动	6-1-35
tiānzāi	天災	天灾	6-2-4
tiāo	挑	挑	10-2-19
tiáogāo	調高	调高	5-2-22
tiǎozhàn	挑戰	挑战	5-2-36
tíbùqǐ (yǒngqì)	提不起 (勇氣)	提不起 (勇气)	10-2-26
tígōng	提供	提供	3-1-14
tíngdiàn	停電	停电	6-2-18
tíngzhì	停滯	停滞	12-2-5
tíngzhì bùqián	停滯不前	停滞不前	8-2-56
tíxǐng	提醒	提醒	2-1-30
tóngbān	同班	同班	10-2-23
tōngcháng	通常	通常	3-1-28
tǒngjì	統計	统计	5-2-14
tóngnián	童年	童年	9-2-22

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
tóngshí	同時	同时	3-2-39
tōngxìn	通信	通信	9-2-8
tǒngzhì	統治	统治	9-1-3
tōngzhī	通知	通知	10-1-41
tóubù	頭部	头部	6-2-28
tuántǐ	團體	团体	2-2-3
tuì huàn	退換	退换	3-1-34
tuìbù	退步	退步	3-2-26
tuīfān	推翻	推翻	4-2-7
tuīxíng	推行	推行	8-1-17
tuōlí	脫離	脱离	12-1-14
tuōyù	托育	托育	8-2-31
túpiàn	圖片	图片	3-1-12

**W**

wa	哇	哇	2-1-26
wāi	歪	歪	6-2-27
wàiguān	外觀	外观	4-2-16
wàiguó	外國	外国	7-1-22
wàiji	外籍	外籍	11-1-13
wàijiè	外界	外界	12-2-9
wàipó	外婆	外婆	3-1-2
wàirén	外人	外人	11-1-37
wánchéng	完成	完成	7-1-13
Wáng Ānkāng	王安康	王安康	12-1-1
Wáng Lihuá	王麗華	王丽华	8-1-1
wǎnglái	往來	往来	9-2-6
wǎngwǎng	往往	往往	1-2-19
wǎngyǒu	網友	网友	1-2-11
Wànhuá	萬華	万华	9-1-36
wànrenmí	萬人迷	万人迷	7-2-24
wǎsī	瓦斯	瓦斯	6-2-23
wáwa tuīchē	娃娃推車	娃娃推车	8-1-30
wéi	為	为	9-1-26
wèi	未	未	5-2-21
wèilái	未來	未来	8-2-20
wéixiào	微笑	微笑	7-2-16
wèizhì	位置	位置	4-1-8
wěn	穩	稳	6-2-30

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
wěn	吻	吻	7-2-39
Wénhuà Dà Gémìng	文化大革命	文化大革命	9-2-39
wēnnuǎn	溫暖	温暖	1-2-1
wēnróu	溫柔	温柔	7-2-32
wénxué	文學	文学	2-2-11
wǔdào	舞蹈	舞蹈	2-2-10
wūding	屋頂	屋顶	4-2-26
wúfǎ	無法	无法	8-2-19
wùjià	物價	物价	5-2-2
wújiā kěguī	無家可歸	无家可归	12-2-34
wújiū wúshù	無拘無束	无拘无束	8-1-34
wúké guāniú	無殼蝸牛	无壳蜗牛	5-2-43
wúlùn	無論	无论	12-2-21
wúnéng	無能	无能	12-2-14
wúrén bùzhī wúrén bùxiǎo	無人不知 無人不曉	无人不知 无人不晓	2-2-37
wúsuǒwèi	無所謂	无所谓	12-1-5
wúxíng zhōng	無形中	无形中	3-2-42

## X

Xī Ōu	西歐	西欧	6-1-28
xià	嚇	吓	1-1-14
xiácī	瑕疵	瑕疵	3-1-11
xiàjiàng	下降	下降	11-2-33
xián	嫌	嫌	6-1-25
xiàn	縣	县	11-1-11
xiàndài wǔ	現代舞	现代舞	2-2-36
xiàng	向	向	7-2-22
xiàng	項	项	8-2-26
xiǎng	響	响	2-1-31
xiāngguān	相關	相关	10-1-15
xiānghù	相互	相互	11-1-36
xiāngsì	相似	相似	9-1-29
xiǎngyàn	饗宴	飨宴	2-1-4
xiànjǐng	陷阱	陷阱	1-2-38
xiànshàng	線上	线上	1-2-15
xiànshí	現實	现实	1-2-27
xiànxiàng	現象	现象	5-1-12
xiànyǒu	現有	现有	11-2-16

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
xiànzhì	限制	限制	10-1-12
xiànzhìjí	限制級	限制级	1-1-21
xiǎo zì... dà zhì...	小自... 大至...	小自... 大至...	12-1-38
xiàoduì	校隊	校队	7-2-10
xiàokān	校刊	校刊	5-1-3
Xiǎolíng	小玲	小玲	1-1-1
Xiǎomíng	小明	小明	11-1-39
xiǎoqì	小氣	小气	1-2-17
xiǎotíqín	小提琴	小提琴	2-2-6
xiàoyǒu	校友	校友	5-1-5
xiàyìqī	下一期	下一期	5-1-32
xié	斜	斜	4-2-19
xihuā	系花	系花	7-2-26
xìn	信	信	3-2-5
xǐng bíti	擤鼻涕	擤鼻涕	2-1-36
xíngchéng	形成	形成	6-2-39
xíngdòng	行動	行动	6-2-45
xīngshèng	興盛	兴盛	9-1-23
xíngzhuàng	形狀	形状	9-1-10
xīnlǐ	心裡	心里	1-2-22
xīnlǐ	心理	心理	1-2-28
xīnshēng'ér	新生兒	新生儿	11-2-45
xīnxiānrén	新鮮人	新鲜人	10-1-43
xìnxīn	信心	信心	12-2-7
Xìnyì Lù	信義路	信义路	4-2-38
xìnyòng kǎ	信用卡	信用卡	3-1-35
xīnzhōng	心中	心中	4-2-8
xīnzī	薪資	薪资	5-2-19
xiōngměng	凶猛	凶猛	4-1-20
xīqí	稀奇	稀奇	5-1-13
xǐshǒujiān	洗手間	洗手间	2-1-29
xiūgǎi	修改	修改	12-1-10
xīxī xiāngguān	息息相關	息息相关	12-2-41
Xīyuán	西元	西元	4-2-6
xū	噓	嘘	2-1-33
xuǎnzhàn	選戰	选战	12-1-31
xuédi	學弟	学弟	7-1-4

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
xué mèi	學妹	学妹	7-1-3
xué shēng huì	學生會	学生会	7-2-8
xué shì	學士	学士	5-1-10
xué tóng	學童	学童	11-2-19
xué wèi	學位	学位	5-1-7
xué wèn	學問	学问	4-1-16
xué zhǎng	學長	学长	7-1-9
xué zhě	學者	学者	12-2-16
xū nǐ	虛擬	虚拟	1-2-26
xùn liàn	訓練	训练	7-1-21
xùn xī	訊息	讯息	7-2-33

### Y

yā	呀	呀	4-1-5
yán cháng	延長	延长	8-2-29
yǎn chū zhě	演出者	演出者	2-1-14
yǎng jiā huó kǒu	養家活口	养家活口	10-2-27
yán hòu	延後	延后	5-1-24
yǎn jì	演技	演技	2-2-22
yǎn jīng	眼睛	眼睛	2-1-2
yáo	搖	摇	6-1-3
yǎo qián guī	咬錢龜	咬钱龟	4-2-42
yáo yuǎn	遙遠	遥远	12-2-20
yā sǐ	壓死	压死	6-1-36
yè wù jīng lǐ	業務經理	业务经理	1-1-25
yǐ	已	已	8-2-1
yǐ	以	以	10-1-39
yì kǒu qì	一口氣	一口气	4-1-37
yǐ...wéi...	以...為...	以...为...	12-2-35
yí bèi zǐ	一輩子	一辈子	9-2-45
yī chū	衣櫥	衣橱	4-1-6
yí dòng	移動	移动	7-2-3
yǐ dú bù huí	已讀不回	已读不回	7-2-47
yì gōng	義工	义工	12-1-30
yí jiàn zhōng qíng	一見鍾情	一见钟情	7-2-44
yí jiào cháng duǎn	一較長短	一较长短	11-2-47
yì jǔ yí dòng	一舉一動	一举一动	7-2-45
yí lián	一連	一连	7-1-14

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
yí mìng èr yùn sān fēng shuǐ	一命二運三風水	一命二运三风水	4-2-40
yín fā zú	銀髮族	银发族	3-1-26
yīng	應	应	11-1-34
yīng 'ér	嬰兒	婴儿	11-2-7
yìng biàn	應變	应变	6-1-22
Yīng guó	英國	英国	4-2-36
yǐng jí	影集	影集	3-2-6
yìng jiè	應屆	应届	10-1-17
yíng mù	螢幕	萤幕	3-2-31
yǐng xiǎng lì	影響力	影响力	12-2-38
yíng yùn	營運	营运	10-1-21
yìng zhēng	應徵	应征	10-1-2
yīn xùn	音訊	音讯	9-2-10
yīn yuè huì	音樂會	音乐会	10-1-25
yīn yuè tīng	音樂廳	音乐厅	2-1-6
yí piàn tiān	一片天	一片天	5-2-49
yī rán	依然	依然	9-1-31
yí rù	移入	移入	11-1-27
yǐ shàng	以上	以上	10-1-13
yì shēng	一生	一生	7-1-16
yí tāi huà zhèng cè	一胎化政策	一胎化政策	8-1-36
yǐ wǎng	以往	以往	11-1-19
yí wèn	疑問	疑问	3-1-16
yǐ xià	以下	以下	10-1-14
yí xià...	一下...	一下...	7-1-26
yí xià...	一下...	一下...	7-1-26
yí yè zhì fù	一夜致富	一夜致富	5-2-48
yì yuàn	意願	意愿	8-2-40
yòng bú guàn	用不慣	用不惯	3-1-33
yǒng qì	勇氣	勇气	10-2-12
yōng yǒu	擁有	拥有	5-2-40
yǒng yuǎn	永遠	永远	9-2-13
yǒu bèi wú huàn	有備無患	有备无患	6-1-41
yōu diǎn	優點	优点	10-1-34
yǒu huà zhí shuō	有話直說	有话直说	8-1-29
yōu lǜ	憂慮	忧虑	11-1-28
yóu mín	遊民	游民	12-2-8

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
yǒuxiào	有效	有效	8-2-47
yòuzhiyuán	幼稚園	幼稚园	8-2-9
yǒuzhùyú	有助於	有助于	7-1-30
yǔ	與	与	3-2-28
yuán	元	元	8-2-34
yuánběn	原本	原本	3-2-21
yuángōng	員工	员工	10-2-13
yuǎnjǐng	遠景	远景	8-2-21
yuǎnjù jiāoxué	遠距教學	远距教学	3-2-43
yuánlái	原來	原来	7-2-5
yuǎnlí	遠離	远离	9-2-11
yuánliàng	原諒	原谅	9-2-26
yuǎnyuǎn	遠遠	远远	8-1-32
yùcè	預測	预测	6-1-13
yuēhuì	約會	约会	7-1-15
yúnduān kējì	雲端科技	云端科技	3-1-31
Yúnmén Wǔjí	雲門舞集	云门舞集	2-2-33
yùnyòng	運用	运用	3-2-17
yǔqí	與其	与其	1-1-5
yúshì	於是	于是	7-2-4
yùsuàn	預算	预算	8-2-44
yùxiān	預先	预先	6-1-17
Yùzhēn	玉珍	玉珍	7-1-2

## Z

zài...zhīyú	在...之餘	在...之余	11-1-43
zāihài	災害	灾害	6-2-5
zàihū	在乎	在乎	12-1-27
zāinàn	災難	灾难	6-2-9
zāiqíng cǎnzhòng	災情慘重	灾情惨重	6-1-37
zàiyì	在意	在意	4-1-12
zàiyùn	載運	载运	9-1-27
zāo	糟	糟	2-1-32
zàochéng	造成	造成	5-2-13
zǎochū wǎnguī	早出晚歸	早出晚归	1-2-40
zāogāo	糟糕	糟糕	7-2-41
zāoshòu	遭受	遭受	12-2-31
zāoyù	遭遇	遭遇	9-2-36
zébèi	責備	责备	1-2-30

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
zháijīngjì	宅經濟	宅经济	3-1-32
zhàn	佔	占	9-2-3
zhǎng	漲	涨	5-2-5
Zhāng Dìngnéng	張定能	张定能	12-1-2
zhàng'ài	障礙	障碍	11-1-17
zhào lǐ shuō	照理說	照理说	12-1-40
zhào shuō	照說	照说	11-1-42
zhāocái	招財	招财	4-2-28
zhāoshēng	招生	招生	8-2-10
zhāosī mùxiǎng	朝思暮想	朝思暮想	9-2-44
zhēnduì	針對	针对	8-2-25
zhèng	正	正	8-2-48
zhèng duì mén	正對門	正对门	4-1-35
zhèngkè	政客	政客	12-2-26
zhèngmiàn	正面	正面	3-2-38
zhěngqí	整齊	整齐	2-1-8
zhēngqǔ	爭取	争取	7-1-23
zhèngshí	證實	证实	6-1-21
zhèngshì	正視	正视	11-2-39
zhěngtǐ	整體	整体	8-2-37
zhēngzhào	徵兆	征兆	6-1-14
zhèngzhēng	政爭	政争	12-2-4
zhèngzhì rénwù	政治人物	政治人物	12-1-41
zhēnxí	珍惜	珍惜	9-2-31
zhèxiàzi	這下子	这下子	8-1-37
zhēyǔpéng	遮雨棚	遮雨棚	4-2-30
zhǐ	指	指	3-1-5
zhī	之	之	2-2-16
zhǐchū	指出	指出	5-2-31
zhǐdǎo	指導	指导	11-2-23
zhìgōng	志工	志工	11-1-10
zhìhuì	智慧	智慧	8-2-50
zhìshǎo	至少	至少	7-1-20
zhǐshì	指示	指示	6-2-43
zhīshì	知識	知识	10-1-22
zhíyè	職業	职业	8-1-24
zhīyī	之一	之一	8-2-51
zhòng	重	重	8-2-43

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
Zhōng Ōu	中歐	中欧	6-1-30
zhōngchǎng	中場	中场	2-1-18
zhòngdà	重大	重大	8-2-8
Zhōngguó Dàlù	中國大陸	中国大陆	5-2-41
zhòngjiǎng	中獎	中奖	5-2-26
zhǒngzú	種族	种族	11-1-1
zhōu	週	周	10-1-37
zhōubiān	周邊	周边	4-2-3
zhuǎnbiàn	轉變	转变	11-2-6
zhuàngkuàng	狀況	状况	6-2-16
zhuāngzhì yìshù	裝置藝術	装置艺术	2-2-41
zhuǎnhuàn	轉換	转换	1-2-25
zhuī	追	追	7-2-27
zhuīqiú	追求	追求	8-1-15
zhújiàn	逐漸	逐渐	9-1-1
zhǔnshí	準時	准时	2-1-19
zhùzhái	住宅	住宅	4-2-4
zhùzi	柱子	柱子	6-2-37
zīchǎn	資產	资产	11-1-33
zìcóng	自從	自从	9-2-4
zījīn	資金	资金	10-2-2
zìjǐrén	自己人	自己人	11-1-45
zǐnǚ	子女	子女	11-1-32
zìrán	自然	自然	12-2-18
zìshēn	自身	自身	12-2-25
zìshí qíli	自食其力	自食其力	5-1-31
zìwǒ jièshào	自我介紹	自我介绍	10-1-45
zìxì	仔細	仔细	2-2-27
zīxùn	資訊	资讯	3-1-15
zìzài	自在	自在	1-2-33
zǒng rénshù	總人數	总人数	11-2-43
zǒng'ér yánzhī	總而言之	总而言之	3-2-46
zòngróng	縱容	纵容	12-2-27
zǒngshì	總是	总是	6-1-27
zǒngsuàn	總算	总算	4-1-3
zǒngtǒng	總統	总统	12-1-18
zǔfùmǔ	祖父母	祖父母	8-2-41
zúgòu	足夠	足够	8-2-22

Pinyin	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
zuìduōshù	最多數	大多数	11-2-42
zūnzhòng	尊重	尊重	2-1-15
zuòmèng	做夢	做梦	5-2-27
zǔzhǐ	阻止	阻止	12-2-19
zǔzhī	組織	组织	5-2-8

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
1/2	二分之一	二分之一	7-1-25
<b>A</b>			
A.D.	西元	西元	4-2-6
about	大約	大约	9-2-2
above	以上	以上	10-1-13
abroad	外國	外国	7-1-22
abundant	豐盛	丰盛	2-2-31
academic degree	學位	学位	5-1-7
to accelerate	加速	加速	11-2-29
accent	口音	口音	11-1-6
to access	取得	取得	3-2-7
accidental	偶然	偶然	4-2-33
accordingly	便	便	9-1-12
to get accustomed to	慣	惯	3-1-18
acting skills	演技	演技	2-2-22
activity, action, operations	行動	行动	6-2-45
actual	現實	现实	1-2-27
to adapt to	適應	适应	11-1-7
to add up, totalize	加起來	加起来	4-2-41
to get addicted	上癮	上瘾	1-1-16
additives	添加物	添加物	12-1-8
to adjust upward	調高	调高	5-2-22
advanced	發達	发达	6-2-3
affluent, abundant	富足	富足	12-1-26
after all	畢竟	毕竟	5-1-17
after all, in the end, actually	究竟	究竟	9-2-28
after school, when school lets out	放學	放学	1-2-7
afterwards (formal)	後	后	1-2-8
age	年齡	年龄	8-2-4
age	時期	时期	9-1-24
aging	老化	老化	8-2-24
aimed at, directed at	針對	针对	8-2-25
Ajian, male	阿建	阿建	1-1-2
all over the mountains and plains	滿山遍野	满山遍野	9-1-40

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
almost	將近	将近	9-2-5
alone	光	光	4-1-29
alone	獨自	独自	8-1-8
already (formal)	已	已	8-2-1
alumnus	校友	校友	5-1-5
always	總是	总是	6-1-27
always	永遠	永远	9-2-13
ambiguous (about one's relationship)	曖昧	暧昧	7-2-30
to amend	修改	修改	12-1-10
amount	數目	数目	9-2-1
ancient (formal)	古	古	4-2-24
and (formal)	與	与	3-2-28
and (formal)	及	及	5-2-35
and then	接下來	接下来	10-2-25
angle, perspective	角度	角度	4-1-14
animal	動物	动物	4-1-21
annuity payment for senior citizens (provided by The National Pension Program in Taiwan)	老人年金	老人年金	12-2-33
to be anxious	焦慮不安	焦虑不安	3-2-45
to be anxious	焦慮	焦虑	11-1-15
any	任何	任何	3-1-22
apathetic	冷漠	冷漠	12-2-15
appearance	外觀	外观	4-2-16
to apply for a job	應徵	应征	10-1-2
approximately	大約	大约	9-2-2
area (of study, etc.), (here) walk of life	領域	领域	12-1-16
to argue	吵架	吵架	7-2-37
as	為	为	9-1-26
as far as...are concerned	就...而言	就...而言	10-1-42
to ask about, inquire	打聽	打听	9-2-17
askew	歪	歪	6-2-27
to assemble	集合	集合	6-2-21
asset	資產	资产	11-1-33

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
to associate	交流	交流	11-1-9
at all, in the slightest	根本	根本	5-2-7
to be at ease	自在	自在	1-2-33
at least	至少	至少	7-1-20
at that time, when the time comes	到時候	到时候	7-1-27
attentively	仔細	仔细	2-2-27
attire	穿著	穿着	2-1-9
attitude	態度	态度	7-2-29
to attract treasure	招財	招财	4-2-28
Australia	澳洲	澳洲	6-1-31
to avoid	免得	免得	2-1-17
to avoid	避開	避开	3-2-14
award	獎	奖	2-2-24
awesome	厲害	厉害	1-1-9
awful	糟	糟	2-1-32

## B

baby	嬰兒	婴儿	11-2-7
baby carriage	娃娃推車	娃娃推车	8-1-30
bachelors	學士	学士	5-1-10
background	背景	背景	12-1-15
barely managed to pass (a test, course)	低空飛過	低空飞过	7-1-29
barely, with great reluctance	勉強	勉强	5-2-6
base, stronghold	據點	据点	9-1-2
basic	基本	基本	10-2-20
basin	盆子	盆子	4-2-18
beautiful	美好	美好	12-1-3
to become rich overnight	一夜致富	一夜致富	5-2-48
before	從前	从前	3-1-27
before (formal)	前	前	3-2-11
below	以下	以下	10-1-14
to be beneficial to something	有助於	有助于	7-1-30
(work) benefits	福利	福利	10-1-10
birds	鳥類	鸟类	6-1-15

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
birth rate	生育率	生育率	8-2-2
bitter life, very poorly	苦哈哈	苦哈哈	5-2-45
blindly	盲目	盲目	5-1-20
to block	擋	挡	2-1-13
to blow one's nose	擤鼻涕	擤鼻涕	2-1-36
body (shape)	身材	身材	3-1-7
to be bold	大膽	大胆	1-2-23
to be born	出世	出世	9-2-21
both parents	雙親	双亲	11-2-8
a branch of learning	學問	学问	4-1-16
to break, snap	斷	断	6-1-8
bridge	橋	桥	6-1-7
to bring up	提	提	2-1-23
to browse (the internet)	瀏覽	浏览	3-1-19
budget	預算	预算	8-2-44
build	身材	身材	3-1-7
to build	建造	建造	4-2-10
to bully, take advantage of	欺負	欺负	4-1-33
business manager	業務經理	业务经理	1-1-25
businesses, walks of life	行業	行业	8-2-7
busy	忙碌	忙碌	3-2-22
busy doing things without achieving anything	窮忙	穷忙	5-2-15
But	然而	然而	11-2-27
but (formal)	但	但	1-2-6
button-up shirt	襯衫	衬衫	10-2-21
by all means	千萬	千万	2-2-4
by far	遠遠	远远	8-1-32
by oneself	獨自	独自	8-1-8

## C

cabinet	櫃子	柜子	6-2-31
to call	稱	称	9-1-13
calm	冷靜	冷静	6-2-29
calm	平靜	平静	6-2-42
can't help but	不禁	不禁	9-2-18



English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
can't save (money)	存不了	存不了	5-2-42
canoe	獨木舟	独木舟	9-1-25
canopy, awning	遮雨棚	遮雨棚	4-2-30
capital	資金	资金	10-2-2
to care about	在意	在意	4-1-12
to care about	在乎	在乎	12-1-27
to care about	顧	顾	12-2-24
to care for, to provide nursing care to all people	安養	安养	12-1-12
carefree, free, do as one pleases	無拘無束	无拘无束	8-1-34
carefully	仔細	仔细	2-2-27
carry on the family line	傳宗接代	传宗接代	8-1-33
cat	貓	猫	6-1-19
to cause	使	使	8-2-6
to cause	使得	使得	12-2-28
to cause, produce, make	造成	造成	5-2-13
Central Europe	中歐	中欧	6-1-30
to certify; certification	認證	认证	3-1-25
chain	連鎖	连锁	8-2-14
challenge	挑戰	挑战	5-2-36
chancy	偶然	偶然	4-2-33
to change	轉換	转换	1-2-25
change	轉變	转变	11-2-6
to chase	追	追	7-2-27
chatroom	聊天室	聊天室	1-1-3
to check	查詢	查询	3-2-12
to cheer on/up	打氣	打气	1-2-20
cheerful	開朗	开朗	7-2-15
chemical, chemistry	化學	化学	12-1-7
to cherish	珍惜	珍惜	9-2-31
chicken	雞	鸡	6-1-16
child(ren)	兒童	儿童	8-2-15
childcare	托育	托育	8-2-31
childhood	童年	童年	9-2-22
children	子女	子女	11-1-32
chocolate	巧克力	巧克力	7-2-19
Churchill	邱吉爾	邱吉尔	4-2-37
cinema	電影院	电影院	1-1-22
circumstance	狀況	状况	6-2-16
city	市	市	11-1-12

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
class hierarchy (in society)	階層	阶层	12-2-17
class, cultural standard	水準	水准	2-1-27
classical	古典	古典	2-2-7
clean and capable	廉能	廉能	12-1-25
cleaning squad, street cleaners	清潔隊員	清洁队员	5-1-27
clearly	明明	明明	12-2-22
to click (on)	點	点	1-2-36
to close	關	关	2-1-25
to be close to somebody	熟	熟	2-1-22
to close up shop (said of street stalls)	收攤	收摊	5-1-26
closet	衣櫥	衣橱	4-1-6
closet	櫃子	柜子	6-2-31
Cloud Gate Dance Theatre	雲門舞集	云门舞集	2-2-33
cloud technology	雲端科技	云端科技	3-1-31
club president	社長	社长	10-1-23
coach	家教	家教	7-1-8
coins	錢幣	钱币	4-2-25
to collapse	倒	倒	6-1-6
to collapse	倒塌	倒塌	6-2-33
to collapse	倒下來	倒下来	6-2-47
college degree	學士	学士	5-1-10
collusion between politicians and business people	官商勾結	官商勾结	12-2-39
column	柱子	柱子	6-2-37
to come in contact with, to contact	接觸	接触	10-2-6
to come to age, enter adulthood	成年	成年	8-2-35
to comfort	安慰	安慰	1-2-21
to communicate, correspond by mail	通信	通信	9-2-8
communication	溝通	沟通	11-1-16
comparatively more (formal)	較	较	8-2-5
to compete, to compare against	一較長短	一较长短	11-2-47
to complete	完成	完成	7-1-13
computer	電腦	电脑	1-2-13
concept	概念	概念	10-2-18
concept, notion	觀念	观念	8-1-11

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
to be concerned about	顧慮	顾虑	11-2-18
concert	音樂會	音乐会	10-1-25
concert hall	音樂廳	音乐厅	2-1-6
to condone, tolerate	縱容	纵容	12-2-27
to confess	告白	告白	7-2-23
confidence	信心	信心	12-2-7
as a consequence	這下子	这下子	8-1-37
to constitute	佔	占	9-2-3
construction company	建設公司	建设公司	1-1-24
to contact, to connect with	聯絡	联络	11-1-38
to continue	持續	持续	11-2-38
to make contributions	貢獻	贡献	5-1-18
to control	控制	控制	3-2-24
to control	把持	把持	12-1-21
convenience	便利性	便利性	4-2-2
cookies	餅乾	饼干	6-2-14
cool-headed	冷靜	冷静	6-2-29
to cooperate with, work with	合作	合作	10-1-30
corner	角	角	4-2-22
corruption	腐敗	腐败	12-2-3
cost effective	划算	划算	3-1-6
costs	費用	费用	8-1-10
to cough	咳嗽	咳嗽	2-1-24
to counsel	輔導	辅导	11-2-24
countenance (mood shown on face)	臉色	脸色	5-2-29
counterfeit product	仿冒品	仿冒品	3-1-10
county	縣	县	11-1-11
couple	夫婦	夫妇	8-1-21
courage	膽子	胆子	1-1-19
courage	勇氣	勇气	10-2-12
to be courageous	大膽	大胆	1-2-23
courtesy	禮貌	礼貌	2-1-20
cousin (younger male cousin from one's mother's side as well as from one's father's sisters)	表弟	表弟	3-2-25
crack	裂縫	裂缝	6-2-22
crackers	餅乾	饼干	6-2-14
cram school	補習班	补习班	8-1-27
cranky, irritable	暴躁	暴躁	4-1-25

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
credit card	信用卡	信用卡	3-1-35
to criticize	批評	批评	5-1-15
crooked	歪	歪	6-2-27
crowded with high density of	密集	密集	12-2-30
crushed to death	壓死	压死	6-1-36
to cry	哭	哭	1-1-15
to cultivate, train, foster	培養	培养	5-2-37
Cultural Revolution (1966 ~ 1976)	文化大革命	文化大革命	9-2-39
currency	錢幣	钱币	4-2-25
current, existing	現有	现有	11-2-16
currently	目前	目前	1-2-2
<b>D</b>			
daily	日常	日常	4-1-18
dance	舞蹈	舞蹈	2-2-10
dark blue	深藍色	深蓝色	10-2-32
the darkness	黑暗	黑暗	6-2-19
dashing	帥氣	帅气	7-2-13
to date	交往	交往	7-2-25
days, life	日子	日子	12-2-11
dealings, contact	往來	往来	9-2-6
to decline, wane	沒落	没落	9-1-30
décor	擺飾	摆饰	4-1-30
décor, layout, arrangement; to decorate, to arrange furniture	佈置	布置	4-1-19
to decrease	下降	下降	11-2-33
deer	鹿	鹿	9-1-8
deer antlers	鹿角	鹿角	9-1-11
defect	瑕疵	瑕疵	3-1-11
degree	程度	程度	6-2-6
deliberately, insist on	偏偏	偏偏	11-1-3
department	部門	部门	1-1-8
department beauty, the most beautiful girl in a department	系花	系花	7-2-26
deserted	冷清	冷清	1-1-6
design; to design	設計	设计	4-2-32
the desire of one's palate	口腹之慾	口腹之欲	2-2-43
to be desperately	恨不得	恨不得	5-2-47
destiny	命運	命运	4-2-12

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
developed	發達	发达	6-2-3
difference	落差	落差	3-1-13
dire situation, straits	困境	困境	12-1-36
direction	方向	方向	6-2-20
directly facing the door	正對門	正对门	4-1-35
director (movies)	導演	导演	2-2-18
dirty	骯髒	肮脏	12-2-23
disaster	災難	灾难	6-2-9
disaster, damage (from a disaster)	災害	灾害	6-2-5
to discriminate	歧視	歧视	11-1-31
distance	距離	距离	3-2-3
distance learning	遠距教學	远距教学	3-2-43
distinguished, exclusive high school	明星高中	明星高中	1-2-39
distressed	困苦	困苦	12-2-32
distribution; to distribute, allocate	分配	分配	11-2-17
to get divorced	離婚	离婚	8-2-3
to do something at a time when not doing...	在...之餘	在...之余	11-1-43
doctorate	博士	博士	5-1-6
dollar (or other currency)	元	元	8-2-34
door frame	門框	门框	6-2-26
doubt	疑問	疑问	3-1-16
dragon	龍	龙	4-2-23
(act of) drawing	繪畫	绘画	2-2-12
dream	夢	梦	5-1-1
to dream	做夢	做梦	5-2-27
dressing table	梳妝台	梳妆台	4-1-7
driver, chauffeur	司機	司机	5-1-9
to drop	掉下來	掉下来	6-2-46
during the process of	正	正	8-2-48
to be dying to	恨不得	恨不得	5-2-47

**E**

each other	相互	相互	11-1-36
ear	耳朵	耳朵	2-1-3
earth science studies	地球科學	地球科学	6-1-33
earthquake	地震	地震	6-1-2
earthquake	地震帶	地震带	6-1-39
the eastern half	東半部	东半部	6-1-38

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
effective	有效	有效	8-2-47
to be elected to an office	當選	当选	12-1-4
(election) campaign	選戰	选战	12-1-31
elevator	電梯	电梯	6-2-34
to be embarrassed	丟臉	丢脸	2-1-10
embryo, birth, child	胎	胎	8-2-32
in emergency	緊急	紧急	6-2-10
emotions	感情	感情	1-2-16
employee	員工	员工	10-2-13
employment; to get a job	就業	就业	5-1-23
empty	冷清	冷清	1-1-6
(American) English	美語	美语	8-2-16
enormous	重大	重大	8-2-8
enormous	巨大	巨大	12-2-13
enough	足夠	足够	8-2-22
to be enrolled as a student	就讀	就读	1-2-4
to enter	進入	进入	1-2-14
to enter	加入	加入	8-2-23
equality	平等	平等	11-1-35
to escape	逃避	逃避	5-1-22
etc., and so forth	等	等	2-2-13
ethnic group, race	種族	种族	11-1-1
to evacuate	逃生	逃生	6-2-2
to evade	逃避	逃避	5-1-22
even if	即使	即使	1-2-29
even more	更加	更加	3-2-20
even though	即使	即使	1-2-29
event	節目	节目	10-1-26
ever since	自從	自从	9-2-4
every move	一舉一動	一举一动	7-2-45
everywhere	處處	处处	2-2-29
example	例子	例子	3-2-19
exasperating, annoying	氣人	气人	11-1-41
exception	例外	例外	10-2-4
to exchange	交流	交流	11-1-9
to exchange for something else	退換	退换	3-1-34
to exhaust, do one's utmost	盡	尽	9-2-27
expectations	期待	期待	1-2-31
expense	費用	费用	8-1-10
to express; expression	表現	表现	2-2-15

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
to extended, make longer	延長	延长	8-2-29
exterior	外觀	外观	4-2-16
eye	眼睛	眼睛	2-1-2
eyes	目光	目光	7-2-2
eyesight	視力	视力	3-2-33

## F

to face squarely, pay due attention to	正視	正视	11-2-39
to face, confront	面對	面对	11-1-20
factory	工廠	工厂	12-2-29
to fall behind	退步	退步	3-2-26
to fall behind, lag	落後	落后	7-1-12
to fall down	掉下來	掉下来	6-2-46
to fall into	掉進	掉进	1-2-44
to fall over	倒下來	倒下来	6-2-47
to be familiar with somebody	熟	熟	2-1-22
fancy, flowery, garish	花	花	10-1-5
fate	命運	命运	4-2-12
Fate is most important. Luck is second. Feng Shui is third.	一命二運 三風水	一命二运 三风水	4-2-40
feast	饗宴	飨宴	2-1-4
the feeling of security	安全感	安全感	7-2-35
feelings	感情	感情	1-2-16
female lower classmate (see culture notes)	學妹	学妹	7-1-3
Feng Shui master, geomancer	風水師	风水师	4-1-11
to be fettered by, bound by, shackled by	束縛	束缚	8-1-14
fewer than	以下	以下	10-1-14
fierce, ferocious	兇猛	凶猛	4-1-20
fierce, formidable	厲害	厉害	6-1-4
to fight	吵架	吵架	7-2-37
figure	身材	身材	3-1-7
to fill one's belly	填飽	填饱	2-2-42
finally	總算	总算	4-1-3
finance	財政	财政	8-2-45
to find it difficult to	難以	难以	11-1-23
fire (disaster), conflagration	火災	火灾	6-2-25
firm	堅固	坚固	6-2-36

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
first of all	首先	首先	6-2-7
flashlight, torch	手電筒	手电筒	6-2-13
to flee from war, natural disaster etc...	逃難	逃难	9-2-33
flourishing	興盛	兴盛	9-1-23
to flow backward	倒流	倒流	7-1-18
food and beverage industry	餐飲業	餐饮业	5-2-33
foot of the bed	床腳	床脚	4-1-28
for a population to become aged/geriatric	高齡化	高龄化	11-2-35
for example	例如	例如	3-2-8
for example	譬如說	譬如说	4-1-36
for example, like	譬如	譬如	6-2-12
for many years, for so long	多年	多年	5-2-20
to forecast	預測	预测	6-1-13
foreign	外國	外国	7-1-22
foreign national	外籍	外籍	11-1-13
forever	永遠	永远	9-2-13
to forgive	原諒	原谅	9-2-26
to form	形成	形成	6-2-39
formerly	從前	从前	3-1-27
formerly, heretofore	以往	以往	11-1-19
franchise	連鎖	连锁	8-2-14
to be frank, don't hold anything back, spit it out	有話直說	有话直说	8-1-29
freeway	高速公路	高速公路	3-2-10
frequency	頻率	频率	6-1-12
frequently	經常	经常	6-1-5
freshman, (here) a person, usually a college graduate, new or "fresh" to the workforce	新鮮人	新鲜人	10-1-43
freshman, first-year university student	大一	大一	10-1-19
from Mainland China, (lit. Mainland nationality)	大陸籍	大陆籍	11-2-11
from such trivialities to such major concerns (自, from (formal); 至, to (formal))	小自...大至...	小自...大至...	12-1-38
from 來 + literary preposition 自 "from" = 從...來	來自	来自	10-2-28
fundamental	根本	根本	11-2-14
funds	資金	资金	10-2-2

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
future	未來	未来	8-2-20
future prospects	遠景	远景	8-2-21

## G

gap between the rich and the poor, unequal distribution of wealth	貧富不均	贫富不均	5-2-44
to gasp	喘氣	喘气	1-2-32
gaze	目光	目光	7-2-2
generally	往往	往往	1-2-19
generally, as a rule	通常	通常	3-1-28
generation	代	代	8-1-12
generation	世代	世代	11-2-36
geography	地理	地理	4-2-1
to get	得	得	2-2-23
to get to know each other better to strengthen ties with each other	聯絡感情	联络感情	2-1-35
to get used to	適應	适应	11-1-7
to be gifted in...	是...的料	是...的料	10-2-24
global	全球	全球	5-2-16
glory	風光	风光	9-1-18
to go abroad	出國	出国	10-2-1
to go out of business	倒閉	倒闭	8-2-17
to go steady	交往	交往	7-2-25
to go with, match	配	配	10-1-3
Golden Horse Film Festival	金馬影展	金马影展	2-2-35
good	厲害	厉害	1-1-9
a good deal	划算	划算	3-1-6
to govern	統治	统治	9-1-3
gradually	逐漸	逐渐	9-1-1
gradually	漸漸	渐渐	11-2-1
graduate	畢業生	毕业生	10-1-18
to graft, to demand	貪汙	贪污	12-2-2
granddaughter	孫女	孙女	8-2-42
grandma	外婆	外婆	3-1-2
the greatest majority	最多數	大多数	11-2-42
group	團體	团体	2-2-3
to grumble	嫌	嫌	6-1-25
guidance; to give guidance to	指導	指导	11-2-23
guitar	吉他	吉他	7-1-6

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
Guo Pu	郭璞	郭璞	4-2-35
guts	膽子	胆子	1-1-19

## H

ha	哈	哈	8-1-6
to hack, use illegitimately	盜用	盗用	3-1-24
hacker	駭客	骇客	3-1-23
Hakka, a Chinese (Han) dialect	客語	客语	11-2-41
to hand in	交	交	7-1-7
handsome	帥氣	帅气	7-2-13
harbor, port	港口	港口	9-1-6
hard to comprehend, beyond logic	不可思議	不可思议	8-1-28
to have a crush on someone	暗戀	暗恋	7-2-1
to have a street stall	擺地攤	摆地摊	5-1-28
to have an antique air, quaint, classical in style	古色古香	古色古香	9-1-41
to have and raise children	生兒育女	生儿育女	8-2-54
to have as one's own, possess	擁有	拥有	5-2-40
to have babies; reproduction, childbirth	生育	生育	8-1-18
have been before, was once (formal)	曾	曾	11-2-2
to have in one's qualification	具備	具备	10-1-11
to have left far away from	遠離	远离	9-2-11
head	頭部	头部	6-2-28
head, leader	龍頭	龙头	10-1-8
heartthrob	萬人迷	万人迷	7-2-24
heavy	重大	重大	8-2-8
heavy	重	重	8-2-43
heavy	沉重	沉重	8-2-46
to help in something	有助於	有助于	7-1-30
herd of deer	鹿群	鹿群	9-1-9
hey, calling attention	欸	欸	4-1-4
to hide oneself in	躲進	躲进	1-2-43
highway	高速公路	高速公路	3-2-10
his, her, its, their (formal)	其	其	11-2-12
to hit, bump into	碰	碰	6-2-38
to hold	牽	牵	7-2-38
to hold the post of	擔任	担任	7-2-7
home, people's residence	民宅	民宅	9-1-19

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
homeless, no home to go back to	無家可歸	无家可归	12-2-34
to get hooked on	上癮	上瘾	1-1-16
horror movie	恐怖片	恐怖片	1-1-12
horse	馬	马	6-1-20
housing prices	房價	房价	5-2-11
how	如何	如何	6-2-1
however	然而	然而	11-2-27
however (formal)	但	但	1-2-6
a huge gap between the rich and the poor	貧富懸殊	贫富悬殊	12-2-40
humans	人類	人类	3-2-37
hurdle	關	关	10-2-5
husband and wife	夫婦	夫妇	8-1-21
to hush	噓	嘘	2-1-33

## I

I don't care, does not bother me	無所謂	无所谓	12-1-5
idea	概念	概念	10-2-18
to identify with, accept	認同	认同	11-1-24
if	若	若	3-2-16
to immigrate	移入	移入	11-1-27
impact	衝擊	冲击	11-1-21
imperceptibly	無形中	无形中	3-2-42
to implement, put into effect	施行	施行	5-2-18
impressive	厲害	厉害	1-1-9
impulsive	衝動	冲动	4-1-26
in (one's) mind	心裡	心里	1-2-22
in a row, in succession	一連	一连	7-1-14
in addition	此外	此外	3-2-35
in advance	預先	预先	6-1-17
in advance	事前	事前	6-1-26
in any case	反正	反正	8-1-4
in conclusion, to sum up, in short	總而言之	总而言之	3-2-46
to be in love, go steady (said of dating couples)	談戀愛	谈恋爱	7-1-28
in one breath	一口氣	一口气	4-1-37
in one's heart, heart of hearts, innermost being	內心	内心	9-2-29
in somebody's heart	心中	心中	4-2-8
in stagnation	停滯不前	停滞不前	8-2-56

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
in vain	白	白	6-1-24
in writing	書面	书面	10-1-40
income	所得	所得	5-2-4
incompetent	無能	无能	12-2-14
indeed	確實	确实	3-2-23
indeed	的確	的确	5-1-19
to indicate	指	指	3-1-5
to indicate, point out	指出	指出	5-2-31
indifferent	漠不關心	漠不关心	12-2-36
inevitably, hard to avoid	難免	难免	8-1-9
inextricably related to	息息相關	息息相关	12-2-41
influence	影響力	影响力	12-2-38
information	資訊	资讯	3-1-15
initial	初步	初步	10-2-16
installation art	裝置藝術	装置艺术	2-2-41
instructions, commands	指示	指示	6-2-43
insufficient, not adequate	不足	不足	11-2-37
intention	意願	意愿	8-2-40
interior design	室內設計	室内设计	1-1-26
an interjection indicating concurrence accepting what has been presented	哦	哦	9-1-21
intermission, halftime	中場	中场	2-1-18
to intern	實習	实习	7-1-24
internet technology	雲端科技	云端科技	3-1-31
to interview	採訪	采访	5-1-4
interviewing officer	面試官	面试官	10-1-44
it is obvious that, it is clearly seen that	可見	可见	11-2-15
it is said	據說	据说	9-1-7
item	項	项	8-2-26
itself	本身	本身	4-2-13

## J

Japanese (language)	日語	日语	9-1-38
to be jealous	忌妒	嫉妒	7-2-34
to be jealous	吃醋	吃醋	7-2-36
Jin Dynasty	晉代	晋代	4-2-34
to join	加入	加入	8-2-23
jointly	聯合	联合	10-1-24

## K

to keep on	持續	持续	11-2-38
------------	----	----	---------

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
to keep on saying...	照說	照说	11-1-42
to keep reading something until one remembers everything	熟讀	熟读	10-2-29
to keep somebody company	陪伴	陪伴	1-2-12
to kick up a row, make a scene, scream bloody murder	大吵大鬧	大吵大闹	3-2-44
to kill	殺	杀	9-1-16
kind	類	类	1-1-11
kindergarten	幼稚園	幼稚园	8-2-9
to kiss	吻	吻	7-2-39
knife	刀	刀	4-1-22
knock-off	仿冒品	仿冒品	3-1-10
to know how to	懂得	懂得	1-2-37
known to all	無人不知 無人不曉	无人不知 无人不晓	2-2-37
knowledge	知識	知识	10-1-22

## L

to lack	缺乏	缺乏	11-2-21
land prices	地價	地价	5-2-10
landmark	地標	地标	4-2-14
Lao Zhang, a nickname for someone whose surname is Zhang	老張	老张	9-2-38
in large quantities	大量	大量	11-1-26
late at night, in the wee hours	深夜	深夜	3-1-21
laws and regulations, statutes	法規	法规	12-1-11
to lay off	裁員	裁员	5-2-23
to lead	領導	领导	10-1-29
to lead	帶領	带领	12-1-33
to leave home early and get home late	早出晚歸	早出晚归	1-2-40
to leave one's hometown to become a stranger else where	離鄉背井	离乡背井	9-2-42
to legally change one's names	改名	改名	9-1-28
lest	免得	免得	2-1-17
let alone	何況	何况	8-2-18
letter	信	信	3-2-5

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
level	程度	程度	6-2-6
Li Wenli, female	李文麗	李文丽	3-1-1
Li Yunzhen, female	李雲真	李云真	2-1-1
life	人生	人生	5-2-34
life	生命	生命	12-1-28
to line up, stand in queue	排隊	排队	5-1-2
literature	文學	文学	2-2-11
to live, reside	居住	居住	4-1-17
loan	貸款	贷款	10-2-8
local people	本地人	本地人	11-1-44
lonely	寂寞	寂寞	1-2-10
to look out only for oneself, be self-centered	獨善其身	独善其身	8-2-55
to look up	查詢	查询	3-2-12
to lose	損失	损失	10-2-11
to lose (an item), lack	失去	失去	11-2-26
to lose face	丟臉	丢脸	2-1-10
to lose one's job, to become unemployed	失業	失业	8-1-26
to lose out (opposite of win)	輸	输	11-2-25
lottery	彩券	彩券	5-2-25
love	感情	感情	1-2-16
love at first sight	一見鍾情	一见钟情	7-2-44
love letter	情書	情书	7-2-28
love story	愛情片	爱情片	1-1-13
low birth rate	少子化	少子化	8-2-13
Lugang	鹿港	鹿港	9-1-33

## M

mail	信	信	3-2-5
Mainland China	中國大陸	中国大陆	5-2-41
to make	使得	使得	12-2-28
to make a date/appointment	約會	约会	7-1-15
to make friends (with)	交友	交友	1-2-34
to make payment	付款	付款	3-1-30
a male college graduate	何建明	何建明	10-1-1
a male college student	何清源	何清源	7-2-42
a male college student	林榮華	林荣华	7-2-43
male lower classmate	學弟	学弟	7-1-4
male upper classmate	學長	学长	7-1-9

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
a man from Switzerland	高來恩	高来恩	6-1-1
a man from Turkey	魯亞	鲁亚	8-1-2
Mandarin	國語	国语	11-2-40
to manifest; manifestation	表現	表现	2-2-15
mankind	人類	人类	3-2-37
manual	手冊	手册	2-1-28
manufacturer	廠商	厂商	10-2-3
marriage	婚姻	婚姻	8-1-13
material, (here) a person not suited for...	料	料	10-2-10
maternity leave	產假	产假	8-2-30
to mean	指	指	3-1-5
measure	措施	措施	8-2-27
measure phrase, describing fast-changing alternating scenes of two activities	一下... 一下...	一下... 一下...	7-1-26
measure word for movies	部	部	1-1-20
measure word for objects that can be grasped or objects with a handle, e.g., umbrella, knife	把	把	4-1-32
measure word for performances	場	场	2-2-1
measure word for schools	所	所	1-2-3
medical records	病歷	病历	3-2-18
to meet	集合	集合	6-2-21
to meet an emergency	應變	应变	6-1-22
melting pot, smelting furnace, crucible	熔爐	熔炉	11-1-2
Mengjia (Mangka)	舢舨	舢舨	9-1-34
mental	心理	心理	1-2-28
to mention	提	提	2-1-23
merely	光	光	4-1-29
message	訊息	讯息	7-2-33
mirror	鏡子	镜子	4-1-27
miserable	悲慘	悲惨	12-2-10
to be a miss day and night	朝思暮想	朝思暮想	9-2-44
to miss out	看不成	看不成	2-1-34
to miss, think about, long for	思念	思念	9-2-7
model	模特兒	模特儿	3-1-8
modern dance	現代舞	现代舞	2-2-36
money-biting turtle	咬錢龜	咬钱龟	4-2-42

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
monitor	螢幕	萤幕	3-2-31
more than	以上	以上	10-1-13
most, the majority of	大多數	大多数	5-1-29
mother tongue	母語	母语	11-1-5
mouse, rat	老鼠	老鼠	6-1-18
to move	移動	移动	7-2-3
movie stars	明星	明星	2-2-21
movie theater	電影院	电影院	1-1-22
much less	何況	何况	8-2-18
mung-bean cake	綠豆糕	绿豆糕	9-1-42
music hall	音樂廳	音乐厅	2-1-6
mutually	相互	相互	11-1-36
<b>N</b>			
National Concert Hall	國家音樂廳	国家音乐厅	2-2-34
National Theater	國家戲劇院	国家戏剧院	2-2-32
nationality	國籍	国籍	11-2-10
natural disaster	天災	天灾	6-2-4
natural gas	瓦斯	瓦斯	6-2-23
naturally	自然	自然	12-2-18
nearly	將近	将近	9-2-5
neat	整齊	整齐	2-1-8
necessities	必需品	必需品	6-2-11
negative	負面	负面	3-2-40
a newborn baby	新生兒	新生儿	11-2-45
news, information, message	音訊	音讯	9-2-10
next	其次	其次	6-2-8
next	接下來	接下来	10-2-25
next issue (of a periodical)	下一期	下一期	5-1-32
no matter, regardless	無論	无论	12-2-21
none whatsoever	毫無	毫无	9-2-9
normally	照理說	照理说	12-1-40
Northern Europe	北歐	北欧	6-1-29
not accustomed to using	用不慣	用不惯	3-1-33
not at all, not a problem, you're welcome	哪裡！ 哪裡！	哪里！ 哪里！	11-1-46
not comfortable with	用不慣	用不惯	3-1-33
not get along	合不來	合不来	8-2-53
not necessarily	不見得	不见得	3-1-9



English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
not only	不只	不只	8-1-5
not settle for less than perfect	寧缺勿濫	宁缺勿滥	8-2-52
not so, not to that degree, not so much that	不至於	不至于	1-2-5
not used to using	用不慣	用不惯	3-1-33
not yet	尚未	尚未	9-2-20
not yet (formal)	未	未	5-2-21
nothing strange, not surprising at all	不足為奇	不足为奇	8-1-31
to notify; a notification	通知	通知	10-1-41
number	數量	数量	9-1-17

## O

to observe, note	觀察	观察	5-2-24
to be obsessed with, wallow in	沉迷	沉迷	3-2-41
obstacle, handicap	障礙	障碍	11-1-17
obstetrics and gynecology, OB/GYN	婦產科	妇产科	8-1-25
to obtain	得	得	2-2-23
to obtain	取得	取得	3-2-7
obvious	明顯	明显	11-2-32
obviously	明明	明明	12-2-22
occupation	職業	职业	8-1-24
of (from classical Chinese, roughly equivalent to the modern Chinese 的)	之	之	2-2-16
to offer	提供	提供	3-1-14
(office) workers	上班族	上班族	1-1-4
oftentimes	往往	往往	1-2-19
oh no	哇	哇	2-1-26
oh no, how terrible, what bad luck!	糟糕	糟糕	7-2-41
old people, seniors	老人	老人	8-1-20
old soldier, veteran	老兵	老兵	9-2-37
old street	老街	老街	2-2-39
the older generation	老一輩	老一辈	8-1-35
omen	徵兆	征兆	6-1-14
on the contrary	反而	反而	6-2-35
on the other hand	倒是	倒是	8-1-16
on the other hand	然而	然而	11-2-27
on the other hand, however	話說回來	话说回来	5-1-30

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
to be on time	準時	准时	2-1-19
One Child Policy	一胎化政策	一胎化政策	8-1-36
one lifetime	一輩子	一辈子	9-2-45
one of	之一	之一	8-2-51
one of us, one of our own, compatriots	自己人	自己人	11-1-45
(for) one's life	一生	一生	7-1-16
one's own	自身	自身	12-2-25
oneself	本身	本身	4-2-13
online	線上	线上	1-2-15
online economy	宅經濟	宅经济	3-1-32
online friends	網友	网友	1-2-11
only child (male)	獨生子	独生子	8-1-22
to open a store	開店	开店	10-2-9
to open to the public	開放	开放	9-2-14
operations	營運	营运	10-1-21
or	或	或	2-2-26
or (formal)	或	或	2-1-21
in ordinary times	平時	平时	6-2-15
organization	組織	组织	5-2-8
originally	原本	原本	3-2-21
ornaments	擺飾	摆饰	4-1-30
other countries	外國	外国	7-1-22
otherwise	否則	否则	8-2-38
ought to	該	该	4-1-1
ought to (formal)	該	该	9-1-22
ought to (formal)	應	应	11-1-34
our country	本國	本国	11-2-9
outdoor	戶外	户外	3-2-36
the outside world	外界	外界	12-2-9
outsider	外人	外人	11-1-37
over	以上	以上	10-1-13
overall	整體	整体	8-2-37
overly, excessively	過度	过度	3-2-27
to oversee, monitor, supervise	監督	监督	12-1-22
to overturn	推翻	推翻	4-2-7
ox-tongue biscuit	牛舌餅	牛舌饼	9-1-43
oyster omelet	蚵仔煎	蚵仔煎	9-1-20

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
<b>P</b>			
to paint; painting	畫	画	2-2-9
painter	畫家	画家	2-2-8
(act of) painting	繪畫	绘画	2-2-12
a pair of	雙	双	7-2-14
to panic, be flustered	慌張	慌张	6-2-17
to pant	喘氣	喘气	1-2-32
parent	家長	家长	3-2-34
parents' day	家長日	家长日	11-1-40
particle indicating uncertainty	呀	呀	4-1-5
in the past	從前	从前	3-1-27
paternal grandparents	祖父母	祖父母	8-2-41
pay	薪資	薪资	5-2-19
to pay attention to	留意	留意	2-2-28
people in general	人們	人们	3-2-2
perfect, pinnacle of perfection	十全十美	十全十美	4-2-43
performance; to perform	表演	表演	2-1-7
performer	演出者	演出者	2-1-14
period	時期	时期	9-1-24
a period of (time)	段	段	5-2-1
personally, with one's own hands	親手	亲手	7-2-18
perspective	觀點	观点	11-2-28
PhD	博士	博士	5-1-6
phenomenon	現象	现象	5-1-12
the Philippines	菲律賓	菲律宾	6-1-34
physical and mental, mind and body	身心	身心	11-2-20
physical health	生理	生理	3-2-29
piano	鋼琴	钢琴	2-2-5
to pick	挑	挑	10-2-19
to pick on	欺負	欺负	4-1-33
to pick up goods	取貨	取货	3-1-29
picture	圖片	图片	3-1-12
a pile of	堆	堆	7-2-21
pillar	柱子	柱子	6-2-37

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
"place in the sun", a job that makes you happy and provides you with all the money and things that you want, paradise	一片天	一片天	5-2-49
to place, display	擺	摆	4-1-2
plain (in color)	素色	素色	10-1-6
to plan (used in business); a plan	企劃	企划	10-1-28
planning department	企劃部	企划部	10-1-20
to play (piano, guitar)	彈	弹	7-1-5
plaza	廣場	广场	2-2-25
plot	劇情	剧情	2-2-17
political infighting	政爭	政争	12-2-4
politicians	政治人物	政治人物	12-1-41
politico	政客	政客	12-2-26
popular (of an actress or singer)	紅	红	2-2-20
position, location	位置	位置	4-1-8
positive	正面	正面	3-2-38
positive	良好	良好	11-1-18
positive comments, praise	好評	好评	10-1-27
to postpone	延後	延后	5-1-24
power	力量	力量	12-1-34
to power on	打開	打开	1-2-41
to have a power outage	停電	停电	6-2-18
power, authority	權	权	12-1-24
to praise, commend	誇獎	夸奖	10-1-36
to predict	預測	预测	6-1-13
preliminary	初步	初步	10-2-16
be prepared, be on the safe side	有備無患	有备无患	6-1-41
to preserve	保留	保留	9-1-32
president	總統	总统	12-1-18
president of an association, club etc...	會長	会长	7-2-9
to prevent, block	阻止	阻止	12-2-19
prices, commodity prices	物價	物价	5-2-2
prime	精華	精华	9-2-32
process	過程	过程	10-2-22
to produce	產生	产生	11-2-5
productivity	生產力	生产力	11-2-46

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
profession	職業	职业	8-1-24
program	節目	节目	10-1-26
programme	手冊	手册	2-1-28
progress	進度	进度	7-1-11
promise; to promise	承諾	承诺	12-1-32
to promote	推行	推行	8-1-17
property, assets	財產	财产	12-1-29
prosperous	繁榮	繁荣	9-1-5
prosperous, booming, economic conditions	景氣	景气	5-2-17
to protest against	抗議	抗议	5-2-9
psychological	心理	心理	1-2-28
the public, people in general	民眾	民众	3-2-9
the public, the masses	大眾	大众	11-1-22
to be punctual	準時	准时	2-1-19
to pursue	追求	追求	8-1-15
to pursue further education	升學	升学	5-1-21
to put on makeup	打扮	打扮	2-1-5

**Q**

quality	素質	素质	11-1-30
quantity	數量	数量	9-1-17
quantity	數目	数目	9-2-1
to quarrel	吵架	吵架	7-2-37
question	疑問	疑问	3-1-16

**R**

random	偶然	偶然	4-2-33
rare (and unique), singular	稀奇	稀奇	5-1-13
rash	衝動	冲动	4-1-26
rather	反而	反而	6-2-35
rather than...	與其	与其	1-1-5
ratio (percentage)	比例	比例	11-2-13
read without reply	已讀不回	已读不回	7-2-47
real	現實	现实	1-2-27
real estate	房地產	房地产	12-1-37
really	簡直	简直	1-1-18
really	實在	实在	9-2-34
to recall, remove from office	罷免	罢免	12-1-23
to receive	得	得	2-2-23

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
to receive, withdraw (money)	領	领	8-2-33
record	紀錄	纪录	11-2-31
to recruit students, find students	招生	招生	8-2-10
to reduce enrollments	減班	减班	8-2-11
to reduce taxes, tax break	減稅	减税	8-2-28
to reduce, lower	降低	降低	11-1-29
to make reference to; reference	參考	参考	4-2-15
region	地區	地区	6-1-10
to regress, get worse	退步	退步	3-2-26
to regret, feel sorrowful about	後悔	后悔	3-1-20
to rehearse; a dry run, a practice run	沙盤推演	沙盘推演	10-2-31
related to, regarding	關於	关于	10-1-32
related, relevant	相關	相关	10-1-15
relatives, loved ones	親人	亲人	9-2-16
to be relaxed	自在	自在	1-2-33
to relieve	紓解	纾解	1-2-24
to rely on yourself, to stand on your own two feet	自食其力	自食其力	5-1-31
to remain intact	保留	保留	9-1-32
to remain, left (over)	剩下	剩下	10-1-7
to remain, stay	保持	保持	6-2-41
to remind	提醒	提醒	2-1-30
remote	遙遠	遥远	12-2-20
to replace	取代	取代	3-2-4
report, article, story (news)	報導	报导	5-2-30
to reproach, get on somebody's case	責備	责备	1-2-30
to repudiate	推翻	推翻	4-2-7
to rescue	救援	救援	6-2-44
rescue personnel	救災人員	救灾人员	6-2-48
residence	住宅	住宅	4-2-4
residue	殘留	残留	12-1-9
resource	資產	资产	11-1-33
to respect	尊重	尊重	21-15
restricted (viewing for movies)	限制級	限制级	1-1-21
restrictions	限制	限制	10-1-12

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
restroom	洗手間	洗手间	2-1-29
to return	退換	退换	3-1-34
rich, affluent	富裕	富裕	12-2-1
to rid of	擺脫	摆脱	12-1-35
right to speak, (here) a voice (in politics, etc.)	發言權	发言权	12-2-37
to rise	上升	上升	12-2-6
to rise (as of prices and water level)	漲	涨	5-2-5
to rise (of prices)	上漲	上涨	5-2-3
river and stream	河川	河川	12-1-13
road situation	路況	路况	3-2-13
to rob, mug	搶	抢	5-1-14
to rock	搖	摇	6-1-3
romance movie	愛情片	爱情片	1-1-13
roof	屋頂	屋顶	4-2-26
to rule	統治	统治	9-1-3
ruyi, scepter, s-shaped ornamental object that brings good luck	如意	如意	4-2-31

**S**

sad	傷心	伤心	9-2-23
to sail cross the sea	飄洋過海	飘洋过海	9-2-43
salary	薪資	薪资	5-2-19
to salivate over, make one's mouth water	垂涎三尺	垂涎三尺	9-1-44
same class	同班	同班	10-2-23
at the same time	同時	同时	3-2-39
sandals	涼鞋	凉鞋	2-1-12
to satisfy	滿足	满足	2-2-30
to be scared	嚇	吓	1-1-14
scared and anxious, suffering from constant fear	恐懼不安	恐惧不安	9-2-46
scenic site	景點	景点	9-1-4
scholars	學者	学者	12-2-16
school children	學童	学童	11-2-19
school newspaper, school publications of all sorts	校刊	校刊	5-1-3
school team	校隊	校队	7-2-10
school work	課業	课业	11-2-22
science	科學	科学	4-1-10
screen	螢幕	萤幕	3-2-31

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
second	其次	其次	6-2-8
section of road	路段	路段	3-2-15
security (e.g., job security), to guarantee	保障	保障	12-1-19
seeing it once is better than hearing about it a hundred times	百聞不如一見	百闻不如一见	2-2-38
to seek employment	求職	求职	10-2-14
to seek opportunities elsewhere	另謀發展	另谋发展	5-2-46
seem	似乎	似乎	10-1-31
seismic zone	地震帶	地震带	6-1-39
to select	挑	挑	10-2-19
self-introduction	自我介紹	自我介绍	10-1-45
senior citizens, seniors	銀髮族	银发族	3-1-26
a senior in college	博文	博文	7-1-1
sensitive	敏感	敏感	12-1-6
sentence particle, 'it is obvious that'	嘛	嘛	3-1-17
to be separate oneself from, break away from	脫離	脱离	12-1-14
in serious disaster	災情慘重	灾情惨重	6-1-37
to set (a record)	創下	创下	11-2-30
to set one's roots down	落地生根	落地生根	9-2-40
to set up a business	創業	创业	5-2-32
to shake	搖	摇	6-1-3
to shape	塑造	塑造	4-2-11
shape	形狀	形状	9-1-10
Shh	噓	嘘	2-1-33
to shorten	縮短	缩短	3-2-1
shorts	短褲	短裤	2-1-11
should	該	该	4-1-1
should (formal)	該	该	9-1-22
should (formal)	應	应	11-1-34
show	節目	节目	10-1-26
to shut off	關	关	2-1-25
side door, side gate	側門	侧门	4-2-29
sign	徵兆	征兆	6-1-14
significant	明顯	明显	11-2-32
similar	相似	相似	9-1-29
simply	簡直	简直	1-1-18
situation	狀況	状况	6-2-16

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
skin, hides	皮	皮	9-1-15
slanted	斜	斜	4-2-19
slanted	歪	歪	6-2-27
to smile	微笑	微笑	7-2-16
“snails without shells” (people who cannot afford to buy their own home)	無殼蝸牛	无壳蜗牛	5-2-43
snare	陷阱	陷阱	1-2-38
so	多	多	6-1-9
so	如此	如此	12-2-12
so as not to	免得	免得	2-1-17
so, whereupon	於是	于是	7-2-4
so-called, what is known as	所謂	所谓	4-1-13
socialization	社交	社交	2-1-16
Songzhi Road	松智路	松智路	4-2-39
a sophomore in college	玉珍	玉珍	7-1-2
to sound	響	响	2-1-31
South America	南美洲	南美洲	6-1-32
space	空間	空间	4-1-9
special privileges	特權	特权	12-1-20
to spoil (somebody)	寵	宠	8-1-23
a “sponge”, a “parasite”, somebody who feeds off the old	啃老族	啃老族	5-1-25
spouse	配偶	配偶	11-1-14
to stack	疊	迭	4-2-17
to stagnate, stall	停滯	停滞	12-2-5
to stare	盯	盯	3-2-30
starting line	起跑點	起跑点	11-2-44
starting salary	起薪	起薪	10-1-9
statistics	統計	统计	5-2-14
steady	穩	稳	6-2-30
still	依然	依然	9-1-31
still	仍然	仍然	9-2-25
stimulating	刺激	刺激	1-1-17
to be stingy	小氣	小气	1-2-17
story, storyline	劇情	剧情	2-2-17
street art	街頭藝術	街头艺术	2-2-40
street people, the homeless	遊民	游民	12-2-8
street stall	地攤	地摊	5-1-11

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
strength (not physical strength)	實力	实力	5-2-38
to strengthen	加強	加强	7-1-19
to stress	強調	强调	2-2-2
to strike it rich	發財	发财	5-2-28
strong	強烈	强烈	6-1-11
strong and healthy	身強體壯	身强体壮	9-2-41
strong point, forte	優點	优点	10-1-34
strong, solid	堅固	坚固	6-2-36
structure	結構	结构	11-2-4
student union	學生會	学生会	7-2-8
the study of Feng Shui, geomancy	風水學	风水学	4-1-34
to submit	交	交	7-1-7
to subsidize; subsidy, allowance	補助	补助	8-1-19
to substitute, to be in place of	代替	代替	8-1-7
such	如此	如此	12-2-12
to suffer from, be subjected to	遭受	遭受	12-2-31
suffering	受苦	受苦	12-1-42
sum (of money)	筆	笔	9-2-24
sumptuous	豐盛	丰盛	2-2-31
supervisor, boss	上司	上司	10-1-35
to support one's family	養家活口	养家活口	10-2-27
supposing	若	若	3-2-16
to surf (the internet)	瀏覽	浏览	3-1-19
to (upward) surge	高漲	高涨	5-2-12
surprisingly	竟然	竟然	12-1-17
surrounding, periphery	周邊	周边	4-2-3
survival kit, survival pack	救生包	救生包	6-1-40
swaying heavens and trembling earth, earth- shaking	天搖地動	天摇地动	6-1-35
sweet	甜蜜	甜蜜	7-2-31
switch	開關	开关	6-2-24
sword	劍	剑	4-1-23
<b>T</b> Taiwanese (a Southern Min dialect)	台語	台语	9-1-37

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
to take a test	考	考	5-1-8
to take care	解決	解决	1-2-9
to take note of	留意	留意	2-2-28
to take place	產生	产生	11-2-5
taking... as... (formal)	以...為...	以...为...	12-2-35
tall and big, bulky	高大	高大	7-2-12
Tamsui River	淡水河	淡水河	9-1-35
target, (here) the most ideal job	目標	目标	10-2-15
team member	隊員	队员	7-2-11
tears	淚	泪	9-2-19
temper	脾氣	脾气	4-1-24
temple	寺廟	寺庙	2-2-14
tender	溫柔	温柔	7-2-32
term	詞	词	4-2-5
terrific, amazing, really something	了不起	了不起	11-1-8
test items from previous years	考古題	考古题	10-2-30
to test out	考驗	考验	8-2-49
that day	當天	当天	7-2-20
the day before	前一天	前一天	7-2-46
the truth is	原來	原来	7-2-5
then	其次	其次	6-2-8
thesis, dissertation, scholarly article	論文	论文	8-1-3
this year's, upcoming	應屆	应届	10-1-17
tie	領帶	领带	10-1-4
tilted	斜	斜	4-2-19
time	時光	时光	7-1-17
tips	技巧	技巧	10-2-17
tired, fatigued	疲倦	疲倦	3-2-32
to	向	向	7-2-22
to one's surprise	還	还	7-1-10
tortoise	龜	龟	4-2-27
total population	總人數	总人数	11-2-43
traffic situation	路況	路况	3-2-13
tragic	悲慘	悲惨	12-2-10
training, hone a skill; to train, hone, or to practice over time	磨練	磨练	10-1-33

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
training; to train	訓練	训练	7-1-21
to transform	轉換	转换	1-2-25
to transform, restructure	改造	改造	4-1-15
transformation	轉變	转变	11-2-6
transnational	跨國	跨国	11-1-25
to transport	載運	载运	9-1-27
trap	陷阱	陷阱	1-2-38
trauma, scars	創傷	创伤	9-2-30
to treasure	珍惜	珍惜	9-2-31
treasure basin, similar to a cornucopia but filled with treasure	聚寶盆	聚宝盆	4-2-21
trend	趨勢	趋势	11-2-34
triangle	三角形	三角形	6-2-40
to be troubled, vexed	煩惱	烦恼	7-2-6
truly	實在	实在	9-2-34
to try (something new), attempt; an attempt	嘗試	尝试	11-2-3
to turn on	打開	打开	1-2-41
turtle	龜	龟	4-2-27
tutor	家教	家教	7-1-8
(TV) series	影集	影集	3-2-6
to two-time	劈腿	劈腿	7-2-40
type	類	类	1-1-11

## U

uh, interjection indicating embarrassment	呃	呃	1-1-23
the UK	英國	英国	4-2-36
to be unable to	無法	无法	8-2-19
unable to raise... to a high level to pump up (enough courage)	提不起 (勇氣)	提不起 (勇气)	10-2-26
unbelievable	不可思議	不可思议	8-1-28
under	以下	以下	10-1-14
to be under great pressure, (lit.) unable to breathe	喘不過氣	喘不过气	1-2-42
unexpectedly	竟然	竟然	12-1-17
unforgettable, to be imprinted hard in one's mind	刻骨銘心	刻骨铭心	9-2-47

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
(unhappy) experiences, happenings; to encounter, to have met with	遭遇	遭遇	9-2-36
unless	除非	除非	8-2-36
to use (formal)	以	以	10-1-39
to use, employ	運用	运用	3-2-17
to get used to	慣	惯	3-1-18

### V

Valentine's Day	情人節	情人节	7-2-17
a verbal marker (marking what comes after as a verb)	所	所	2-2-19
to verify	證實	证实	6-1-21
to vie for, compete for	爭取	争取	7-1-23
violence	暴力	暴力	1-2-35
violin	小提琴	小提琴	2-2-6
virtual	虛擬	虚拟	1-2-26
vision	視力	视力	3-2-33
to visit relatives	探親	探亲	9-2-15
volunteer	志工	志工	11-1-10
volunteer	義工	义工	12-1-30

### W

wages	薪資	薪资	5-2-19
to wait for, await	等待	等待	5-2-39
wall	牆壁	墙壁	6-2-32
wall face	牆面	墙面	4-2-20
Wang Ankang, male	王安康	王安康	12-1-1
Wanhua	萬華	万华	9-1-36
warm	溫暖	温暖	1-2-1
to waste	浪費	浪费	5-1-16
week	週	周	10-1-37
well-known saying	名言	名言	4-2-9
Western Europe	西歐	西欧	6-1-28
what has been learned is only rather limited	所學有限	所学有限	10-1-46
when (formal)	時	时	1-2-18
whether or not	是否	是否	12-1-39
Why bother..., Why must?	何必	何必	3-1-4
widely known	家喻戶曉	家喻户晓	9-1-39

English definition	Traditional Characters	Simplified Characters	Lesson-Dialogue-Number
wife	老婆	老婆	4-1-31
wife (literary)	妻子	妻子	9-2-12
will soon	將	将	8-2-12
be willing to	肯	肯	11-1-4
to win (a prize or lottery), to hit a jackpot	中獎	中奖	5-2-26
winter and summer vacations	寒暑假	寒暑假	7-1-31
wisdom	智慧	智慧	8-2-50
within	內	内	10-1-38
within easy reach	隨手	随手	6-1-23
woman	婦女	妇女	8-2-39
a woman from Taiwan	王麗華	王丽华	8-1-1
women's apparel	女裝	女装	3-1-3
wonderful	美好	美好	12-1-3
to woo	追	追	7-2-27
word	詞	词	4-2-5
to work (honorific)	高就	高就	1-1-7
to work overtime	加班	加班	1-1-10
worldwide	全球	全球	5-2-16
to worry	憂慮	忧虑	11-1-28

### X

Xiaoling, female	小玲	小玲	1-1-1
Xiaoming, a nickname	小明	小明	11-1-39
Xinyi Road	信義路	信义路	4-2-38

### Y

years, time	歲月	岁月	9-2-35
yikes	哇	哇	2-1-26
you (plural, formal)	各位	各位	10-1-16
(You're) a dead man; You're toast	死定了	死定了	4-1-38
young people, youth	青年	青年	10-2-7

### Z

Zhang Dingneng, male	張定能	张定能	12-1-2
zoo	動物園	动物园	9-1-14